

Daily  
Bread

Volume 7

Daily  
Bread

Volume 7

Daily Bread

Volume 7

Tender Heart

For Adults Only!—Private Property.  
Not to be removed from the premises.

# Daily Bread

# Daily Bread

# Volume 7

# INTRODUCTION

Dear Family,

GBY! In Daily Bread 7 you will find condensations of almost 100 Letters, ranging from the early 500's (where Daily Bread 6 leaves off) up to 2350!—And beyond, with the inclusion of the previously unpublished "Truth Revolution" Series! We've also added a few of the earliest Letters ("More on Faith", "Diamonds of Dust" & "Squeeze!—Don't Jerk!"), since they hadn't been condensed before & contained such terrific lessons for us all! We pray this latest addition to the "Daily Bread" series will be a blessing!

Times & policies change, of course, & some of the specific policies in Letters like "Tighten the Family!", "Nationalisation!" & others may be somewhat outdated today. But as we've mentioned in previous Daily Breads, these Letters show Dad's vision for the Family, love for the lost & concern for the littlest Family member. The principles behind them are just as valid as ever, & we trust that in studying them you'll be mature enough to know how to apply yesterday's counsel to today's needs. GBY!

Please bear in mind that these are condensations, so the paragraph numbers throughout this book don't necessarily correspond to the paragraph numbers of the full Letters.—And the full Letters also contain Dad's full counsel on these various subjects, of course!

GBAKY & continue to make you a blessing! "Please don't neglect the Word! Read, study, memorise & enjoy it, for it is food for your soul & gives you strength for the battle!"  
WLY!

## NUMERICAL TABLE OF CONTENTS

PAGE	ML #	TITLE
1	T	More on Faith!
7	3	Diamonds of Dust!
10	11	Squeeze!—Don't Jerk!
14	529	Male or Female?
18	659	Nationalisation!
22	662	Where Are the Shepherds?
26	675	New Brooms!
31	682	The Shepherd's Rod!
36	683	Excommunication!
39	684	Make It Pay!
41	688	The Advantages of Having Children!
44	701	"Owe No Man!" (Romans 13:8)
50	702	The Tithe!—Malachi 3:10.
55	716	The Division!
60	718	The Potato!—On Child Discipline.
68	813	Prayer of a Good Shepherd!
74	845	The Secret!
78	849	Sergeant York!
82	866	Emergency Notice! "Owe No Man!"—Part 2
84	985	I Don't Know!
86	996	Teaching Great Masters!
94	1001	The Fellowship Revolution!
111	1002	Good Shepherds!
120	1023	Rotten Apples!
123	1033	Let the Dead Bury the Dead No. 2!
126	1064	"Solitaire!"—Honour Thy Parents!
132	1065	God's Against Storage!
138	1104	Contingency Plans!
143	1205	A String of Pearls!
150	1247	Love Covers a Multitude of Sins! (1Peter 4:8)
153	1248	Deceivers, Yet True!
154	1249	Ask for Prayer!

155	1279	The New NRO Vision!—National Reporting Offices!
165	1405	Who Is Ashraf?
173	1431	Eman & Genesis!—A Photo Reading! (Gen. Story, Pt. 1)
176	1432	Fight Fear!—With Faith in the Word! (Gen. Story, Pt. 2)
183	1436	The Chinese Demon! (Gen. Story, Pt. 3)
196	1438	The Rebellious Woman! (Gen. Story, Pt. 4)
206	1442	Untying the Knot! (Gen. Story, Pt. 5)
207	1443	Experience with Gen. & Baby! (Gen. Story, Pt. 6)
211	1444	Precipitate a Crisis! (Gen. Story, Pt. 7)
219	1448	Rebuke to Stephen! (Gen. Story, Pt. 8)
223	1452	Where to Deal with Gen's Problem! (Gen. Story, Pt. 9)
227	1454	The Devil Exposed! (Gen. Story, Pt. 10)
231	1459	God's Answer to Gen's Problem! (Gen. Story, Pt. 11)
244	1464	Gen's Move! (Gen. Story, Pt. 12)
250	1467	Obey—Or Away! (Gen. Story, Pt. 13)
260	1644	God's Lessons!
260	1664	A Problem Child!
268	1689	"To Obey Is Better than Sacrifice!"
270	1713	Anywhere with Jesus!
273	1718	Fight Back!—On PR & Answering Questions from the Media.
277	1730	Tighten the Family!—Quality, Not Quantity!
283	1739	What's Wrong with Keda?
287	1740	Keda's Penance!
292	1743	Prophecy Lessons!
300	1747	Keda's Problem!—Discussion by Dad & Maria.
309	1748	Exposing Keda's Problem!
318	1749	A Prayer Request for Keda!
320	1750	Victory!
324	1757	More on Asking for Prayer!
325	1764	How to Survive in a Closed Country!
329	1766	Strangers & Pilgrims!—Advantages of Change!

334	1785	Re: Being Honest with Authorities!
335	1795	Why Rebukes Before All? (Maria 7)
339	1806	The Love of Christ!—For His Girls, Faith & Magdalene
344	1818	Have Mercy!
346	1848	Watch & Pray!—A Safety Lesson.
355	1849	Buyers Must Be Bargainers!
358	1850	Bargaining for a House!
364	1851	More on Bargaining!
367	1853	Fill Up Your Heart!
372	1889	Constant Vigilance is the Price of Security!
383	2024	WS Works & Workers! (Maria 28)
386	2064	Dad on "Kidz Correction"!
388	2066	Dad's Guidelines for Discipline!
395	2070	The Shove-Off Program!
400	2072	Fight for Your Healing!
412	2128	How to Go on the Attack!
418	2157	Choices Within God's Will!
420	2230	It's Crashing!—Are You Ready?
423	2232	What's In It For Me?
428	2238	"In Quietness & Confidence!"
430	2244	What To Do in a Robbery!
442	2306	The Last State!—The Dangers of Demonism!
465	2327	The Spiritual Warfare Depends on Us!
469	2333	More on Mama's Eyes!
471	2339	Separations! (Maria 85)
485	2340	Backsliders, Excoms & Immature Leadership! (Maria 87)
496	2349	The Ugly Americans!
500		Summary of AIDS Rules & Policies!
504		More AIDS Precautions!
507		The "Truth Revolution" Series!—Introduction
509	2456	"According to Your Faith"—"Truth Rev.", Pt. 1
512	2457	Analysis of Don & Liz!—"Truth Rev.", Pt. 2
527	2458	"Failure to Report a Crime!"—"Truth Rev.", Pt. 3
537	1399	Spokes of Light!—"Truth Rev.", Pt. 4
547	2459	Good Stewardship!—"Truth Rev.", Pt. 5

551	2460	God's Discipline Makes Disciples!—"Truth Rev.", Pt. 6
563	2461	Don & Liz's Homegoing!—"Truth Rev.", Pt. 7

## ALPHABETICAL TABLE OF CONTENTS

(Includes Alternate Titles)

PAGE	ML #	TITLE
509	2456	"According to Your Faith" ("Truth Rev.", Pt. 1)
41	688	Advantages of Having Children!, The
512	2457	Analysis of Don & Liz! ("Truth Rev.", Pt. 2)
270	1713	Anywhere with Jesus!
154	1249	Ask for Prayer!
485	2340	Backsliders, Excoms & Immature Leadership! (Maria 87)
358	1850	Bargaining for a House!
334	1785	Being Honest with Authorities!
355	1849	Buyers Must Be Bargainers!
183	1436	Chinese Demon!, The (Gen. Story, Pt. 3)
418	2157	Choices Within God's Will!
372	1889	Constant Vigilance is the Price of Security!
138	1104	Contingency Plans!
386	2064	Dad on "Kidz Correction"!
388	2066	Dad's Guidelines for Discipline!
153	1248	Deceivers, Yet True!
227	1454	Devil Exposed!, The (Gen. Story, Pt. 10)
7	3	Diamonds of Dust!
55	716	Division!, The
563	2461	Don & Liz's Homegoing! ("Truth Rev.", Pt. 7)
173	1431	Eman & Genesis!—A Photo Reading! (Gen. Story, Pt. 1)
82	866	Emergency Notice!: "Owe No Man!"—Part 2
36	683	Excommunication!
207	1443	Experience with Gen. & Baby! (Gen. Story, Pt. 6)
309	1748	Exposing Keda's Problem!
527	2458	"Failure to Report a Crime!" ("Truth Rev.", Pt. 3)

94	1001	Fellowship Revolution!, The
273	1718	Fight Back!—On PR & Answering Questions from the Media.
176	1432	Fight Fear!—With Faith in the Word! (Gen. Story, Pt. 2)
400	2072	Fight for Your Healing!
367	1853	Fill Up Your Heart! Gen. Series:
173	1431	Gen. Story, Pt. 1: Eman & Genesis—A Photo Reading!
176	1432	Gen. Story, Pt. 2: Fight Fear!—With Faith in the Word!
183	1436	Gen. Story, Pt. 3: The Chinese Demon!
196	1438	Gen. Story, Pt. 4: The Rebellious Woman!
206	1442	Gen. Story, Pt. 5: Untying the Knot!
207	1443	Gen. Story, Pt. 6: Experience with Gen. & Baby!
211	1444	Gen. Story, Pt. 7: Precipitate a Crisis!
219	1448	Gen. Story, Pt. 8: Rebuke to Stephen!
223	1452	Gen. Story, Pt. 9: Where to Deal with Gen's Problem!
227	1454	Gen. Story, Pt.10: The Devil Exposed!
231	1459	Gen. Story, Pt.11: God's Answer to Gen's Problem!
244	1464	Gen. Story, Pt.12: Gen's Move!
250	1467	Gen. Story, Pt.13: Obey—Or Away!
244	1464	Gen's Move! (Gen. Story, Pt. 12)
132	1065	God's Against Storage!
231	1459	God's Answer to Gen's Problem! (Gen. Story, Pt. 11)
551	2460	God's Discipline Makes Disciples! ("Truth Rev.", Pt. 6)
260	1644	God's Lessons!
111	1002	Good Shepherds!
547	2459	Good Stewardship! ("Truth Rev.", Pt. 5)
344	1818	Have Mercy!
412	2128	How to Go on the Attack!
325	1764	How to Survive in a Closed Country!
84	985	I Don't Know!

428	2238	"In Quietness & Confidence!"
420	2230	It's Crashing!—Are You Ready?
287	1740	Keda's Penance!
300	1747	Keda's Problem!—Discussion by Dad & Maria.
442	2306	Last State!, The—The Dangers of Demonism!
123	1033	Let the Dead Bury the Dead No. 2!
150	1247	Love Covers a Multitude of Sins! (1Peter 4:8)
339	1806	Love of Christ!, The—For His Girls, Faith & Magdalene
39	684	Make It Pay!
14	529	Male or Female?
504		More AIDS Precautions!
324	1757	More on Asking for Prayer!
364	1851	More on Bargaining!
1	T	More on Faith!
469	2333	More on Mama's Eyes!
18	659	Nationalisation!
26	675	New Brooms!
155	1279	New NRO Vision!, The—National Reporting Offices!
250	1467	Obey—Or Away! (Gen. Story, Pt. 13)
44	701	"Owe No Man!" (Romans 13:8)
60	718	Potato!, The—On Child Discipline.
68	813	Prayer of a Good Shepherd!
318	1749	Prayer Request for Keda!, A
211	1444	Precipitate a Crisis! (Gen. Story, Pt. 7)
260	1664	Problem Child!, A
292	1743	Prophecy Lessons!
334	1785	Re: Being Honest with Authorities!
196	1438	Rebellious Woman!, The (Gen. Story, Pt. 4)
219	1448	Rebuke to Stephen! (Gen. Story, Pt. 8)
120	1023	Rotten Apples!
74	845	Secret!, The
471	2339	Separations! (Maria 85)
78	849	Sergeant York!
31	682	Shepherd's Rod!, The
395	2070	Shove-Off Program!, The

126	1064	"Solitaire!"—Honour Thy Parents!
465	2327	Spiritual Warfare Depends on Us!, The
537	1399	Spokes of Light! ("Truth Rev.", Pt. 4)
10	11	Squeeze!—Don't Jerk!
329	1766	Strangers & Pilgrims!—Advantages of Change!
143	1205	String of Pearls!, A
500		Summary of AIDS Rules & Policies!
86	996	Teaching Great Masters!
277	1730	Tighten the Family!—Quality, Not Quantity!
50	702	Tithel!, The—Malachi 3:10.
268	1689	"To Obey Is Better than Sacrifice!"
507		"Truth Revolution" Series!—Introduction
509	2456	"Truth Rev.", Pt. 1: "According to Your Faith"
512	2457	"Truth Rev.", Pt. 2: Analysis of Don & Liz!
527	2458	"Truth Rev.", Pt. 3: "Failure to Report a Crime!"
537	1399	"Truth Rev.", Pt. 4: Spokes of Light!
547	2459	"Truth Rev.", Pt. 5: Good Stewardship!
551	2460	"Truth Rev.", Pt. 6: God's Discipline Makes Disciples!
563	2461	"Truth Rev.", Pt. 7: Don & Liz's Homegoing!
496	2349	Ugly Americans!, The
206	1442	Untying the Knot! (Gen. Story, Pt. 5)
320	1750	Victory!
346	1848	Watch & Pray!—A Safety Lesson.
430	2244	What To Do in a Robbery!
423	2232	What's In It For Me?
283	1739	What's Wrong with Keda?
22	662	Where Are the Shepherds?
223	1452	Where to Deal with Gen's Problem! (Gen. Story, Pt. 9)
165	1405	Who Is Ashraf?
335	1795	Why Rebukes Before All? (Maria 7)
383	2024	WS Works & Workers! (Maria 28)

## MORE ON FAITH!

GPT 7/69



much. It meant more than that in God's Word. But it doesn't mean much today to most Christians. It is the substance, it is the hypostasis, it is the title deed!

3. About that word translated "substance" in the 11th Chapter of Hebrews: When they translated the New Testament from the Greek nearly 400 years ago they were still puzzled by the word "hypostasis". Now they knew from the way this word "hypostasis" was used in some Greek literature & so on that it apparently was something fairly substantial, pretty sure, some very sure evidence of some kind, so they translated it "substance".

4. But just a few years ago archaeologists uncovered the burned ruins of an old inn in Northern Israel. There they found a small iron chest containing apparently the valuable papers of some Roman noblewoman who had been travelling in Israel at that time. In this little chest they found most of the papers labelled with a big title "HUPOSTASIS" at the top of almost every paper. The business of the day was done in Greek because this was the worldwide language of business & culture, even

126	1064	"Solitaire!"—Honour Thy Parents!
465	2327	Spiritual Warfare Depends on Us!, The
537	1399	Spokes of Light! ("Truth Rev.", Pt. 4)
10	11	Squeeze!—Don't Jerk!
329	1766	Strangers & Pilgrims!—Advantages of Change!
143	1205	String of Pearls!, A
500		Summary of AIDS Rules & Policies!
86	996	Teaching Great Masters!
277	1730	Tighten the Family!—Quality, Not Quantity!
50	702	Tithe!, The—Malachi 3:10.
268	1689	"To Obey Is Better than Sacrifice!"
507		"Truth Revolution" Series!—Introduction
509	2456	"Truth Rev.", Pt. 1: "According to Your Faith"
512	2457	"Truth Rev.", Pt. 2: Analysis of Don & Liz!
527	2458	"Truth Rev.", Pt. 3: "Failure to Report a Crime!"
537	1399	"Truth Rev.", Pt. 4: Spokes of Light!
547	2459	"Truth Rev.", Pt. 5: Good Stewardship!
551	2460	"Truth Rev.", Pt. 6: God's Discipline Makes Disciples!
563	2461	"Truth Rev.", Pt. 7: Don & Liz's Homegoing!
496	2349	Ugly Americans!, The
206	1442	Untying the Knot! (Gen. Story, Pt. 5)
320	1750	Victory!
346	1848	Watch & Pray!—A Safety Lesson.
430	2244	What To Do in a Robbery!
423	2232	What's In It For Me?
283	1739	What's Wrong with Keda?
22	662	Where Are the Shepherds?
223	1452	Where to Deal with Gen's Problem! (Gen. Story, Pt. 9)
165	1405	Who Is Ashraf?
335	1795	Why Rebukes Before All? (Maria 7)
383	2024	WS Works & Workers! (Maria 28)

## MORE ON FAITH!



much. It meant more than that in God's Word. But it doesn't mean much today to most Christians. It is the substance, it is the hypothesis, it is the title deed!

3. About that word translated "substance" in the 11th Chapter of Hebrews: When they translated the New Testament from the Greek nearly 400 years ago they were still puzzled by the word "hypostasis". Now they knew from the way this word "hypostasis" was used in some Greek literature & so on that it apparently was something fairly substantial, pretty sure, some very sure evidence of some kind, so they translated it "substance".

4. But just a few years ago archaeologists uncovered the burned ruins of an old inn in Northern Israel. There they found a small iron chest containing apparently the valuable papers of some Roman noblewoman who had been travelling in Israel at that time. In this little chest they found most of the papers labelled with a big title "HUPOSTASIS" at the top of almost every paper. The business of the day was done in Greek because this was the worldwide language of business & culture, even

1. "According to thy faith be it done unto you."—Mat.9:29. If you've got the faith for it, God will do it. And faith is not just hoping, believing or somewhat expecting, but faith is knowing.—Absolutely knowing!

2. Faith has lost its meaning to us today. Today the word faith means kind of a hazy vague belief of some kind in something or other; the word faith doesn't really mean

though the Romans were ruling the World.

5. All of these papers which had the title "Hupostasis" in big letters across the top were, guess what?—Title deeds to her properties! But this was long after the King James was translated, so they didn't have the advantage of that discovery.

6. If you want to turn to Hebrews the 11th Chapter, the word "substance" there is just as good & conveys the message & I am quite sure it's sufficient, but if you want to make it even clearer & more explicit you can write above that word "substance", in parentheses, "title deed". Now faith is what?—The Title Deed!

7. In fact, you could put it this way: "Now faith is the title deed to things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen". This Roman woman perhaps had never seen her properties she'd bought in Israel, but she knew she had 'em & she could prove her ownership even though she had never seen them.

8. If you've got real faith, even though you haven't seen the answer yet, you've got the title deed to it! It's yours; your name's written on it & you will see it eventually—that's faith! You know you've got the title in your hands. Praise God! It's done!

9. Real faith knows & it happens: It never fails! But sometimes, I want to warn you, some people throw away their glasses because of pride, not faith. They're ashamed to confess that they don't have the faith for healing but they want to try to prove that they have; so even though they haven't got the faith for God to really heal them, they stomp on their glasses or throw them in an ocean. I'm sorry to say that we've got several folks in our Revolution who are still going around almost as blind as a bat because they threw away their glasses before they had the faith for healing.

10. I want to warn you right now you'd better have the faith yourself.—God's going to expect it of you as real Revolutionaries for Jesus & you're not going to be able to lean on somebody else's faith. Since you're going to be a leader & a teacher & an officer in this outfit, & you're going to be able to instruct many, you're going to have to know how to do it yourself—& if you haven't got it then you're not going to be any leader. So don't

expect somebody else to have it for you.

11. Don't do it because somebody tells you to & you're acting according to their faith.—That's one thing you can't do! You gotta have the faith for it yourself, unless you're such a babe that you just don't know anything & can't do anything & it's an emergency situation. Sometimes God will give them vicarious faith, & in that case, strangely enough, it would be like faith in you—they just have faith in you.

12. Salvation is a Gift, the Holy Spirit's a gift, but healing, though it's a gift, you have to earn it through obedience. You can't earn it, but you've got to be worthy of it. If you want to keep it you'd better obey—like a loan, like living on borrowed time: When you're healed you'd better stay close to the Lord & do the things that He healed you for.

13. You'd better use that strength that God gives you in healing for His glory, or He can take it away from you. This is not so with Salvation or the Holy Spirit—those are a gift, a pure gift. I don't know whether I should put it that way, because I've had a lot of healings I didn't deserve.—But it's almost as though you have to be worthy or earn it or obey to get it. Healing is a little extra bonus from the Lord; it's a little extra blessing, kind of like finances.—If you think you can just live as you please & get God to support you, you're mistaken!

14. You'd better obey the Lord & stay in the centre of His Will & do what God wants you to do—if you expect to live by faith & expect God to take care of you, do you understand?

15. God can do miracles! He expects you to do what you can do, but God helps those who cannot help themselves. He's not going to feed you or wash your face for you, shove food in your mouth & brush your teeth, roll away the stone, but He'll heal you & He'll supply the food.—But He'll usually let you cook it.

16. God can do anything if you trust Him, if you're obedient. Now here's the connection between obedience & faith: It's pretty hard to have faith if you're disobedient.—In fact, it's virtually impossible to believe God for anything if you're disobedient. But if you know you're doing your best to please Him & obey Him, you can expect almost anything. God will do almost anything for you, some of the most amazing things you could pos-

sibly imagine! I could tell you some things you probably wouldn't even believe that God has done for me—just because I love Him & am trying my best to please Him, obey Him & do the job.

17. **He's done some things for me that you probably wouldn't even approve of.** My Dad used to say to my Mother, "You're the Lord's spoiled child; He pampers you!" Because she really loved the Lord & she did everything, made all kinds of sacrifices, was in touch with the Lord & really served the Lord & really obeyed Him. So He gave her anything she wanted, anything she asked the Lord for, her heart's desire. I told you about the time she stuck a quarter in the slot machine & got the jackpot. In my case, maybe I wanted to see this or that, or go some place or have some thing that maybe you might have thought was a luxury or a little unnecessary.

18. **But maybe after you've served the Lord as many years as I have** He might even supply a few things exceedingly abundant above all you could ask or think, pressed down, shaken together & running over—more than you need, little luxuries, comforts.—Eph.3:20; Luk.6:38.

19. **Come on, let's face it!**—You've got stuff right now you don't really need. The Lord was good to you & gave it to you because you pleased Him. In the contract He only promised us food & clothing.—He only guaranteed food & clothing, all your needs according to His riches in Glory. You're only guaranteed your needs, but if you please Him He usually throws in a few little odds & ends with it just to keep you happy.

20. **Now a father of a home is obligated to support his family & supply their needs & give them food, clothing & shelter**—the Law will even get after him if he doesn't. But if he really loves his children & they really please him & obey him, he will often come home & bring them the little extras, a little extra gift & toys & extra presents.

21. **The stage you're in right now is probably going to be the rock-bottom stage** because first of all He sees what you're going to do with a nickel before He starts giving you quarters or half-dollars or dollars or maybe a hundred or even a thousand. He wants to see if He can trust you with nothing before He gives you something. If you're faithful in a few things He'll make you ruler

over many. The Lord's going to wait to see if He can trust you with the necessities before He trusts you with any luxuries.

22. **Now some people have grandiose ideas of how God's supposed to supply their needs:** They think they ought to be rolling around in the very best & have the finest & the best-looking & the most expensive & so on. "Nothing is too good for God's servant." I agree that nothing is too good for you, but it might not be good for you. It might minister to your pride instead of your humility.

23. **God has ways of doing things that aren't always our way.** There are certain people hung up on certain doctrines of affluence—that no Christian should be poor, that no Christian should be afflicted, no Christian should be sick, should ever be unpopular, that you should have perfect wealth, perfect health & perfect popularity if you're a Christian.

24. **For some reason or other I don't seem to find that in here about the Apostle Paul.** Somehow or another Jesus didn't seem to quite fit that pattern, or His dirty, bare-footed, long-robed, long-haired, long-bearded, hippie disciples; & I figure if Paul hadn't quite made that affluent society, why, I sure don't rate it! Although I must say I think the Lord sometimes is a bit better to us than He was to the poor Apostle Paul—maybe that's why he'll probably get more glory & reward.

25. **God will give you what you ask for; He's very definite. Be definite with the Lord!** He says, "Command thou Me".—Isa.45:11. He'll give you what you ask for, & certainly what you have the faith for! That's the way the Lord blesses if you trust Him, if you please Him, if you follow Him, if you obey Him, if you're doing what He wants you to do & getting the work accomplished that He wants you to accomplish.

26. **But watch out!**—Sometimes material blessings can be a snare & a little trap of the Devil, & the Devil can heap them on you if you just kind of compromise a little here or there.

27. **Watch out about compromise!** Watch out about any compromise or pulling your punches for advantage, for finances, for protection, for safety, for anything. Be faithful to the message; be faithful to the method; be faithful to the Word; be faithful to the Voice of God; be faithful to His Revolution, the particular min-

istry He's called you to—be loyal! Of all the requirements required of anybody in anybody's army, it's what?—Loyalty! Someone may not be the best officer in the World; he may not have the qualifications that somebody else has; but if he's loyal you can trust him!

28. **Loyalty is the prime requirement.** I don't care how gifted, how talented, how artistic, how cultured, how beautiful, how strong, how educated you are; I don't care what you've got; if you're not 100% loyal, God can't use you—He can't trust you! If He can't trust you with what He's given you, He can't use you.—It's got to belong 100% to God or He can't use you.

29. So I'd rather have the little squirt that's got little or nothing but he's always Johnnie-on-the-job. When you want help, he jumps when you snap your fingers & he does what he's told to do even if he doesn't understand it or why, he just does it because you said so & he's got faith in you & he's got loyalty & he's obedient. The big guy thinks he knows everything & he's a little smarter than you are &, well, you don't necessarily have to do it that way.

30. **These little things are very important to the Lord, how you handle the small things.** "Despise not the day of small things", the Bible says.—Zech.4:10. It's important that you be faithful in a few things. You say, "Oh, I can't stoop to washing dishes & floors & mopping & cooking & things.—I want a big job!" Let me tell you right now, that's a big job, & this army couldn't do without it, & nobody's too good for it! The people who are going to get bigger jobs are the ones that we find can be trusted with sweeping the floor properly or washing the dishes or running an errand. We're not going to give you big things to do until we find out you can be trusted to do the little things.

31. **I want to tell you right now, we're having a problem with a certain situation of somebody that didn't work their way up from the ranks from scratch, & now the weaknesses are beginning to show up.** They didn't start at the bottom & finish the course & get knocked around & tried & proven first; they started at the top & now that weakness is showing itself. They weren't thoroughly indoctrinated, they weren't thoroughly brainwashed. They weren't tried & proven & tested as to their loyalty to the

message & the methods of the Revolution, & now we're feeling it. So you see, God's method is best: Start from the bottom. Here's an old saying for you that's very true; this is Scriptural if not Scripture.

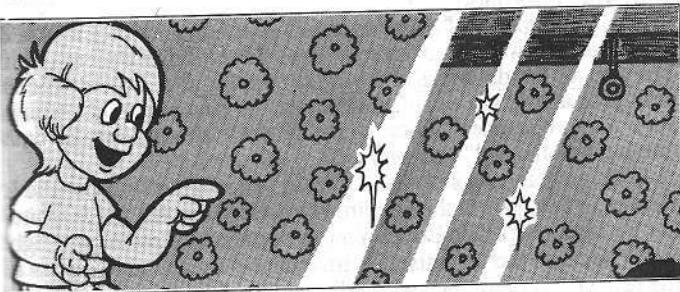
32. "**God's way up is down.**" There's a lot of Scripture about "the first shall be last, the last shall be first", "humble thyself under the mighty hand of God & in due time thou shalt be highly exalted".—Mat.20:16; 1Pet.5:6. Proverbs 15:33 & a lot of Scriptures talk about being humbled before God exalts you. You have to be broken! God's way up is down! The best place to start is at the bottom!

33. **Just remember:** "Faith is the title deed to things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen!"—Hebrews 11:1—And "without faith it is impossible to please God!"—Hebrews 11:6. So don't think you can get away with not having it! Jesus said, "O ye of little faith! Wherefore dost thou doubt?"—Mt.14:31.

34. **So how do you get such faith?** "Faith cometh by hearing the Word of God!"—Romans 10:17.—Hear & read the Word!—The future is as bright as the promises of God!

## DIAMONDS OF DUST!

GP 3 20/10/70



1. God put on a "light show" the other day & we were there to see it! He said a lot of things, too, & we tried to listen. I'm sure He must have shown it before, but we were all too busy to watch. Watch with us this time—maybe you'll see even more!

2. If you were a big, fat businessman, or a frantic housewife, or a hurried student, you wouldn't spend an hour in the morning watching the sun coming in the window! If you did, they might put you in the nuthouse!

3. He let three tiny rays of light beam their way into our room, not through the shutter, obstructing the light, but through tiny peepholes, letting it in! The smaller the hole, the more perfect the image, the more accurate the projection it reflects! The smaller you are, the clearer they can see Him!

4. The rays were many different colours—all showing a different colour of His Light, but the same Light.—Different gifts, but the same Spirit, each one reflecting in his own way the Light of God—each one letting his light shine, showing his particular kind of works to cause men to glorify the Beauty of God!

5. Hold your hand up!—The light shines right through it; you can see the blood & bones! Nothing is hidden in His eyes!

6. The thinner you are, the more the light gets through! The less there is of you, the more the light shines through!

7. We're like little rays of light in this city that's so dark! Even a few rays of light can make some kind of impression! Don't ever think because there's so much darkness, that it's no use to have just a little light, because even one candle can be seen a mile away when it's dark!

8. Even a grain of dust, as small as it is, can sparkle like a diamond, if it will get in the sunshine, if the room is dark enough. The greater the darkness, the brighter the light! A little diamond of dust or a little ray of sunshine shows up best when the room is very dark, because, "where iniquity doth abound, grace doth much more abound!"—Rom.5:20.

9. But what you see when you see the flame of a candle is not the fire itself, but the tiny little glowing particles, made white-hot by the heat of His Love! You're not actually seeing the light at all, because the light itself is invisible!—It can only be seen in the reflections of all those little diamonds of dust! You don't dare look right at the sun, it will blind you, because "no man hath seen God at any time", & lived (1Jn.4:12); but you can only see its reflection in the things that it shines on. People can only see God as we reflect Him, like little diamonds of dust! They can't look at

God, 'cause He's too bright, He blinds them! They have to look at us to see God in our reflection of Him. God's Light can only be seen if you reflect it! People can only see God in you as you reflect Him. So, "let your light so shine before men that they may see your good works & glorify your Father which is in Heaven."—Mat.5:16. If the dust weren't there, you couldn't see the light, & if the light weren't there, you couldn't see the dust! It takes both!

10. You may never see the little diamond of dust again, for some of them just flow into the light, sparkle for a moment & then vanish back into the darkness. They only have their moment of Truth! But if only once in its life it scintillates with the Light of the Lord, it's worth it! Even if only once in its life, it is life & joy to someone, it's worth it! But if it could stay in the Lord's Light, it could sparkle its life out to the end, like one candlestick gives light to the whole house until it is finished! The longer that little grain of dust stays right in the Light, the longer it shines & the longer it stays a diamond!

11. For they can sparkle so short a while & then they're gone, like a man's life—like the grass of the field which today is & tomorrow is gone! For what is your life? It's but a vapour, a vapour that reflects His rays of light for a little while & then it's gone!—Jam.4:14. You have no guarantee of tomorrow. You better sparkle now while you have the light, or you'll fade into oblivion & no one will know you even ever existed, 'cause no man ever saw the light reflected in you shining through you! Because you'll always dwell in darkness!—Because you always dwelt in darkness. You never came to the Light that your deeds might be made manifest that they were of God!

12. The path of the light you see is very straight & very narrow! It only shines in one direction & its Source is only in one direction! So there is only one way to the Source, & you've got to follow that way or you won't make it! Jesus is the Light of the World!—Jn.8:12. He's the only Way. Only in Him is there Light—the straight & narrow Beam that points to the Love of God, to the Son of God's Love!—And unless you get in that Beam of Love, you'll never shine, for "I am the Way, the Truth, & the Life; no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me!"—Jn.14:6.

13. Think how much God can show you from even a little

beam of light, if you're just simple & childlike enough to appreciate it, to look & to listen! "Except ye be as a little child, ye shall in no wise enter the Kingdom of God!"—Lk.18:17.

14. To learn from the Lord, you have to stop—& look—& listen—or you'll get run over by all the cares of this life, instead of running over with His Truth, His Love & His Joy! You'll be overcome by the World, instead of overcoming the World through Him!

15. Stop—look—& listen—to the light, & let your dust become Diamonds, that show the beauty of God!

16. If you're too busy, you'll never learn anything!—Or, if you're in a hurry!—Full of your own doings—your own things!

17. Watch the diamonds of dust! They don't try to sparkle & shine. They just let the light shine through them! They don't try to work to shine or move. They're not trying to get anywhere, they're not in a hurry! They just float so quietly on God's air & only get stirred up when He blows up a storm. But even then, they settle back into their place when it's over!

18. Stop—look—listen—& become a Diamond of Dust!

19. "Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, & glorify your Father which is in Heaven!"—Mat.5:16.

## SQUEEZE!—DON'T JERK!

GP 11 19/11/70

1. There is hardly anything that can be enjoyed in a hurry!—A glass of wine, a walk, a talk, a ride, a view, a meal or an embrace! God is hardly ever in a hurry! It takes Him time to make a baby, a flower, a tree, a sunset, or even a blade of grass. He is hardly ever in a hurry, unless He is angry! He hardly ever does anything suddenly—except Judgement!

2. It's a funny thing, but thoughts like this used to come to me when I was a little boy sitting on the hill. I used to think & wonder what everything meant, that it was all an illustration of something—everything said something!

3. The sea is always peaceful & quiet & slow & leisurely, except when there's a storm.



4. Speed kills! Haste makes waste! Patience takes faith! If you're in a hurry, you miss things, lose things, forget things & wear out quickly. You live it up, but you might not be able to live it down. You marry in haste, but repent at leisure! You save a minute, but lose a life! You are penny-wise, but pound foolish.

5. If you go slow, you get there quicker—at least you get there. Better late than never.

Better safe than sorry! If you stop to look before you leap, you may not have to leap at all! A miss is as good as a mile! It takes time to aim straight.

6. In the army we had targets that moved, or were there just for a moment & then disappeared. Some of the boys were in such a hurry to shoot, for fear it would disappear, they missed it altogether. But I waited until I was sure I could hit the bull's-eye & made "sharpshooter"—an expert rifleman with nine out of ten in competition! Some were in such a hurry they got so excited their rifles waved around & they jerked the trigger so quick it jerked the whole rifle & caused them to miss the mark! Sin is missing the mark! I took time to rest my elbow firmly, hold my rifle securely, aim accurately & squeeze the trigger slowly!

7. Squeeze—don't jerk—or you'll miss something! Rome wasn't built in a day! The Lord told me once it takes time to build a house! Once when I was in a big hurry to do something, to know something, to make a decision, He told me, "First, you must lay the foundation solidly, then lay brick upon brick & stone upon stone firmly with mortar, each piece fitting accurately, & you cannot do this in a hurry, or you'll have a wall that will crumble.

Then, over all, the roof must be laid securely, beam upon beam, rafter upon rafter, tile upon tile. Then come the plasterers, then the painters & finally the finishers—hanging windows & doors, ceilings & floors—and then at last, you have a building fitly joined together, a beautiful sight to see—a well-made structure built slowly & well to last!"

**8. But I've seen some buildings thrown up in a hurry, as some crooked contractors used to joke:** "Long enough to get out of them before they fall!"—And it was this kind that collapsed in the storm & slew its occupants! I saw thousands of these demolished in the Great Miami Hurricane!—Thousands of people were killed by faultily hastily-built construction which could not stand the wind of adversity.

**9. You can have peace even in the midst of storm,** if you know you are secure & at rest in a safe building—strong, solid, well-built, unmoved by the wildest gale. A good building doesn't get up & run away, it's not blown away by the storm. It just sits tight until it blows over!

**10. The wicked hasteth to sin with his tongue**—& with his feet & with his hands!—Pro.19:2b. But we are to wait upon the Lord! He that waits upon the Lord shall renew his strength (Isa.40:31a)—instead of wearing out! "Thou shalt keep him in perfect peace whose mind is stayed on Thee, because he trusteth in Thee." "They that believe have entered into rest." "He giveth His beloved rest!"—Isa.26:3; Heb.4:3a; Psa.127:2b.

**11. Rest in the Lord!** Patience takes faith. Tribulation worketh patience, because it compels you to trust the Lord, to have faith in God for the outcome!—Rom.5:3.

**12. "The wicked are like the troubled sea, when it cannot rest.** There is no rest, saith my God, for the wicked."—Isa.57:20,21. They are tossed to & fro & they cannot rest. No rest for the wicked!

**13. "But there remaineth a rest for the Children of God!"**—Heb.4:9.

**14. Squeeze!—Don't jerk!**—Or you'll miss something, & missing the mark of God is sin!

**15. When Moses was in a hurry to deliver the Children of God, he killed the Egyptian & had to flee alone for his own life**

only. But after 40 years of patiently, humbly tending sheep in the wilderness with time to listen to the Voice of God instead of his own impulses, he was ready for the slow, laborious, patient work of the Exodus—slow, but sure!

**16. The hare never made it, but the tortoise did!**

**17. Then 40 days & nights on the mountain & he heard from God,** but in one split second of anger, he broke all Ten Commandments & lost the whole thing, & had to go back & spend another 40 days; his haste took him twice as long.

**18. My wife used to say to me** on the way to some meeting or appointment, "Now, Honey, we don't have time for any of your shortcuts", because she knew what usually happened when I started cutting across country, trying to find a quicker way. We usually got lost entirely & wound up later than ever!

**19. Squeeze, don't jerk, or you'll miss the mark—& that's a sin.**

**20. Sometimes my wife gets very impatient with me,** because I don't answer her immediately when she asks me a question. But it takes time to think & pray, to be sure you give the right answer. Anybody can shoot off his mouth immediately, but is he really saying anything? Be slow to speak & slow to anger. Go slow, take your time, you'll enjoy it more—even love-making! You'll get more out of life.

**21. My Father used to sing a little ditty:** "Never let yourself get worried, hurried or flurried, or else you'll find yourself getting harried, married or buried!"

**22. Squeeze, don't jerk, or you'll miss the mark—& that's a sin!**

**23. "Go to the ant, thou sluggard"** (Pro.6:6a)—but it takes time even to study the busy little antics of the ant, to learn anything from him. "Be thou not slothful, but diligent in business" (Rom.12:11)—the sloth hangs there all day on the limb with his eyes shut, sleeping—scarcely moving, till he looks like he's part of the tree. He's not just slow—he acts like he's dead!

**24. When on the firing line, I was neither hasty nor did I forget to fire altogether,** but I took reasonable time to aim straight & squeeze, not jerk!

**25. "Be temperate in all things**—let your moderation be

known to all men!"—1Cor.9:25; Phil.4:5. Don't run too fast, lest you stumble, & don't just sit there! Do something, but walk circumspectly!—Eph.5:15.

26. Squeeze, don't jerk, or you may miss the mark—& that's a sin!

## MALE OR FEMALE?



& what they want & what they need! I'm talking about what a man needs from a woman & a woman needs from a man.

2. Men are funny! What is it they want & need the most & what satisfies them? Well, they are desperate for love & affection, & in their case particularly sexual love. Men can get so horny they'll even kill to get it! They have got to have a woman & they have got to fuck her! It's just virtually an irresistible desire on their part that apparently God has given them to perpetuate the human race.

3. It is a tremendous urge with men! It is just about the strongest urge & need they have, more than any other physical need or urge. As soon as they're done they're done, & it is over with them as far as sex is concerned. They don't have too much further desire for or toward the woman, unless they have a real love for her.

4. Sex is a basic essential need of the male personality & the strongest of all his needs aside from his spiritual needs. People have been known to keep on having sex as long as they were able, even when they were starving to death!

DO 529 5/74

1. When I love someone, I really love them & I want to give them what they want & need the most! But there is a big difference between men & women

5. Normally most women give a man sex primarily because he needs it & he initiates it & she wants to satisfy him & make him happy. And therefore, this is why a woman normally only makes love to the men she likes.

6. But by comparison, most women's sex drive is not all that strong. That's not their strongest drive of any kind or their major need or their most urgent necessity. I really believe they do it mostly because they like or love a man & want to please him, as well as at the same time being physically attracted & enjoying it.

7. It is the woman's role to usually have a desire to satisfy the man—"the woman was made for man & not the man for the woman"!—1Cor.11:9. At the same time God has made her physiologically so that she also can enjoy it & be satisfied. She too can enjoy a climax & get a great deal of satisfaction from the act. But the whole operation is usually initiated by the man as being his major aim!

8. So that's what a man wants most of all, & that's what you have to give him to keep him happy! What can you do most of all to make a man happy?—Satisfy his normal sex drive! I'm talking about his physical needs now, not his spiritual needs. Of course now, you can link that sex love with his spiritual need for real love & show him the similarity.

9. The basic need of both sexes is real love. The greatest need of all is love. "The greatest of these is love" (1Cor.13:13), but the way a man needs to have his love expressed is different from the way a woman most wants her love expressed.

10. The need for love is a spiritual need—real love. But love must be manifested in works—"faith that worketh through love!"—Gal.5:6. It must be physically shown if it is real love, right? It has to be expressed in some way, & a man simply likes his woman's love expressed in sex almost above all—that is, the normal average male. If he figures a woman really loves him, the greatest proof to him is that she'll let him fuck her!

11. But a woman needs love expressed in a much greater variety of ways than mere sex or the bed. A woman's needs & her need of love is much more complex than a man's, & her major need of his love's expression is not sex nor the bed—that's only

part of it. The greatest need of most women is for a man's love expressed in his security, provision & protection. A woman needs love expressed in these ways most of all.

12. She needs to know that a man loves her enough to take care of her, protect her, provide for her. She wants to sleep in his arms not primarily because of a sexual urge, but because of an instinctive desire for his affectionate protection & his loving care. More than a man's sex, a woman needs a man's home, his heart & his hearth, his protection & provisions.

13. Therefore, many a woman has been known to forsake a good lover who didn't or couldn't take care of her for a man who could give her little or no sexual love at all, but who could tenderly gently care for her day after day, & beside whom she could sleep & feel secure night after night!

14. The normal woman also prefers her children to love-making, & prefers a good father for them to help her care for them & train them over a good sexual lover who wants no children. A woman is happy to give a man sex & enjoy it in return for all these, but the average woman is far from willing to forsake all these for nothing but sex!

15. A man can actually do without other things & sometimes hardly miss them, but he has got to have a woman for sex or he will nearly go crazy! Many a wife has driven her husband crazy or at least from home by withholding herself from him & denying her mate sex, his absolutely necessary due.

16. So it is much easier for a woman to satisfy a man's greatest needs, which are primarily sexual, & their methods of satisfying him can be quick, easy & with no strings attached. She can send him merrily on his way, happy & content just from having been to bed with her, having satisfied himself with her love expressed by her body.

17. But men have to offer the women a lot more than a quick fuck to make them happy! They not only want your love, but they want your heart, your home, your income, your children & your life, even more than your love-making, which is just the opposite from the boys! That's why it's virtually impossible for a man to try to carry on such a program of mass love-making with many women, as some girls do with many boys, because the

women don't merely want to move into a fellow's arms.

18. Women usually don't like the idea of having to share their man with others. But the boys are perfectly happy & sometimes satisfied for days at a time from merely spending a few moments in your arms & obtaining the urgent sexual satisfaction they need.

19. A man does have other needs too, of course, such as a cook, housekeeper, mother for his children & companion, someone with whom to share his daily life. He does like to feel needed, & he has that instinctive desire to want to care for, provide for & protect his woman & try to make her happy.

20. But a man can be fairly happy if some woman is at least merely providing his sexual needs, which are much less than all of these needs of the woman.

21. So this explains why it is a lot easier to fish for male fish than for female fish. The male is satisfied with the bait even if he's hooked! The female fish wants the bait, hook, line & sinker, pole, boat & fisherman! Which makes it a little more difficult to catch females than males!

22. But don't give up!—Promise her everything & give her whatever she needs, & she'll remain one of your loyal faithful devotees forever! Whereas the males may drift in & out for a mere bite of bait & be gone again!

23. We've found the females stick around longer, believe it or not! So they're worth promising everything to catch 'm! So go after those gals, guys. They're great! They make terrific wives!—And we've got everything in our Family to give 'm!

24. We can give 'm all a home, plentiful provision, perfect protection, loving care, lots of sex, plenty of children & everything they always wanted, including forgiveness of sins, faith in God, love in Christ, something to really live & work for, peace of mind, health of body & joy & happiness & love & laughter forever after!

25. They just gotta learn to share!—Amen, girls?—We love you! You're the greatest! Keep it busy! Use it! We love it! Thank you! God bless & keep you & keep making you a blessing!—In Jesus' name! PTL? Amen!

## NATIONALISATION!

—Indigenuity at Last!



DO 659 1/78

2. If Jesus had stuck with them they'd have been dependent on Him till the day they died & they would have never gotten any further, right? But when the Pioneer had to go off & leave them behind, it was live or die, sink or swim. They didn't have His physical presence to lean on anymore. They had to depend on His Words & His Holy Spirit.

3. They evangelised all the known civilised World of their day within 100 years, because He physically left them. They trusted God & His Spirit, that He was able to at least help them to carry on from the Spirit World.

4. Just as Jesus had to leave His disciples so they could go on to even greater works, just as I had to leave TSC so that we could spread out & go into all the World, so our North American leadership is going to have to step down & out of the picture & push forward the nationals in order to integrate & nationalise the many countries we're in.

5. I wrote a whole series of Letters in 1974 on "In-

1. Let me ask you something: If Jesus had stayed with them, how far would the disciples have gone & how much would they have accomplished? Those poor ignorant stupid dumb blundering befuddled fishermen & nobodies—who would have even seen any leadership in them anyway?

digenuity", about our need to become home-grown, native-grown. Yet in many places we still have not trained the national leadership, & I don't think we ever will unless we're forced to.

6. If the Work has always got to be held up by the Americans & the Americans have always got to run it, then there is no such thing as indigenuity & it doesn't work. If we can't get enough converts & good enough material to run their own Homes & their own country, then I will certainly be highly disappointed, because then we are not missionaries, we haven't established anything native & we're just a foreign colonial empire!

7. We have just moved like a bunch of Gypsies & we're just living different places & in other countries & we're not getting the job done that we came to do, & that was to evangelise the people, get them saved, filled with the Spirit, on-fire for the Lord, train them to preach the Gospel, train them to run themselves!

8. After being in some of these countries for so many years, if we're really doing a good job, we ought to have all kinds of good nationals in places of responsibility.

9. But a lot of our own people have the idea that nobody's better than the Americans, nobody is smarter than Americans & nobody can do it but U.S. Americans. But I don't believe it!

10. If we don't force them to use native leadership in their ranks, they will never do it, because they just think, "Oh well, there's no one we can trust!" Well, they're going to have to find somebody real quick because we're going to start requiring natives to now be in positions of authority.

11. I've heard some horror stories about what happened to mission fields where they had not nationalised nor prepared the nationals to take over. When the U.S. leadership were finally all kicked out, the Work just collapsed, because there wasn't any national trained in leadership to carry it on.

12. The nationals had never been given any organisational training or position of responsibility. So the Work just practically fell apart, except in some unusual cases. Usually the Work just virtually collapsed, & about all they would hear from a few converts now & then was that they were still loving & serving the Lord. But anything of any real substance of organisational co-operation had pretty well vanished.

13. Whereas on the fields where they had thoroughly trained local native leadership, pushed them to the front & the North Americans had stayed in the background behind the scenes, when the North Americans were thrown out or moved out, a good strong native church was left behind—operational, still plugging on & still functioning.

14. I've never been any place yet that we didn't have to leave! Just remember, it's always coming. It's already happened to us in several countries.

15. But if you've got native leadership thoroughly entrenched, they can't very well throw their own people out. They might throw them in, but they can't throw them out!

16. I am determined, live or die, sink or swim, that we are going to nationalise our Work around the World! Nationalisation's going to come sooner or later, one way or the other, especially if there's any kind of a World emergency.

17. One thing our North Americans have proven is that they are good pioneers. With all their pushiness, aggressiveness, boldness, nerve & faith, they've got tremendous leadership ability & potential. They've done a great job, God bless them! But lately they have a tendency to get settled down.

18. So our nationalisation will keep the old bottles moving along, & that'll help refresh them. It'll keep them moving, exploring, pioneering, establishing new territory, training new leadership, & that's the biggest toughest job in the whole Family, in the whole World! So don't worry, there will always be some place for the North Americans to go.

19. After several years in a country I don't think leaders are worth two hoots if they haven't learned the native language enough to carry on a simple conversation! Now they've got to!

20. If you love the people you'll want to learn their language in order to be able to love & communicate with them. Leaders who have been in countries for years & haven't picked up enough of the language to carry on a normal simple conversation, how much do they really love the people?—They can't communicate!

21. We've already proven we've got some outstanding

talent in native leadership throughout the World, & if they haven't got it they can go out & win it somehow. If the need is there, the answer must be there too, so just look around & pray it in.

22. When we say you should have one national as a Co-Servant, we do not mean just as figureheads! "Well, now you're one of the Servants, you're a Co-Servant with us, blah, blah!"—when the Americans are still running the show!

23. We mean that he or she must be included in all council votes. We mean they must be incorporated into the leadership with definite responsibility, financial as well as otherwise.

24. If you haven't got the native talent, you're going to have to find & train it, that's all, even if you have to pick them up off the streets!—Because from now on you're going to have them sitting in the same office with you, going to the same bank with you & getting the mail with you, signing contracts etc.!

25. A capable American woman can marry a native husband & train him, or a capable American husband can marry a native wife & train her. My God, if a married man's got to take on another wife & have one American & one native, that's the way it'll have to be!

26. Couples who are Americans with one of them speaking the language fairly well, enough to be able to decipher the newspaper or carry on a normal conversation with the local people or officials or whatever, can qualify as Home Servants, if they ask the Home to get together & elect at least one new native Co-Servant to serve with them, so that the heads of the Home will now be a triumvirate & will have at least one native Servant to train.—Or, if they want to elect a couple of natives, then they can have four Home servants!

27. Happy hunting! If you look hard enough, I'm sure you'll find some nationals somewhere!—And someplace to send your North Americans pioneering! PTL! GBY!

28. We love you all! "There's no Jew nor Gentile, no Greek nor Roman in Christ Jesus" & His Kingdom!—Gal.3:28. But it makes a big difference to this World's kingdoms!

## WHERE ARE THE SHEPHERDS?

DO 662 1/78

—Who Lay Down Their Lives for the Sheep! (Jn.10:11-15.)



himself as a peasant or labourer & go out alone or with a bodyguard to talk to the people themselves to find out the truth. He couldn't get the truth through his own superior officers who were giving him a completely distorted picture of what was going on, a rosy-glow scene which was not actually true.

3. I am concerned about the little fellows down there who work hard on the pavements, on the front lines litnessing. To me, they are our greatest soldiers & heroes—not the bigshots who sit in their offices on their fannies & do nothing but "supervise on paper"!

4. I supervised my sheep closely! I tried my best to see what state my flocks & fields were in before I built my own house.—Pro.27:23; 24:27.

5. And I think I was a faithful shepherd, even while we were on the road. I used to go around at night & visit all the vehicles & cars & trailers that the people were sleeping in, making sure that they had ventilation if they had heaters inside. I made sure they had a comfortable place to sleep, were warm, had enough

blankets, clothes etc.

6. I believe I was a faithful shepherd even when I was just a nobody, just a humble shepherd of a little flock of stray sheep running around the country together. I did my best to take good care of them. Thank God!

7. I believe they knew that I loved them & was concerned about their welfare, as much if not more than my own. Way back in our first little Soul Clinic Schools, I was always checking on the students to make sure that they were comfortable & cozy.

8. I've always tried to make sure in my own little home that everybody is comfortable & has sufficient furniture, clothing, covers etc.

9. I have always been concerned about the sheep & particularly those with whom I was in direct contact, where I could be a direct observer & investigate in person to see how they do. So I have really tried.

10. But at this level it's almost impossible to know the truth unless you can actually visit the Homes yourself in person. Most information comes from reports & upper officers, some of whom have been hiding the facts.

11. They still don't seem to understand that the whole thing is for the sake of the little people at the bottom—not for the sake of the "lords over God's heritage" at the top.—1Pet.5:3.

12. The whole idea is to preach the Gospel to the poor, set at liberty them which are bound, heal the sick, cast out devils, deliver the little people, the people that are right down there at pavement level!

13. The Chain of Cooperation was intended to give the sheep even better care. Instead of that it turned out in many cases to simply give the leaders better care & develop a lot of top-heavy leadership that wasn't even needed, didn't care for the sheep, fleecing them to the bare skin!

14. I want you to be a little more open, a little more candid & not afraid to talk, because I have to hear. I need to hear not only the good things but I need to hear the bad things too, because we're now in the process of trying to change things!

15. We want to change the bad things to good things, but we can't do it unless we know what's happening & what's

going on or been going on. You need to be honest with us & tell us exactly what you feel & think.

16. The last message that Jesus gave to His Disciples was "Lovest thou Me?" They said, "Well of course, Lord, You know we love You!" He said, "Then feed My sheep!"—Jn.21:15-17. Some of these leaders have gotten the idea that the sheep are to take care of them!

17. If you take good care of your sheep they will take care of you, that's true. But it will be in love & because they appreciate the good care that they are getting. They know that you love them because you care for them, & are more concerned for their welfare than your own.

18. That's the kind of shepherds we need, that's the kind of leaders we need. That's the kind of people we are seeking.

19. You don't have to worry about hurting anybody's feelings. You don't have to worry about so-called "speaking against leaders" or being afraid to tell me the truth about what's going on.

20. I have bawled out some people who were working with me before because they refused or failed to tell me the truth, but they said, "Well, we didn't want to tell on them or be a troublemaker." So they let the trouble go on until it was almost beyond remedy! So I said:

21. "You knew this was going on & you didn't tell me, so that makes you just as guilty as they are because you protected them & made it possible for them to get away with it!"

22. Failure to report a crime is a crime! If you see a man being robbed or you see his house being broken into, you see the thief entering in or the car being burglarised, & you do not report it to the police, the police consider you also guilty!

23. You owe me & the Lord & the sheep more than you owe them! You owe me the truth, the naked unvarnished awful truth, more than you owe them any feeling of protection for their sins! Tell me more of the facts.

24. It's a very commendable virtue when you're able to stick it out through thick & thin no matter what, faithfulness, sticktoitiveness, determination, see it through, muddle through no matter what, because you know it's the Lord's Will & His Work

& God's calling for you.

25. So although you have had many trials & tribulations & discouragements & put-downs & a few put-ups, & probably some shut-ups, at least you've learned a lot. God's way up is down!—And some of you have taken these demotions & scoldings & put-downs well.

26. Sometimes it's harder to take promotion than it is demotion. We can manage to survive it better & it doesn't influence us as much. As Rudyard Kipling's old poem said:

27. "If you can take success & failure & treat these two impostors both the same, then you'll be a man, my son!" And God Himself through Jesus said almost the same thing when He said,

28. "Well done, thou good & faithful servant".—Mt. 25:21. He didn't say failure servant & He didn't say successful servant, but He just said faithful servant. And "one thing is required of a servant", as Paul says, "and that is that he be faithful", that we be faithful.—1Cor.4:2. And we are all servants.

29. "He that is greatest among you must be servant of all."—Mt.23:11. He must be the lowliest servant of all & serving the most people & really a servant, a slave.

30. Every good leader is a slave to his people. Every good public servant is a real servant of the people. Those who are not is the thing we're trying to cure in our own ranks now.

31. Some leaders, instead of being public servants & realising they are to be the slaves of the people, have gotten the idea that the sheep exist for their benefit to serve them!

32. The policy of some people has always been get as much as you can & give as little in return as possible. Well, that's maybe good business policy with some people, but that's not the way the Lord does things.

33. God's way to plenty is to give it away, "he that scattereth abroad, it increaseth"—Pr.11:24. Most selfish businessmen don't look at it that way. They figure the more they can withhold, the more it's going to increase.

34. So much good manpower & good leadership has been lost through mistreatment & evil dealing by selfish leaders who were only concerned about protecting themselves.

35. But it's ridiculous to put up with these abuses & keep

your mouth shut & don't say anything just because you're afraid you'll be dealt with by your leaders if you tell on them!

36. Now I want to warn you again if you protect these people & you don't tell me the whole truth, you are just as guilty!

37. I want to find those who really love the sheep & are concerned for them & have a heart!

38. We need to find shepherds. We need to put them in positions where they can be more effective & better able to care for the sheep & have the power to do so.

39. We're looking now for real shepherds: I want to know, where are the folks who are concerned about the sheep? Where are those "who are willing to lay down their lives for the sheep," as Jesus said? "The hireling fleeth but the good shepherd lays down his life for the sheep."—Jn.10:11-13.

40. Who do you know with the greatest concern for the welfare of the little ones, their comfort, their protection, their well-being, their food, their clothing, their housing, their little bed, their heat etc.?

41. I am so far removed from the Homes right now that it's impossible for me to personally supervise them all, but I want to find those who would supervise them the way I supervised them.

42. I want to find men & women with my love & my concern & God's Love & His concern for the sheep who are willing to get out there as Visiting Servants.

43. I want to find the kind of shepherds & undershepherds who will live & die for the sheep!—Not just sit around fleecing them & living in luxury while the sheep are dying!

44. Help us find true shepherds for the sheep! Where are they? Do you know?

## NEW BROOMS

DO 675 2/78

—A New Broom Sweeps Clean!—The Need for New Leaders!

1. Some of you have done a good faithful job, you've worked hard & you've done well. You've been kicked around a lot & yet survived it!—When you were misused & abused when you weren't to blame, when men spoke evil of you, you still stood by



your convictions.

2. When you've been kicked around & still stayed true, still loved the Lord, still loved the Family, still loved the Letters, still believed in me & went on anyway, you've passed a good test! When your leaders fail you & then blame you for things that are really their fault, that's a good test!

3. Now we're beginning to find out that all these so-called problem cases were not the problems at all, at least a lot of them, but it was the leaders themselves. They were a problem to the leaders because the leaders were wrong & the problems were right!

4. "Oh, this little upstart is lifted up in pride, he's challenging my authority! He's criticising my methods—how dare he!" "But the Letter said so-&-so, sir." "Are you challenging my authority?"

5. If you love the Lord, the Letters & the little ones & you have stood the test of good & evil, success & failure, & especially the test of a lot of these wrong leaders, it looks to me like you've come out on top.

6. I want somebody to go out there & feed my sheep & take care of them. Maybe you don't even want the job, but know you should take it for the sake of the Family.

7. I know you can do the job because I know God can do it through you as long as you depend on Him, His Holy Spirit & His Letters—& let them be the leaders. If you're led of the Lord, I know He can help you to make it.

8. I know with God's help you can do it, because I know the

Lord & I know He can do it. He can take anything to do it with if He wants to, even you!

**9. He loves to take the weak things to confound the mighty.**  
He loves to take the foolish things to bring to nought the wisdom of the wise.—1 Cor.1:27,28.

**10. God is now ready to expose those "wise ones" who thought they were so high & mighty & show them up by the very ones that they condemned & put down & beat down, criticised & judged & were so holier-than-thou with, so hypocritical.**

**11. Stay humble & go in a meek & quiet spirit,** humble & broken, & let the Lord use you. Do unto others as you'd have them do unto you, even if they mistreated you.—Mat.7:12. Be sure you're not ever acting in revenge.

**12. Don't forget why you're there, to care for His sheep.** Not for yourselves, not to have the sheep care for you, but you're there to care for them. If you love them & care for them gently & tenderly, they will care for you, but that shouldn't be your motive.

**13. Your motive should be to love them for Jesus' sake,** care for them for His sake—because He first loved you. He didn't say, "Lovest thou Me?—Then get the sheep to feed you."

**14. He said, "Lovest thou Me? Feed My sheep!"**—Jn.21:15-17. It's not always easy, but the Lord will be with you & help you & guide you. We don't have all the answers, we're doing the best we can to try to get you started & on your way & give you a little idea of what you have to do, but you'll have to follow the Lord.

**15. As much as God could, He put in the Bible, & as much as we could, we put in the Letters.** It's nearly all there for you to follow. You'll find the answers somewhere in the Word, or straight from the Lord or the people. Just follow!—Amen?

**16. "Lovest thou Me? Keep My commandments."** "He that keepeth My commandments, he it is that loveth Me."—Jn.21:16; 14:15,21. These people who've been going around denying the commandments, contradicting the commandments, preventing the sheep from obeying the commandments—they don't love me. How can they love the Lord?

**17. I think some of these leaders are in a very dangerous position today.** It were better for them that a millstone were hanged about their necks & that they were cast in the depth of the

sea than to cause one of those little ones to stumble!—Mt.18:6. They have caused a lot of people to stumble & led a lot of people astray, & I'm sorry to say, others have covered for them.

**18. Covering up is really of the Devil!** I think it's a lot better just to be open & honest. You know that's one of the main problems, everyone's been covering up too much.

**19. It's half the victory when you've got good communication & you're open & honest** about everything, not trying to cover up. Maybe I'm too honest with you sometimes, maybe I say too much, but I think I'd rather be that way. I think there's less danger in being too honest than in being too dishonest. Thank You Lord!

**20. It's got to be a new broom to sweep clean!** It's got to be a change in the whole spirit & atmosphere of administration. We've got to change the leaders, not just the laws!

**21. You old-timers say about the new leaders,** "But I don't know them, I don't know who they are!" I have heard that too many times when we're talking about selecting new leadership. What the hell difference does it make as long as their countrymen know them & the local work knows them & they know the local work & they want to obey the Lord & the Letters!—That's what counts!

**22. When I give somebody a job to do, I figure they ought to pick their own team,** the people they want & the people they can work with. And so that's as far as we're going to go, choosing the top leaders.

**23. Leave anything that's running well,** don't change horses in the middle of the stream. If the machine's running okay, keep it running. You don't have to change things that don't need to be changed. You know the old prayer,

**24. "God help me to change the things that need to be changed, & not to change the things that don't need to be changed, & especially, God, help me to know the difference!"** That's a pretty good thing to remember, huh?

**25. Pray for the kids & pray for the leaders & help them to get the faith & the conviction that they can get out & do it.** But they need good shepherds, good leaders, good servants to lead them & guide them & help them & encourage them.

26. Please pray for leaders! "The harvest truly is plenteous but the labourers are few."—That means people who really want to work. There's never a shortage of loafers, but the labourers are few. So pray for the labourers, amen?—Mt.9:37.

27. We need really wise, concerned leaders with a real spiritual side if possible, not just businessmen. They're also going to have to be able to be the business managers to make sure things run efficiently, economically & sufficiently to supply the needs.

28. The practical side is most important, the care & the concern in practical matters, because they have the spiritual in the Letters. The spiritual is all there for them so they don't have to have that much on their own, just obedience to the Letters.

29. The only thing these people have to do is obey the Letters & care for the Homes. Just caring for the Homes is what the deacons of the Early Church did.—And see that the Letters are being carried out. (See Acts 6:1-6.)

30. The Early Church had some of these same problems. The Apostles & spiritual leaders said, "Look ye out among you men of honest report, full of the Holy Ghost & wisdom whom we may appoint over this business."—Acts 6:3. In other words, you people choose for yourselves the men you want to feed you & take care of tending tables & so on.

31. They didn't have to be great spiritual leaders, as long as they followed the teachings. They were totally unknown, but some of them like Stephen & Philip did later become spiritual leaders. But they don't have to be such great spiritual leaders themselves at the moment. They grew into it.

32. Preferably, of course, they should be nationals, if we can find them. If we can't find them during this transition period, we'll have to give them a little time to make the change-over.

33. If you can't do anything else, bring a national in who isn't a leader & start training him. You're just going to have to teach him what he's supposed to do.

34. It's like training children. You've got to give them some responsibility & trust them with some decisions. And by the time they're young teenagers, even subteens, you've got to start trusting them with their own decisions.

35. If you've trained them up in the way they should go,

they will make the right decisions, they'll know what's right. But if they make the wrong ones, then you have to step in & intervene & help them. (Maria: But you can't cut them down so bad that they never want to make another decision again.) Yes, just show them in love.

36. You can't just trounce them & tramp all over them because they made a mistake. You've got to simply sit down & say, "Now let's see, what do you think went wrong? You know how we're supposed to do it, did you do it the way you're supposed to? You see, it was probably a mistake & we'll have to try again."

37. Be patient & loving & understanding. Don't be too hard on them or they'll get discouraged & may not want to make any more decisions.

38. They have retarded our national children in the Homes because they haven't given them responsibility, haven't trusted them, haven't trained them. They have retarded them & so they haven't learned.

39. Well, it's just a miracle of God we're still going at all! It's the Lord & the faithfulness & obedience & the spirit of you kids yourselves, in spite of the leaders, & sometimes you leaders in spite of the kids!

40. It's the Lord, & your love & loyalty. In spite of all the mistakes & shortcomings, at least we're still in existence, we're still going. But God knows what we might have been if everybody had obeyed & done what they were supposed to do! God help us to obey the Lord & His Letters!—Amen? PTL! GBY! ILY!—Dad.

---

## THE SHEPHERD'S ROD!

DO 682 3/78

1. The number one responsibility from each month's income is paying your bills! And which bills do you pay first? First, your housing, second, your utilities, & third, any other payments you have like your WS tithe!

2. If you've got anything left you eat, & if not you just don't eat! Either that or you get out & hump for it & get it so that you do eat. This has been our policy for years!



3. If you haven't used that policy, you have not obeyed the Letters. It would be a real blemish on the cause of Christ for you to go bankrupt, especially after being such a testimony.

4. If your Home goes broke, you need to choose new Servants who can manage finances better & make you all get to work!

5. Some have literally been robbing God, robbing us & robbing His people by mismanagement of His funds!—Not deliberately, but you just don't know how to handle them or what the priorities should be. You just don't know how to live within your income & you have been literally living on borrowed money & borrowed time & now have run out of both!

6. When it comes to handling money, you've got to have somebody who is business-like, tough, hard-boiled! That's where you need a tyrant! That's where you need someone to crack the whip!

7. Some people have the idea that running on faith means running it on nothing.—Faith is not nothing! "Faith is the substance of things hoped for." It's knowing God & that God is, & that God is going to take care of you somehow if you obey Him & do His Will & His Work.—Heb.11:1,6.

8. The only reason you're not paying your bills & are not going to eat is because you're not working, or God would bless you with income. I have never known the time in 60 years of my life when I couldn't pay my bills or I couldn't eat! Never!

9. If you're not willing to work just as hard or harder for the Lord than you did for the System, then you ought to quit God's business & go back into the System & work for money.

At least you'd be a better testimony! There's no reason why every person in every one of your Homes can't get out!

10. The only place where they cannot all go out every day would be an office or pub Home.—But those people are earning their salt by producing the lit. And they had better have enough to keep them busy all day long or hit the streets with lit & the stores provisioning!

11. One of the most important witnesses a Christian can have is paying his bills!—"Providing all things honest to them that are without."—1Tim.3:7; Rom.12:17; 2Cor.8:21. Some say, "Well he ought to forget the bill & donate it." I don't care how rich the corporation or the creditor is:

12. Most of the rich men I knew wanted to see first of all how honest you were, how faithful, how diligent you were, how hard you worked to try to pay your bills. Then if they saw you did your best, they would turn around & try to help you.

13. If you work hard & the field still doesn't pay for itself, then you need to find a new field, or you shouldn't have gone to that field in the first place.

14. Maybe you're loafing, because your Home Servant hasn't got things organised & scheduled, & the Shepherd doesn't herd you out to go to work.

15. I had that problem with personnel long ago in our first Soul Clinic school. Some of them never felt inspired to witness, the Spirit never moved them to go out door-to-door, so I moved them! I said, "Either you move out door-to-door or you move out!"

16. If you're out of funds, you should all be out raising money the fastest way you can because you need immediate cash. Everyone should get out immediately litnessing & provisioning

17. Mail provisioning is going to take time, but somebody should start writing a prayer letter asking for help, & God knows you certainly need help!

18. Make everybody sit down for at least 1-2 hours & write letters home.—One letter to the parents, one letter to their self-supporting brothers & sisters, or relatives that they know could help them. Tell them we are in desperate need & having a hard time meeting our needs, could you please help us? Don't stop & wait for a prayer letter, write your own—TONIGHT!

19. Somebody who knows something about writing prayer letters can write a general prayer letter that they can put a few pictures in & stories of their accomplishments there, something that would be worth bragging about. Have this printed up as quickly as possible, & send them out right away! Get the mail provisioning rolling as quick as you can!

20. Get on the ball! Let your friends know you're desperate for money. "Did you know we didn't have enough to eat at our house yesterday?" Or, "We haven't been able to pay the rent!"

21. I'm getting fed up with people who don't show their gratitude by something material. It's nice to say "thanks" or "I love you", but it doesn't pay the bills! They'd better start putting works to their faith!—"Faith without works is dead" (Jam.2:17), & love without some material manifestation is doubly dead!

22. We're not charging, but we expect people to show their thanks & their appreciation, & they ought to give it more for love than if we charged them!

23. If we've got any musicians around, they ought to get out & find a place to sing & play! Get out someplace & play music, if you have to do it in the park, bars or on the street with your wives & kids & pass the hat!

24. If you've got anybody that's working on a soul you'd better get out & try to win them! Persuade some of these people who have gotten saved but who've been putting off being disciples to join & bring everything they have with them!

25. Or persuade them to drop in, stay on their job but contribute toward the Family. You are now their church. Let me tell you, they wouldn't be going to the other churches for nothing, right?

26. If you can't do any one of the first 6 things, you should get a job! And if you can't get a good job there, I suggest you go someplace where you can.

27. If you cannot earn your salt at one of those 6 methods of actual witnessing, you're no missionary! You don't know how to be a missionary! Go back home & get a good job & make good money & send the money to the folks that you know are working hard & trying to be missionaries!

28. We didn't get this far by my being an easy-going

pushover! We got this far by my being like God!—A hard man who cracked the whip & wielded the rod & got you people to obey & do what you were supposed to do!

29. It's time to go back to work & work better than we ever did before! I want to see you kids produce better now than you did under the tyrants!—Not produce less but more! I'm going to be harder on you than the tyrants you had!

30. I want to see you get out & produce more than before! I want to see you produce more now for the love of God & the love of souls & the love of your Prophet in obedience to me than you produced for those little tyrants!—And if you don't, you're not worth your salt!

31. I want to see everybody doing whatever they can do best. If you can litness better than anything else, litness! If you can provision better than anything else, provision! If you can win souls & forsake-alls better than anything else, do it!

32. I can be hard if I have to be! The Lord Himself told the story: The man said, "Thou art an hard man!" God said, "Well, you knew I was hard, so why didn't you do the job? Why did you just bury your talent & sit around doing nothing?"—Mt.25:14-30. If any of you have buried your talent, you'd better dig it up! (Prays:)

33. All right, Lord, we've given them the Word & the rod, now we ask You, in Jesus' name, to help the sheep to obey & go where they're sent. The grass is there, Lord, all they need to do is go there & get it & the wool will grow! They won't have to rob Thee anymore or rob us or Thy Work anymore, & rob the World of the ministry they're supposed to have.

34. They're just falling down on their ministry in all these fields, or You would have ministered to them. Their contacts & converts & others would have ministered to them. Either they don't know how to minister or they don't know how to make it pay.

35. If they're too God-damned proud to ask for help, they're too God-damned proud to be in Your business, because that's what a great deal of it is, asking for help!—In Jesus' name, amen.

36. One of the first lessons I ever had to learn was that you've got to be humble enough to ask for it! You can't just

wait until they voluntarily offer to give it, you've got to ask them for it. And you girls who have been playing around with some fish for a long time & not gotten anything out of him, you're un-profitable servants!

**37. So you guys had better get on the ball & get out & get to work!** The only Homes that are going to stay open now are the ones that are paying their way. We're not going to let you rob God any more!

**38. No matter how much or how little you earn, you're going to give your 10% to God, no matter what!** Is that clear? No more borrowing funds from your tithe box!

**39. I'm sick of people who don't work!**—People who won't work & can't make it pay! Some people have probably been doing all the work, more than their share, while others haven't done their own share. Some are over-worked while others are under-worked. Get to work! It's your last chance!

**40. We're going to weed out the under-workers & ship them someplace else or hit the road with them or send them home!**

## EXCOMMUNICATION!

DO 683 3/78

**1. God will not allow Himself to be robbed!** "Will a man rob God...ye have robbed Me in tithes & offerings."—Mal.3:8. The minute you start borrowing God's share, His 10%, when He's already let you keep 90%, He will not tolerate it! That is probably one reason some areas are sinking. I've heard of that happening so many times.

**2. People borrow God's money, then bam, God takes a collection!** All kinds of things go wrong that God could have kept from happening if they'd been faithful, but they literally stole God's little 10%, His share, & God just didn't bless it!

**3. God will not tolerate you touching His share.** He's giving you 90%, why should you rob Him of His 10%? He just will not bless it. People will tell you,

**4. "We just can't afford to give 10% this month because we're so low financially."** You tell them, "You can't afford not to pay the 10%! God won't bless your work & He won't bless

you financially."—That's probably what's wrong.

**5. Under the New Testament system God no longer requires just 10% as He did in the Old Testament. You know what He requires now?—100%!**

**6. He expects you to give your whole life & everything you own for the Lord, in fulltime service, as much as you can. But He certainly does not expect you to give less than 10%!**

**7. I know God & I know His financial policies & there are two things that will definitely cut down your financial blessings:** (1) If you don't work. You've got to get out & hump & do your share, whatever it is, litnessing, provisioning, writing letters or whatever. (2) If you don't obey.

**8. (Maria: Some of them won't even pay their new or old lit bills either.** The ultimatum has been sent out, "Until you pay your lit bills, no more lit"—but they still refuse.)

**9. In a case like that, if they just continue to refuse, I would absolutely excommunicate them!** Any Home that refuses to pay its bills ought to be reported & excommunicated!

**10. That should not require gradual declassification:** It should be a total sudden excommunication, resulting in not receiving any mailings from WS until they pay their bills! That's the only rod we've got & we're going to have to use it.

**11. There is something wrong with any Home that God's not blessing with at least their needs.** You know it's not God. You know it's not us, we're doing our part. There is something wrong with you.

**12. It's got to be one of those few things:** They're not working enough, they're living too high or they're robbing God, & maybe all three!

**13. You can say, "Okay, we don't have it all, but we agree to make monthly payments on it."** I'm sure you could do that. Otherwise, you should close down. If it's an outfit that's not doing the job, won't bring up its standards & won't pay its bills, it's a poor testimony. I'd cut'm off completely!

**14. Just because I shipped away their tyrants doesn't mean that there are no rules & they can lie down on the job & do nothing!** Apparently, delivering them from their tyrants is giving some of them the idea that they don't have to do anything now.

15. Poor living standards merit a few warnings, then gradual declassification. We can wait for them to bring up their living standard, but we can't wait for them to pay their bills!

16. Non-payment of the 10% also merits immediate excommunication, that's their primary bill. If you don't pay God, He takes a collection!

17. Any Family that closes down leaving bills behind ought to be named publicly & they should not be able to join any other Home!—Excommunicated until paid! Of course, it might not be everybody's fault in the Home.

18. Find out whose fault it was & don't allow them back in the Family any place else until they pay their bills. Go out & get a job & work for it to pay it off if you have to! It's been a rule of the Family for years.

19. People who have unpaid bills are not supposed to join the Family. If they incur bills while in the Family then they need to either pay up or get out & pay'm! People like that are not good testimonies, they're not honest, they don't keep their word.

20. There's just no excuse for any servant of God not to have enough support! If he's pleasing God & doing the right thing, God will drop it out of the sky if He has to. But you've still got to do your part & get out & work!—That's pleasing God & doing the right thing!

21. So remember: We're going to excommunicate Homes who don't pay their bills, tithes or bring up their living standards according to the Checklist!

22. Sorry, but we must obey God & His Word! We cannot tolerate Homes who are a bad testimony, not getting results, not taking care of their Family, not paying bills nor tithes nor nationalising, not splitting into all the World, & not litnessing nor winning souls!

23. You're just not a part of this army-like Family if you don't keep the rules!—So why should you be blessed with the Letters?—You don't deserve them!

24. So come on, Family, let's get back to work! The party's over! It's time to do your part instead of parties!

## MAKE IT PAY!

DO 684 3/78



1. Good witnessing should pay! If you're obeying, God will be blessing you in some way & will take care of your needs. If you are not obeying God & refuse to obey, then He will have no part in you!

2. If you don't know how to let your fish & friends know that you need money, you ought to get out of the business! It's nice to win souls, but it's got to pay for itself.

3. If your area can't afford to support you, then you'll have to move, but I know it can. There is no reason why most countries can't support a few little Homes. There's just no excuse!

4. If you're paying exorbitant rent, you're not going to make it. You're going to have to pay for your luxuries. If you're going to live in a mansion, you're going to have to get out & work harder to pay for it. If you're only going to earn enough to live in a tent, you've got no business living in a mansion!

5. And don't tell me kids can't litness! I'm just dumbfounded to find the Homes think that kids are a liability & they can't litness & somebody has always got to stay home with them!

6. Our families ought to be our biggest assets. Where did this business begin that we had to have some kind of single shiners to support works & Homes?

7. It certainly wasn't so in my own little family & it wasn't so in the early days. People who had children could do more litnessing than anybody!

8. Who can turn down a little child? I even give those dirty little beggar boys something. The idea that you always have to leave somebody home with a bunch of kids because they can't litness is ridiculous!

9. Every child should be an asset & be taught how to litness & provision. Take them along when you go provisioning.—What man could resist a poor mother with a babe in arms & a few little tykes tagging along on her coattails?—The Gypsies do it!

10. We ought to start sending mothers & children out as provisioners! Our mothers & childcare workers could be out going from store to store provisioning.

11. Teach the little kids to be a family of singers & instrumentalists like we did ours & go out to the park. The kids have a good time & then they earn their money while it's nice & sunny. "When it's sunny, it means money!"—Get out in the park & sing & play & pass the hat!

12. I think you ought to especially do mail provisioning.—Write some letters home. Raise the money back home. That's what most missionaries do. They get their support from home. They don't expect the poor natives to support them.

13. Tell them what you need. If you were there they'd be getting it for you. Well, now you're here & you're working for the Lord, & it's their business to help support you.

14. If anybody's going to be interested in you, it's your parents & relatives, or your working brothers & sisters back home. Of course, if you can't report to them that you're winning souls & you're preaching the Gospel, they're not going to be encouraged to support you.

15. A few of the kids have found out it pays to advertise, but some of them are too proud, they're too ashamed. They haven't kept on good terms with their parents. They've been lazy, they haven't written Home even once a month.

16. I supported our little family for years on prayer letters because I did it faithfully. It was our lifeline & I knew I had to do it, & folks responded.

17. Some people say they can't afford the postage this month & refuse to pay their lit bills! That's like the farmer saying, "I'm sorry, but we're going to have to eat our seed corn because we

don't have enough to save!" You know what happens when you do that? You won't have any corn to plant & therefore you won't have your next harvest!

18. If you're too proud to do a little begging, then you're too damn proud & your needs aren't going to be met. People are accustomed to religious outfits begging, & most people will give to the people who have the strongest appeal & the most desperate need.

19. I never found any branch of the Lord's Work where pride pays at all! Pride does not pay, & it doesn't pay the bills. We've got every reason in the World to ask for help for His Work.

20. In all the years we've lived by faith, God has never failed! I never missed a meal for God's lack of supply, never! I never missed paying the rent even when we had nothing & were nobody.

21. If God didn't send it in, I got myself a job & earned it! There's no excuse for anybody not having enough money to pay for their needs & their bills.

22. Otherwise, if you can't witness, go home & get a job & support the folks who can! Whatever you can do, get back to work! "He that shall not work shall not eat!"—2Thes.3:10. God bless & help you make it pay!—Amen?—Love—Dad.

---

## THE ADVANTAGES OF HAVING CHILDREN!

DO 688 5/78

1. I think you kids know I try to be merciful & easy on people, & I almost spoil them, if anything. That's the thing that upsets me about the way that some of these kids & overburdened mothers are being treated.

2. I mean to tell you, just from experience in handling goats, if there's any time the goats or sheep need the shepherd & need a lot of extra care it's when they're lambing.

3. The lambs are the increase of the flock! And they are, in a sense, your future labour force. They'll soon begin bearing wool & meat & they are the increase.

4. And any Shepherd who kicks out a mother with three children on the road, just because he doesn't want to have to support them, is just plain daffy, out of his mind! It won't be very



to get a crop, he has to go out there & he has to plow & sow & fertilise & water. He does a whole lot of work that he doesn't get anything out of for a long time until harvest & marketing, & then he finally gets the payoff.

7. I believe the local **Home** is able to handle those average few **children**.—If it has several children of various age groups, fine, then it merits an extra worker or two to help them take care of the extra children—but right in the **Home**! Right there!—Where the parents can constantly keep an eye on how well they're being taken care of!

8. If the parents are busy & they've got a lot of other responsibilities & they can't be taking care of their own children all the time, they should have workers to help them, like we do.

9. At home they're with their parents more & the parents get to see that they're cared for. The kids know that their parents love them even if they're busy & can't be with them all the time.

many months before all those little kids are going to be good witnesses & good litnessers & some of the best assets he's got!

5. But it costs you something in the meantime. It costs you something to have little kids, & it takes a lot of tender loving care & feeding & so on.

6. Just like the **farmer** when he wants

10. I think every individual **Home** is able to take care of their **own children**. The parents who need to take more of an interest will be forced to, & the parents who want to have their children around to care for will be able to.

11. **People with children are not exceptions**. They're a major part of the **Body** & it's very few & far between that you find a couple who don't have children at all, it's almost impossible!

12. **Caring for children is part of your everyday life**. Each **Home** has children, & everyone in the **Home** should know that they're expected to help out with the children while the parents do dishes or do other essential work.

13. **Every child should be a litnesser or a litnessing asset**. Have you ever noticed how the Gypsy women beg? I don't think I've ever seen a Gypsy woman begging yet without a babe in arms & two or three little children.

14. **I don't see why mothers can't also do some litnessing**, & most mothers have proved very successful litnessers with their children, little extra assets.

15. **Take the children litnessing & provisioning & use the children!** Train them up in the way they should go as a disciple, not as a school product!

16. **Our children ought to feel loved by everybody**. And we ought to feel like they are all our children. I said this a long time ago, clear back at TSC: "Don't you talk about my kids & your kids, they're our kids!"

17. **I consider it everyone's responsibility to help support the children**. It should not only be the parents & childcare helpers alone who contribute to the children's support, but we need to spread the load out a little more.

18. **They're our children, & our system is responsible for their welfare**. The Family is responsible for all its children. You say, "Well, I don't have any kids, so why should I pay for their support?"—Well, they're still your kids!

19. **They are the children of the Family, therefore the entire Family is responsible for them**.—Not just those that happen to be their physical parents, because they are our coming generation.

20. **They are our population, they are our future citizens!**

Therefore we are all responsible for them & we should all contribute to their education & well-being, all of us!

**21. The kids are pulling their own weight**, so as far as I'm concerned they're certainly worth it. They deserve our support simply because they are all of our children. They belong to all of us & they are our future.

**22. Children are one of the biggest assets you've got!** My children practically put me in business, & yours can do the same for you if you train them right & if you get them out witnessing & litnessing. My kids finally were supporting me!

**23. It wasn't long before my kids were out there doing better than I was & supporting me:** They don't have to be very old to do it. Don't tell me kids are a drawback or a liability! Look at Davidito: He helps me know there's a reason for living! PTL!

## **OWE NO MAN!**

DO 701 6/78



**1. I can never ever remember in my whole life doing any printing on credit!** That's the craziest thing I ever heard of! We took our material to the printers to have it printed, & when I went to pick it up I paid cash on the counter, then & there.

**2. I never even thought of charging any portion of it**, or paying in installments or anything. I figured if I didn't have the money in my pocket to pay for the printing, then I couldn't afford it.

**3. I not only don't believe in credit, I don't believe in operating without a financial reserve.** I've insisted that every single WS Unit have a certain small reserve to fall back on, just in case there's an emergency, so that they wouldn't have to look to us. When the recent crash came, they were able to keep on operating in spite of the lack of income, because they already had something to operate on.

**4. Any outfit, no matter what it is, that is constantly living beyond its income, is headed for trouble**, whether it be an individual, a family, an organisation, a company, or even a government. In other words, not only not living within their income & accumulating a slight reserve for emergencies, but living beyond their income & accumulating debts instead of reserves! That is crazy business! I mean that's really insane!

**5. I am furious with these people who bank on the future, & not the Lord.** Those who bank on forecasting instead of a bird in the hand, which is worth not only two, but a dozen in the bush, had better watch out because I'm not going to stand for it.

**6. It's amazing how quick you can get poor.** People counting & banking on the future are apt to get a sad surprise, unless it's the Lord they're counting on.

**7. So if there's anything you need to learn, it's how to live on a business-like basis.**—Common sense, no credit, cash & carry, & for God's sake build up a little emergency fund or reserve that you can fall back on in case of emergencies.

**8. A good businessman estimates on the outside, not on the inside.** He makes his estimates on costs on the upside, not on the downside. He plans, in a sense, pessimistically instead of optimistically.

**9. In other words, his income estimates must be as low as possible, & his outgo estimates as high as possible.** So in case he makes a mistake, one way or the other, he will hit it closer to where it really is. It's better to overestimate your bills & underestimate your income, so you can get it together somehow.

**10. If you're too heavenly-minded, then you're not going to be an earthly bit of good.** If you've got your head in the clouds but your feet never touch the ground, then you're not going to last very long in this World.

**11. You need to have your feet firmly planted on the surface of this Earth.** It's a cruel World & you'd better get used to the fact that you can't just live on borrowed time & borrowed money & credit.

**12. The simple plain rule of almost my whole life has been if I don't have the money today, I don't buy it.** I don't like credit. It wasn't until I had an assured salary that I ever began to have any kind of credit accounts.

**13. But I'll tell you, when that salary came to an end, I was pretty much left holding the bag because I had bills on charge accounts still rolling in, which it was not easy to pay.** So you see, if you bank too much on your income & guesstimate its size a little too liberally & optimistically, you're apt to be left holding the bag like a lot of places are now.

**14. I tell our Home finance man to make me out a financial account for our Home every week,** so I don't even get a week, certainly not a month, behind. I want every detail, personal needs, perfume, everything, so I'll know just where the leaks are. And when you can buy a good bottle of locally-made perfume very economically, I mean good strong perfume, not just all alcohol, for \$5, we don't have to go & pay \$10 or \$15 for a bottle of dear so-&-so's favourite perfume!

**15. I don't believe in being extravagant!** I'm just a real pinch-penny. I believe that the Lord supplies our needs, at least the minimum, & I like to try to stick to the minimum.

**16. If the Lord wants to give me more, well, all right, that's up to Him.** In the meantime, I'm going to operate on an economy budget, just in case He doesn't decide to allow me to be extravagant.

**17. I am chintzy! I am a pinch-penny. I don't like these people who live in such horrible luxury!** I hate to see people putting out so much money. I'll tell you, the extravagant people are going to suffer for it now because they're not going to have the money, they can't live like that any more.

**18. If you haven't got it, then you shouldn't spend it.** And you kids had better learn that! Thank God for this emergency (drop in WS income) which has taught us to economise more, & cut down on a lot of unnecessary expenses, cut back to only what

is absolutely necessary.

**19. I've been teaching you spiritual values for years, now you need to learn a little something about common material values.** I'll tell you, if I have ever seen anything you kids are wasteful & neglectful about, it's the way you treat material things. I have even seen it in some of the Homes that I've lived in & I have blown my stack about it. You break a little part & throw the whole thing away without even attempting to repair it.

**20. You'd better quit this ridiculous living on the future, & living on credit & borrowed time, & living extravagantly above your income.**

**21. Audit the books & see where the money's going, why & what for, & how much income you've got or why not.** Get set up on a paying basis that will pay for itself as you go.—Self-supporting. (Maria: Check what kind of napkins you're buying & what kind of perfume.)

**22. If the bills are too high & you can't raise the money, or you don't have it right on the spot, go & make a deal with the creditors.** Tell them you can't afford to pay it all right now.

**23. Make a deal to pay it off in smaller payments** that you can afford to pay. Creditors like to know you at least intend to pay something, that you're honest & you're willing to face them & promise that you'll do the best you can.

**24. They'd rather have a little something coming in than nothing at all.** They'd rather you pay it on small time payments than to run out of town & leave the whole thing flat & it never gets paid.

**25. We're going to have to teach you kids something about economising & working,** living for the day & not for the future. I'll tell you, when I just lived day by day on whatever money came in the mail that day, I knew where I was at least, & I didn't buy anything I couldn't pay for!

**26. When I finally was on a monthly salary, the very first thing I did with each check was to write out checks for all my bills** that were going to come due that month. Even if they didn't come due till 30 days from then, I estimated my bills & set aside the money to pay for them. I wanted to be sure I was going to be able to pay my bills for that whole month.

**27. Then if we had anything left, we ate.** If not, we got out and witnessed and provisioned and wrote prayer letters and what-not.

**28. Well, I'll tell you, the Lord never failed us!** As long as we worked & were faithful & diligent in all the jobs & didn't live beyond our income & didn't live on credit, didn't live extravagantly, the Lord supplied every need & even more.

**29. If you live conservatively the Lord doesn't mind sometimes giving you a few luxuries,** because He likes the way you hang onto your money & the way you conserve things. He knows that He can trust you with it, so maybe He can even trust you with a few luxuries.

**30. But if you live extravagantly, beyond your means,** beyond your income, & buy a lot of stuff you don't need, God's apt to take away even your necessities to teach you a lesson.

**31. Instalment buying is another thing, because you come out ahead in the long run due to inflation.** That's why some governments are forbidding instalment buying now.

**32. That's the only case in which I would say that it's worth buying anything on time.** But be sure that the payments are small enough that you're not going to go bankrupt & you can easily handle them no matter what.

**33. So here are a few basic principles: If you have anything left over, save it for a rainy day,** because it's bound to rain sooner or later.—It's more apt to be a dry day when you're really going to need it.

**34. Never let yourself get caught short.** Always have something to fall back on in emergencies if possible. Then at least you've got a little time to survive the emergency & in which you can still eat & try to find some other alternative in order to pull through. But if you're operating nip & tuck on the borderline of starvation & something suddenly happens, then you're just sunk.

**35. Don't count on the future, & don't have any debts to worry about from the past.** Live within your income day by day, or week by week or month by month. Don't spend money you haven't got.

**36. When you start getting credit, you are spending money you don't have.** In fact, the worst of it is, you are spending some-

body else's money. Then when you can't repay them it's a terrible testimony. It's a strict contradiction of the commandment in the Scripture, "Owe no man anything save to love him".—Rom.13:8.

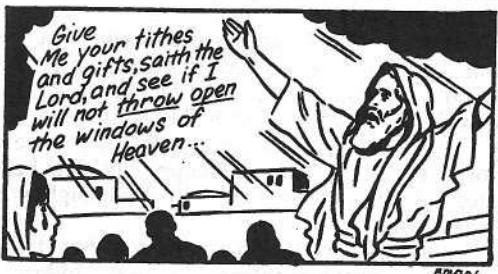
**37. You can't pay some bills in advance, but you'd better set aside for them & plan on the fact that it's going to be approximately so much.** Set it aside so that you can pay it when it comes, instead of saying, "Oh well, when the bill comes due, the Lord will supply somehow." That's the way a lot of you were operating, & all of a sudden the bottom dropped out. The bills came due, but instead of the Lord supplying, the Lord taught you not to do business that way!

**38. If we don't learn a little common sense about how to be good stewards of God's money & talents, we're not going to be able to survive in this cold cruel World.** We are not going to be able to carry on the Lord's business if we don't learn the economics of it.

**39. One thing I know, if you seek first the Kingdom of God & His righteousness, He will add all these other things unto you.**—Mat.6:33. And if He hasn't, it's because you're not seeking His Will first. And one of the first ways of seeking His Will & seeking the Kingdom, which means seeking & endeavouring to promote the welfare of the Kingdom, is to learn how to live economically & work to raise your own support. If you work at it, the Lord will supply.

**40. There are always going to be emergencies of some kind sooner or later.** But if you're prepared for it & have built up enough of a margin to take care of it, then it's not going to be a deathblow to the work.

**41. It's going to take some work now to get out of debt,** if you're so far behind, but you're going to have to do it somehow. Work as though everything depended on work, & pray as though everything depended on the Lord, & I'm sure He'll help pull you out! God bless you! We love you!—And we're praying for you! Holler if you need help! Praise the Lord!



**2. The most valuable thing that we have is people, Man-power!** It is the scarcest thing & the hardest to get. God has done a miracle by His Grace in giving us the message & the wisdom whereby we have recruited a missionary force of 7,000 in a shorter time than any missionary movement in history outside of the original Early Church! (1988: Now 12,000!)

**3. We want to use our manpower so that it can benefit everybody & reach the most parts of the World possible with the Gospel to every creature.** This has been my great burden, & I have worked years at it & God has blessed me with making it come true. It has been fulfilled by many miracles & by the power of God, but also by personal obedience.

**4. As the Lord once told you, "By the obedience of one man, many have been made righteous."**—Rom.5:19. Because I obeyed the Lord you're here today, every one of you. I was afraid not to obey God. He gave the ideas & I passed them on.

**5. He gave the orders, I obeyed & therefore He gave the blessing of recruiting disciples, the manpower, the workers, the labourers for the field, the hardest thing to get.** There is always a great harvest of new souls waiting for you, but it's hard to get the labourers who will go into the field to reap.

**6. Even the harvest of material blessings is always great & plenteous if you'll just go out there & obey God & do His Will & harvest. It's all there!** If you do God's work, you're His

employee, you work for Him, & He is certainly going to pay your salary & foot the bill, amen?

**7. At the same time we want to be sure that we are not wasteful with the material blessings that God gives us any more than we are with manpower, that we don't waste our money or materials.** Have you tried to economise both on manpower & on the material things?

**8. Material things do not interest me except that they are necessary to carry out the work of God I have to do.**

**9. I try to save everything!** I was so saving that the day came once upon a time that God showed me that a lot of something far more valuable than material things was being thrown away, & that was your lives: Lives of the dregs of society, the hippies, the drug addicts, the vice addicts, the criminals.

**10. Anybody who knows me & has lived with me knows that I am probably the most economical saving person that you'd ever want to know, and a horrible penny pincher, as chintzy as they come. I'm almost as bad as my Grandfather, who my Mother said would squeeze a Dollar, when they still had silver Dollars that were worth something, so hard that it would make the eagle scream! So I am very economical, very saving.**

**11. I have had to learn something that my Mother often said, that God's Servant is more valuable than His money.** There have been times when I have suffered because I was too darn stingy to want to spend the money & I have abused God's Servant, his strength & his time, because I didn't want to spend a few extra pennies to make it a little easier & quicker.

**12. There's nothing I've ever asked you kids to do that I haven't done some time or other myself, including hitchhiking & all the rest, or wangling a meal off a restaurant or whatnot.—And I'm still trying to do that! Only now with my security situation I have to act my best.**

**13. Well, I could tell you many tales of how we saved money, some that you might not believe, but it's the truth. So it hurts me when people are extravagant, it hurts me when people waste things, especially manpower.**

**14. I haven't asked for one red cent more than we have got to have to survive & do the job God gave us to do. That's what**

it costs to feed us, foot the bills & buy just things we need. I haven't gone to a store for two years! I haven't bought myself a damn thing that I know of. We don't just go around buying ourselves new clothes.

15. **I don't like to have anything to do with money.** Personally, I never had much money to worry about &, as Maria knows, that's not my besetting sin, any desire for money.

16. **I never wanted any money, never had any, never cared a damn about it!** I was thankful if I had a place to stay & something to eat. And the fact that God has given us any & entrusted us with any is only a miracle of God & apparently because I don't like it, & don't want it & I'm not covetous of it.

17. **So you have tossed the ball in my court? Well, I'm going to toss it back to you.** If you're going to keep the tithes, which are necessary to both keep me & to keep the Family in business, then I just want you to explain to me what I am going to do & what World Services is going to do!

18. **Well, you say, let's just eliminate World Services entirely & then they won't need any tithes.** Well, if you can figure out a way to make it any smaller than I have then I'm all for it. Maybe you can eliminate me too & you won't need to send in any tithes. But I wonder what you'll do for MO Letters & your own support?—Kind of like the guy who killed the goose that laid the golden eggs. Remember that story?

19. **He got a little impatient waiting on just one golden egg a day, & decided to kill the goose & get them all at once.** You know what happened, don't you? He found he killed the gold factory, because when he split the goose open there was just one egg, & that was the last one, that was the end.

20. **Now if you want, you can kill the organisation which we have, & which was not built for the egg to begin with, but if you want to kill the goose in order to get the last egg, then where are the rest of your eggs going to come from?**

21. **If you're ready to dump me, praise God, I'm ready to go.** That will save me a lot of work because I won't have to worry about you any more either, & you're a helluva lot bigger worry than I ever had before in my whole life. When I never had anybody but myself & my own little family, we lived on almost

nothing, travelling around in a camper.

22. **But now I've got you on my hands, a much bigger Family & a helluva lot more responsibility which requires a lot more finances, a lot more figuring how to make it work & stay alive & help you stay with your heads above water.**

23. **I'll tell you right now, I never asked for this job in the first place, never wanted it, & certainly didn't want it for the money, that's the last thing!** I never wanted to be loaded with such responsibility.

24. **You remind me of the Prodigal Son.—He thought he ought to have his share too,** right away quick. So he insisted on it, it was his, & he got it. All right, where did he get it?

25. **Why hadn't the Father given it to him beforehand?** What was that portion? It was a part of the farm. It was a part of the total investment. It was literally a part of the business & he demanded his share of the investment.

26. **He didn't give a damn about how the Father or the Brother got along,** or Mom either, after he was gone, whether they made it or not; he wanted what was coming to him. "That's mine and I want it, give it to me, I deserve it. It's supposed to be mine and I'm going to take it and do as I please with it. I'm going to get the benefit of it." So he did, & what came of it?

27. **By the time he got done with it there wasn't anything left,** & if it hadn't been for his wise Father & smarter Older Brother who stayed home & worked & kept things going & managed to survive the loss, he could have damned well stayed out there stuck in the mud with his God-damned hogs & died there!—Because he wouldn't have had any home to go back to. There wouldn't have been any home, nor any loving Father or Elder Brother to take care of him when he went broke.

28. **We have had to rescue many Homes** out of a jam when they couldn't make it & asked us for money, & we sent it to help them. But if you want to destroy the house, sell the home & throw away the roof & chop up the farm so that when the emergency comes there's not going to be any help & the Homes will have nobody to look to & nowhere to go & nowhere to get help from, well, it's your farm & that's what you can do if you want to, if you want to be that foolish.

29. I'm working fast & furious & as hard as I can on figuring how to cut down on expenses, & have finally just about eliminated extra services & spread out everything so that we can know that every penny is counting & nothing's being wasted & nothing's being spent on anything that isn't absolutely necessary. That's why I spent so much time telling you how damned chintzy & saving I am.

30. If what's left of World Services has no support, there'll no longer be any communications center. Maybe your little Home would stay together & you'd keep your part of the Kingdom, but there'd be no more international worldwide Family, at least not that amounts to anything. But if you think we'd all be better off broken up in little pieces & little breezes here & little breezes there instead of one mighty hurricane, if that's what you want you can have it.

31. Well, you say, "The money's got to be given to the ones who need it". Fine, I agree. And one of the poor men happens to be World Services, which had been damn poor until I started plugging for the fact that they needed & deserved the support of the World!

32. Well, now maybe you have learned something about God's business that you never knew before. I hope you can take it & I hope you understand it & are not worse off than you were before. Pray to God that you won't make the same mistake & use such poor judgment & such poor wisdom ever again as to fail to support His Work as you should!

33. "Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse (W.S.), that there may be meat in Mine house, & prove Me now herewith, saith the Lord of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of Heaven, & pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it." —Mal.3:10.—Amen! GBY! WLY!

+++

34. P.S. Many of our missionaries are still in dire need, & this is where our tithe goes, to World Missions—10% of our total income.—But it's still not enough.

35. If you would only tithe your total income we would be able to support these needy missionaries better, & better serve your W.S. needs as well.

36. So please try to tithe 10% of your total income to meet all these needs, both of W.S. to you & the needs of your missionaries in hard fields.

37. You'll never be sorry! God will repay! Read the verse again! (Mal.3:10) He'll pour you out such blessings there won't be room enough to hold'm! Amen? PTL!

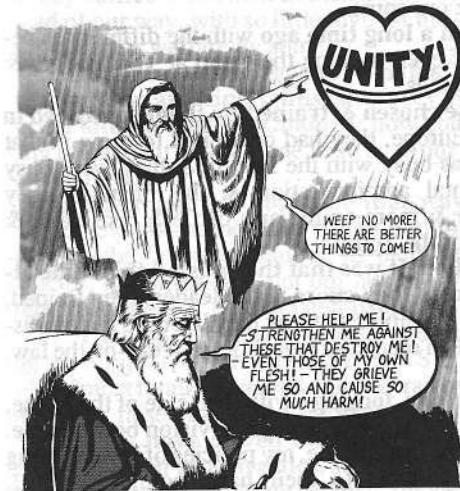
38. GBY! WLY! And thank you! We wouldn't ask you for it if we didn't need it, but we do need it & your missionaries need it desperately!

39. Will you help? Will you tithe? We believe you will, & God will bless you for it! We know, because we're doing it too!—And God is blessing! PTL! GBY & make you a blessing!

## THE DIVISION!

DO 716 6/78

—A Revelation about "The Coming Division", No.117A.



1. I was tracing back trying to figure out what went wrong, what caused the conditions which persisted before the RNR, this tremendous difference between my ways & Chain policies, the way the Chain was operating.

2. Instead of operating in love, with tender loving care for the sheep, which the administration of the Chain was supposed to be doing, it had become a bondage & a slavery with slave drivers & tyrants extorting more than was due from the poor people & laying on them burdens,

55

prohibitions & restrictions too heavy to bear.—Pr.11:24, Mat.23:4.

3. I was wondering how this kind of a difference could have ever possibly developed between me & the other officers. It came to me clearly that this was like the difference between the house of David & the house of Saul, the House of the Spirit & the house of the flesh, the house of love & the house of law.

4. The officers of the Chain had become too legalistic & too hard, unloving & merely extorting quotas & funds, & had missed the meaning of existence: To convey love to the people & to show love to the World.

5. This was the "Coming Division"! (Read "Coming Division!", Vol.1, No.117A.)—This was the other thing the Lord spoke to my heart just as clearly as anything!

6. This was the division that had grown between us & the Chain, because some of the Chain had become so unlike us & unlike our policies & our spirit.

7. It all had begun a long time ago with the differences between my policies of even running the camp at TSC & Jeth & Deborah's harder policies.

8. As they & those chosen & trained by them continued in leadership even in Europe, they had continued to grow in that direction. While I was busy with the Letters & they were busy with the governmental administration & the finances, they seemed to lean more & more on the arm of flesh, like Saul, & were less & less led of the Spirit.

9. The sad part about it was that they passed this same attitude on to the officers they chose & the leaders they trained, their attitudes & their examples, the way they lived, so materialistic, so fleshly, so hard on others, so legalistic, so letter-of-the law, so unloving.

10. This all began long, long ago with their side of the house, the house of Saul, & it was a real genuine division between me, my way of doing things, my attitude, my policies of love & being led of the Lord in contrast to their hard, cold, tyrannical, materialistic legalistic enforcement of the law, extortion etc.

11. The old church had forsaken the Lord, His Love, and His loving policies & had gotten to where she hardly even knew

Him anymore, didn't fellowship with Him, didn't go to bed with Him, didn't have sweet love & thrilling spiritual ecstasies with Him, & was out of fellowship with the Lord & out of tune & out of practice regarding His loving policies.

12. So it all followed along the same line, not only Jeth & Deb & the leaders they chose, but the leaders which followed them, including the top leadership that they trained, top VIPs & the leaders they chose.

13. All fell into this same spirit of hardness, dictatorialness, a lofty, exalted feeling of being a certain clique of top echelon leadership who were superior to the peasants below, & that trained their leaders along this same line & imparted to them the same spirit, the same policies, the same attitudes.

14. But we had placed the government & the material welfare & finances of the Kingdom into the hands of these others & they carried it out then in their own way, in that hard way instead of our way, with so little love for the sheep, & so little concern for their welfare by some.

15. So as Maria & I began to read this "Division" prophecy, we saw how amazingly this prophecy & prediction fits the recent situation of the Chain, & how completely & almost totally divorced it had become from us & our policies & the way of love & the Lord!

16. The Family is not to be that way in any way ! Even Mother Eve & Stephen had gotten into that separatist, divisive spirit of the house of Saul & its hard, legalistic, materialistic policies, led of the law, not our law but what they thought was right, regardless of our declared Family policies in the Letters!

17. They interpreted the Letters to suit themselves, wresting the Scriptures, until Mother Eve & Stephen themselves seem to be almost totally deceived & led astray by the Enemy into false doctrines, false prophecies & extreme disobedience!

18. They have driven many people away & lost them as friends by their foolish antics, some of them sexual indiscretions to say the least, particularly some of Stephen's wild sexual forays on other people's wives without the consent of the people's mates, without agreement & unity, & insisting that they share, or even take away wives of others or their mates!

19. So Eve & Steve & some have gone far, far astray. They've created much confusion & division & caused many of our own disciples & our own Family to wonder what in the World is going on & who's right & who's wrong & what in the World is the matter?

20. "Why are things in such a state of confusion & disagreement? What Dad's spirit seems to be in the Letters is so different from what the leaders say & their spirit!"—The leaders both within the Chain & followers of Jethro & Deborah & others they have trained, as well as those without the Chain, like Mother & Stephen & their particular little division.

21. So it all began to take shape, & the picture began to become clearer as I obeyed the Lord & began to read this seven-year-old prophecy & to see how this terrific division between me & the leadership had already come to pass, that this was the "Coming Division" spoken of in this prophecy.

22. There had already come a great division between me & the leadership, me & the Chain, me & its policies & conduct, spirit & attitude, sometimes totally contradictory to the Letters & even to my orders!

23. They declared policies that I never approved of & passed them on as though they came from me—literally deceiving the people into thinking they were getting these things from me & that this was the way I was!

24. This was that of which the Lord had spoken—this terrific division between me & the Chain, between me & the leadership & its policies & its spirit.

25. It was not something yet to come & to fear for the future, but something that had already happened & had been in process for years! But it particularly had full sway after I left London in 1974 and left the direct supervision of the governmental and financial administration in the hands of Jethro & Deborah & others.

26. We went to Tenerife & were gone exactly 3-1/2 years, the 3-1/2 years predicted by one of our prophets 7 years ago, that the division would last 3-1/2 years! This is exactly the length of time from the very day that I left London to the day that I returned to move into the same house with top leadership near Madrid &

began to re-take the reins of government & administration—almost exactly 3-1/2 years to the day!

27. So that's the story, the "Division" prophecy, & you can read it for yourself!—It's all right there! There's no need for me to take time in this Letter to go over it in detail. But it begins in Paragraph number 11, which is actually the first paragraph of this particular division prophecy.

28. The following are comments to go along with this Letter, "Coming Division", Number 117A, as you read it: (11:) "Even as Saul..." This is so true of some of those leaders, particularly those who began in the beginning.

29. They leaned more to their own understanding & forgot to acknowledge the Lord in all their ways, so they went astray.

30. Even though they did have talent & administrative ability & knack for raising money, I loved Him more & didn't follow my own understanding but His.

31. And with all this wayward leadership, it was bad enough with them, but at least there was some organisation then. But without them, since they had not trained their under-leaders nor followers to take responsibility when they were gone, things were left leaderless & in confusion!

32. But the Lord has pulled us through, PTL! "And many shall say, 'This was the Lord's doing, is it not marvellous in our eyes!'"—Mat.21:42. It certainly is, particularly my recent healing when I nearly died over it all! Thanks for praying!

33. "And others shall go back from following after thee any more because they are offended."—And that has happened with quite a few. (16:) "...For I have made thee according to My Will, & this one by thy side according to My pleasure."—Maria specifically, & you in general.

34. Well, we surely have been different from the natural expectations of Man! That's one thing that many of our people & leaders could not understand. They have just not even been able to understand our new & radical doctrines & methods, FFing & all, & some were offended.

35. God through His new, radical & shocking doctrines & policies through me has offended many of this Old Guard, the Old Bottle leadership & disciples, & many have departed from

us because of it, but most survived.

36. But nevertheless, it was God's way of sifting out those who wouldn't take it & those who were rebellious & disobedient. He sifted out the ones who would not agree & who would not follow & would not obey & who rebelled against me & these.

37. "I...Raise up another who will obey Me..." The New Bride, the New Church!—And that's you!—You who have believed & obeyed & remained faithful & loyal through it all! PTL! GBY! ILY!—And you've picked up the pieces & carried on, despite the losses, trials & tribulations & even some defeats & discouragements! Praise God!

38. This has "all worked together for good" (Rom.8:28) & drawn us closer together & to Him more than ever before!—As so many of your letters have told us! PTL! Thanks again & again! We love you! Keep keeping on for Him! We're winning! PG! Hallelujah! He never fails! Love never fails!—And you won't fail if you trust Him!—Amen?—Amen!

39. "Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, & that there be no divisions among you; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind & in the same judgement."—I Co.1:10.—According to His Word & the Letters!—Amen? PTL! GBY! ILY!

## THE POTATO!—On Child Discipline. DFO 718 6/78

1. Having to discipline Davidito last night nearly made me sick! It's so wonderful what a marvelous recovery he made so quickly though. That was really the Lord. I was really praying for him that he'd get the victory, and he came back so sweet and smiling and happy.

2. (Sara: It impressed other people there too because people in the Family have seen children being spanked plenty. I really believe that many people are too hard when it comes to spanking, because the difference is that they don't love the children up afterwards.

3. (Davidito's very particular about serving his own food. He will eat what he himself serves and what he chooses, but he

"BY MERCY AND TRUTH  
INIQUITY IS  
PURGED!"  
-PR.16:6



them up sufficiently afterwards.)

4. Also you have to help him save face afterwards in front of the Family. (Maria: Yes, when I used to be disciplined as a child, the worst thing was the embarrassment in front of others! I'd much rather go to my room and stay until I got over it. My eyes were red and I didn't want to see anyone, and then I'd start to cry again just thinking about how embarrassed I was in front of everyone.)

5. He's very determined, he's got very set ideas on what he wants and he's very stubborn and contrary about it, and if you don't do things the way he thinks they ought to be done when he wants them done, then he gets very angry.

6. I think he really feels like he should have some choice in what he eats, and he wanted a potato! Alf was reaching for it but it hadn't gotten there yet when his mother decided to put the beans on his plate.

7. Well, he hadn't asked for beans, he'd asked for a potato, and I think everything would have gone much better if they'd gotten the potato there first like he wanted it. Then he might have tolerated the beans. But he didn't see it no matter what they said.

wants to choose out how much he wants to eat and dish it out himself and everything. I don't think many people in the Family consider the kids' feelings and sensitivity to things, and love

They said they were giving it to him,

8. **But kids go more by what they see than what they hear**, by the action more than just the words, especially when upset! So he didn't see the potato coming, all he saw was the beans, and that made him really mad because he didn't get what he wanted.

9. **Instead of getting a potato he got some beans!** He was so mad he just pushed them off his plate! It was almost like an involuntary reaction. But just the same, he cannot be allowed to yield himself to those temper tantrums and just uncontrolled violence—that's about what it amounted to in a mild way.

10. **I felt that I just had to slap his mouth** because of the way he was acting so rebellious. I felt real bad to have to do it, but I thought it necessary that he learn he can't just always have his own way and can't do as he pleases and get away with little tantrums like that.

11. **But I think if you guys had been a little faster with the potato the whole scene might have been avoided.** He was in kind of a contrary mood for some reason when we were with him all this afternoon. I don't know, maybe we weren't paying enough attention to him or something.

12. **If you don't pay them enough attention, then they know one sure way of getting your attention.—Do something you don't like!** (Sara: But yet, they're begging for your attention, your love, so even if they get a spank, they feel that at least they got your attention. If we could avoid the scene from the beginning, by just giving them the love and attention they need, that is what they're after.)

13. **Yes, they don't like to be ignored**, especially in the little time we spend with them, and we were talking with you. Now that's another thing he seemed to particularly resent: He's particularly jealous of you and the time we spend talking to you—that's another thing that just occurred to me. He always does that when you're around. Yes, we were talking together & ignoring him.

14. **It seems like that one potato could have prevented the whole thing!** You've got to remember how a child thinks. He concentrates on one thing and that's what he's got on his mind.

15. (Sara: **The people in the Family go exactly by the past**

letter of the law and what's been drilled into them under Deb's Childcare methods. So then the kids get whacked immediately, rather than even warned or reasoned with, and it's not stressed to love them up afterwards.

16. **(Whereas I know with Davidito, we respect him and his gifts in the Lord, and besides that, we treat him as a person and try to understand his way of thinking, so we try to reason with him and warn him and love him into obeying.)**

17. **(But last night was a good example of how he really needed a punishment for outright defiance!** He was warned, he was given opportunity to change, and he knew it was coming. But after he got it, he repented, which showed the "peaceable fruits of righteousness."—Heb.12:11.

18. **(From past experience he knew you would love him up afterwards if he repented.** He knew that we were doing it in love.) PTL! The love & mercy bore good fruit.

19. **It just almost makes me cry thinking about how he was so broken-hearted!**—Everything went wrong! It wasn't the way he had planned it at all. I didn't realise about the potato, so I can see the whole thing now: He had that all figured out how he was going to show us how good he was with a potato. I was so relieved when he got the victory so quickly and easily, so relieved to see him come back! He didn't want to be excommunicated. He didn't want to be exiled from the table to the bedroom.

20. (Sara: **I hope other parents reason out and pray about why it happens and how they can avoid it, you know.** Respecting the child is a big part of it.) Putting those beans on his plate without his consent was really interfering with his program and insulting his right of choice. He didn't want anything to do with them. Nevertheless, it was very naughty to shove them off on the tablecloth, and he knew it.

21. **That just shows that if the child is brought up the right way with a lot of love, you can reason with him more and he doesn't need so much physical castigation.**

22. **Davidito's so sensitive and so thoughtful, and usually so good.** He is entirely a whole different case from my first four kids, who were such high-powered personalities that we really had to be on their cases. He never did need a lot of corporal

punishment. Some kids just don't respond to anything but a little physical discipline.

23. (Maria: Each child's discipline must be tailored for his particular needs, his individual personality.) Yes, a lot depends on the child and what really gets through to him. It just seems like nothing gets through to some kids except a good swat, and that's what it takes.

24. Mother Eve's tactics were nearly always evasive, to kind of work around the edges of the subject, don't hit it head on. Distract their attention, get their mind on something else, which in some ways is sometimes a very good tactic, but you're not solving the problem. You're letting the child get away with something, just to keep him from getting upset.

25. If you just say, "Now here, you play with this instead", when the kids are fighting over a toy, that's not really teaching them anything. That's almost teaching them that crime pays! "If I fight over this one, then maybe Mother will give me another one", see? But that was often Eve's tactic.

26. If it's not so serious, you can try to distract them and get their attention elsewhere, get their mind on something else. It often worked pretty well and sort of helped keep peace a lot of times. But on the other hand, sometimes I felt like it was letting them get away with something and not really hitting the problem head on and not really solving the thing.

27. That might avoid trouble for the moment, but what about the future? Maybe you're not really teaching the child some of the things which he needs to learn in the way of discipline and what he should and shouldn't do. (Maria: Especially when he gets old enough to reason, like Davidito.

28. (With Davidito you can sit down and talk to him about it instead of distracting him. You can sit down and show him the spiritual principles and the reason why he's being bad, and help him be able to stop.)

29. (Sara: In a way, it sort of releases his frustrations for him to see that you understand.—Like when he was a year old and used to get so mad over his cracker. You would hand him a little cracker and he would just cherish it and put it in his mouth, but then when he'd bite it, it would break into two or three pieces

and he'd just explode and throw it on the floor broken-hearted!

30. (I was shocked and I learned so much from one little sample when Maria offered him a cracker and I thought, "Oh no, Lord, please don't let it break!" But he put it in his mouth and it broke and he screamed and cried! But Maria just squatted down beside him and said,

31. ("Well, Honey, why are you crying? Did that make you angry that your cracker broke?"—And he stopped crying, like, "Oh, she understands! She understood exactly why I cried!" Then she said, "Why don't we share the next one", and she took half and he took half. It was already broken, so he was completely content, no problem, everything was taken care of! I thought, "Why didn't I think of that?"

32. (It's like understanding him and sympathising with him so as to avoid that kind of a crisis, helping him.—And you know, he didn't seem to ever make a big scene over crackers breaking any more!)

33. It's funny how certain things are so important to him. We aren't able to spend much time with him, so apparently he really had his heart set on that potato and he was going to show off for us. He was so proud of what he could do with a potato, but we just messed up his whole program, ruined his whole show and embarrassed him before everybody, and he was just heart-broken!

34. (Maria: You show so much love for him! Many adults have a double standard, a more strict one for their children than they do for themselves! They don't sit there for hours until they finish their meal if they don't like it. They leave something if they feel like they're too full or they don't have an appetite.

35. (There are so many sides to discipline, it's a many-faceted subject. You can't always just lay down specific or even general rules for every situation and every child.) Well, frankly, I think almost every child is a separate individual case and you can't make any set rules for everybody in every situation.

36. A lot depends on the child: He was so much like Davidito! He was eager to cooperate, eager to obey, he was never destructive nor really terribly disobedient nor stubborn. If anything, he just went overboard trying to please, and was nearly al-

ways happy and smiling. But he was very sensitive to discipline.—All you had to do was look at him or point your finger at him and he'd stop.

37. All he needed to know was that he was not on the right track or you were displeased, because the last thing in the World that he wanted to do was to displease you and not have you love him, because he really needed a lot of love and affection.—A lot like Davidito. Some children are like that.

38. Other children it doesn't seem to matter what you do! You could beat them over the head, but nothing seems to impress them!—It's pitiful! But be careful: Too much harsh discipline and violence and corporal punishment is not good for a child!

39. (Sara: It's just like you reap what you sow with a child. But if anything, the parents seem to need some kind of encouragement that they should try through prayer and patience to fully understand the child's situation and respect him in such a way as to help him through his trials in the same way you would one another, knowing that spankings are certainly Scriptural and certainly needed in many situations.

40. (But on the other hand, put yourself in the child's place and you might have a better understanding of his problem.) (Maria: And think about how the Lord deals with us, too. He doesn't spank us every day and every time we turn around over every little mistake we make. He reasons with us and keeps on having mercy after mercy after mercy and warning us all the time before He finally lowers the rod. He's not giving us spankings every day.)

41. The Lord doesn't give us a spanking every time we go astray. He usually loves us up and loves us back into the fold or the Will of God, or He shames us sometimes. (Sara: Right! Love is so convicting! Because if you have Jesus, you try to get back on the right path and you try to show good fruits of repentance like Davidito did last night.)

42. Violence is only a totally last resort when all else has failed. (Maria: I think this is such a good verse I was just reading last night: "By mercy and truth iniquity is purged".—Pr.16:6.

43. (That's a good guideline for discipline, mercy and truth,

like love and reasoning and the facts.)—Especially with a child like Davidito, who's a thinker and really analyses things and really judges a situation—and judges you and thinks about how things ought to be, how he thinks they ought to be.

44. He has a very strong sense of right and wrong and how he thinks things ought to be and what he feels is right, and if you don't treat him the way he thinks is right, then he gets really upset!

45. (Sara: Because his requests are not unreasonable, usually, you know?—Like if you just suddenly stopped him from his busy work and said, "Okay, time for nap!"—and abruptly start yanking his clothes off and popping him into the bed without sort of building up to the subject, then he's going to resist.

46. (But I think I would too!—If Alf came to my typewriter and said, "Okay, time for lunch!", and just ripped me away from the typewriter and didn't give me five more minutes to finish up! What if I said, "Alf, wait a minute, Alf!", but he just turns around and swats me and snaps, "Don't talk back!"

47. (Now that's not the way we treat one another, but yet in a way this is the treatment we give the children.) (Maria: Yes, there's such a double standard!) It's sort of a lack of patience, really. We don't take time to really explain and talk and reason or love, we just quickly want them to "Do it right now and don't talk back!—Just because I said so!"

48. So really we need a lot more love and patience and prayer and reasoning with our children if we're going to really teach them why they must do so-and-so and help them understand why it's necessary.—Not always just say, "Do it!" and swat them if they don't.

49. "Train up a child in the way he should go."—Pr.22:16.—It takes time and patience and understanding and lots of real love to train a child, instead of just knocking him around and violently forcing him to do things he doesn't understand or thinks are not right or unfair.

50. You must love and try to show him why and try to get his willing cooperation through understanding and reasoning with him as the Lord does us. Then only after repeated warnings and repeated wilful defiant disobedience and an absolute refusal

to obey, are you justified in using loving force—as God does!

51. Even God's spankings are proof of His Love and done in love! "For whom the Lord loveth He chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom He receiveth!" Read it!—Hebrews 12:5-13.—It's a wonderfully encouraging Scripture!—That God's spankings are proofs He loves you!—And you must show your children this also, that it's for their own good and because you love them.

52. If you really love them and have won their love, they will know this because they love and trust you. They'll soon repent of their wrong-doing and look for your forgiveness and love again and want to do right and really try very hard to please—like Davidito did last night.

53. Because he knew I loved him and forgave him because he was so sorry—that was so evident he didn't even have to say it! PTL! "Love never fails!"—Try it! You'll love it!—And so will your children! GBY! WL Y! God is Love!—And love conquers all! "The greatest of these is love!" (1Cor.13.—Read it!)—Amen?

---

**PRAYER OF A GOOD SHEPHERD!** DFO 813 12/78  
(At an Emergency Meeting After Receiving "The Nebuchadnezzar Revelation":)

1. Amen, Lord, we just ask Thee to have Thy way. Thy Will be done. You know what's best, Lord, in Jesus' Name. We know we're nothing, Lord, we don't have anything & without Thee we are nothing, only nothing. As You said, "Without Me ye are nothing."—Jn.15:5. And we certainly are nothing, Lord, all of us, every one of us, without You.

2. So we just ask You, Lord, to lead us & guide us, & open our hearts & our minds to Thy Truth, & help us to understand it, Lord, & to follow it. Thy Will be done. We have a problem facing us, Lord. We have a decision to make & we prefer to be together in prayer before Thee, to be united in heart & mind, of one spirit, & to feel that we are definitely doing Thy Will, to know that we're in the center of Thy Will.



3. Just give us the wisdom we need, Lord, to be as wise as serpents, & yet harmless as doves. In Jesus' Name we ask for Thy glory, have Thy way.

4. May we feel Thy Spirit & Thy Love & Thy simplicity,

Lord, & Thy humility—the realities, Lord, not the deceitfulness of riches, but the realities of Love & the Truth.

5. May Thy daughter be a shining example, & her workers, of the real values, Lord, of life, of the kindness & the humility & the love & the deep spirituality, Lord, that is needed now to contend with the forces of the Enemy who have entered into some.

6. You said when the Enemy comes in like a flood, the Spirit of God will raise a standard against him—Isa.59:19. But also, You said that we should do our part. You said, "Resist the Enemy & he shall flee from thee"—Jam.4:7. We can't just be passive & expect You to do it all—we have to resist & be good fighters, Lord, to resist the Enemy, & to rely on Thy Word & Thy Truth & Thy Love, to know that we are going to be the victors, come what may.

7. Thou art going to win this war, Lord.—Perhaps not every single battle. Sometimes, Lord, we even learn by our defeats, very needed lessons. We learn also by our mistakes, very needed lessons, in order to teach others not to make the same mistakes,

not to enter into the same frays, to incur the same defeats, but to stay in the narrow path of Thy Will, very close, in tune with Thy Spirit, to know we're where we belong, & that we love You, Jesus, & that we are what we're supposed to be, as nothing as we are.

**8. Forgive those who think they have more** & could perhaps even do without us or Thee, & who think they are something, against which Thy Word warns: That we should never think too highly of ourselves, & to beware lest he that thinketh that he standeth should fall, & that pride comes definitely before a fall.—Rom.12:3; 1Cor.10:12; Pro.16:18.

**9. In Jesus' Name, help us never to be lifted up** or to be novices in pride & fall under the condemnation of the Enemy. Help none of us to be guilty, Lord, to think that we are anything. As Thy Word warns us, those who think they are anything or something, they're really nothing, even worse than nothing.—1Cor.8:2; Luke 8:18.

**10. When they think they're something**, then they think they're something sometimes without You, which is worse than nothing. We're all nothing, Lord, but at least we have You, Jesus. But nothing without You is really nothing, a very very big dangerous hole, a deep pit, into which even others might fall.

**11. O God, keep us filled with You**, Jesus, so that we shall not go astray, Lord, & we shall not be a pit that others shall stumble into.

**12. We're here to wait upon You**, to hear Your answers to know what we should do to preserve Thy Kingdom, to jealously guard Thy sheep as good shepherds, who are even willing to lay down our lives for our sheep.—Jn.10:11.

**13. You've commissioned us, Lord.** This is the greatest job we have to do—to feed Thy sheep, & to go into all the World & preach the Gospel to every creature, & we've done the best we know how to try to do this & encourage others to do it through Thy Word.

**14. We thank Thee for how mightily Thou hast blessed us**—from nothing to still nothing, Lord, but You have rallied many others together with us to follow & even precede us into many

fields which we have never even entered ourselves. They have gone before us & gone beyond us & even, Lord, as You have said of Your Own disciples, "Greater works than these shall ye do because I go to My Father."—Jn.14:12.

**15. Lord, our own disciples are doing greater works** out there in the field today than we have ever done—mighty works & miracles & salvations & great sacrifice, strong fighting, Lord. Many have suffered things which we have never suffered. And so we know their crown is going to be great, for the first indeed shall be last, & the last will be first.—Mt.20:16.

**16. So we thank You, Lord, for the little ones** that are out there fighting the battle at the very battlefield, facing the enemies. Help us, O God (weeps), to not forget to pray for them & keep them in mind, Lord, that they are the ones that are really fighting the battle.

**17. They are why we're here, Lord**, to oversee & to care for them, to make sure that they're properly fed & guarded & cared for the best we can, Lord, by Thy Word & by prayer. We can't be there, Lord. We can't support them there, Lord. We have nothing, we cannot guard them from everything, Lord, or protect them. But You can, through prayer & Thy Spirit & Thy Angels, Lord, watching over them.

**18. But help us to never forget to pray for them**, Lord, that they are why we're here, & that's our only excuse for living & our only excuse for existence. Our only reason, Lord, for being useful to Thee in any way, is for their sake. So we ask Thee to help us to remember that & never forget it, Lord, & to care for them as we should.

**19. We have been angry with under-shepherds & with hirelings**, Lord, who cared nothing for the sheep, who made the sheep lay down their lives for them, rather than laying down their lives for the sheep. Help us, Lord. We've tried to get rid of these hirelings, those hirelings that existed before.

**20. We thank You, Lord, for those who were good shepherds** and faithful and cared for the sheep and laid down their lives daily for the sheep, Lord. Bless them and keep them and continue to make them a blessing, Lord. We know that You

will raise up shepherds after Thine Own heart to care for Thy sheep, Lord, wherever they may be, and a man's talents shall make room for him, and if they're worthy of being a good shepherd, Lord, then they will be & You'll make them so, & the sheep will follow them because they know Thy voice.—Pro.18:16; Jn.10:4.

**21. Help us to be the same, all of us, Lord, good shepherds** of Thy sheep, good stewards of Thy Kingdom, Lord, whom You can trust with the task of feeding them most of all & caring for them, Lord, as well, guarding them from the wolves & the Devil who goeth about as a roaring lion seeking whom he may devour, & who stands day & night accusing Thy saints & trying to divide, trying to subvert & propagandising & lying & causing doubts & fears.—1Pet.5:8; Rev.12:10.

**22. But we know, Lord, that Thy sheep, as Thou hast promised, know Thy voice & they will follow Thee, & a stranger they will not follow—Jn.10:4,5,27.** Hallelujah! Thank You Lord for that. So we fear not, Lord. We know these that are really Thine will know the Truth & know Thee & know Thy voice & they will follow Thee, Jesus.

**23. My Lord, my God, how patient You are, how loving,** how tender, how kind You are even to these rebellious stubborn bull-headed goat-like sheep, the Aries with the great horns & the great pride & the stubbornness. Lord, there came a time when you broke horns like that & You humbled them, Lord, & stamped them under foot.

**24. Thank Thee for Thy chastening rod** which we have all felt if we're sons. "Whom the Lord loveth He chasteneth & scourgeth every son whom He receiveth"—Heb.12:6. Thank You Lord! It's such a compliment to know that we're Thy sons, because we all feel Thy chastening rod when we get out of line or make mistakes or wander astray.

**25. Give us love today, Lord,** "Above all things have fervent love one toward another."—1Pet.4:8. Let us not condemn in pride, let us not be as the Scribes & the Pharisees: "I thank Thee, O God, that I am not as this man", the publican, the sinner. If we're lifted up in pride & glad we're not like the sinner, Lord,

then we're even worse. We're self-righteous & hypocritical. Help us, Lord, to know that except by Thy grace we wouldn't be here, we would be just like them & worse, except by Thy Love & Thy mercy & Thy grace.—Luk.18:11.

**26. Help us to also have love & mercy & grace, long-suffering,** Lord. And let us continue to do whatever You want us to do. Thy Will be done.

**27. We know perhaps you brought these together, Lord,** to teach them a lesson & again to teach them to seek Thy face earnestly & Thy Will & Thy voice, to stay close to You lest it happen to them, & also to know how to deal with a brother or sister who has strayed away, how to deal with them in love, how to chasten, how to try to get back on the path of the flock.

**28. Just teach us, Lord, to be like You, Jesus**—humble & sweet & loving & patient & long-suffering. Praise You Lord! Thank You Jesus! We are nothing, Lord, but Thou art everything, & if ever we get in the way, Lord,

**29. We'd rather you'd remove us than let us remain & be a stumbling block to others.** Help us, Lord, in Jesus' Name! Thank You Lord!

**30. Help us not to worry, Lord,** because we trust You, Lord, & we keep our minds stayed on Thee, & Thou keepest us in perfect peace, because we know You're going to handle the situation & You know what's best to do, & we know that You're in control, Lord.—Isa.26:3.

**31. We just ask Thee to help us to follow Thee & to know** what You want us to do in order to cooperate with You as Your undershepherds, to follow You, our great Shepherd, in Thy path, the way You would lead, & how You would have us correct this pitiful poor little sheep that has been acting more like a goat lately. Help, Lord, in Jesus' Name. In Jesus' Name, give us love. Whatsoever we do or say today, Lord, do help us to do all to the glory of God—in Jesus' Name.

## THE SECRET!



**And love is an emotion.**) And love is an emotion, something which causes you to move out into something good—love—an emotion. So I don't like people that are ruled by their cold calculating cruel minds. DB2 343 19 25 Rom 12:9 Phil 2:2

**3. I like people who are ruled by emotions**, like me. I'm ruled by emotion, desire, sex, affection, sympathy & love. That's me. Isn't that me? (Maria: Yes, it definitely is! That's the greatest thing.) 1 Pet 1:22/GT 1233:139/1237:3/PB2,573:13/4/Jer 5:

**4. I don't like these cold calculating mentalists.** Mentalists are mental-less. I want emotion, I want emotion! (Maria: So being sexy really is good because it's being emotional.) It's being honest. (Maria: But some people just aren't that way.) M21 112

**5. Not to be sexy is not natural.** God made us to be sexy, He made us to be emotional, He made us to be loving & kind, emotional. We're creatures of emotion, love, desire. The Devil is Satanically intellectual, he is a god of knowledge. 1 Thes 2:8/GT 14:

**6. Intellectuality brings pride.** Knowledge brings pride. Love DB 8 600:43/MOP 18:14,16,34:74 MOP 78:22 12:11 DB1,451 2:4/Rom 1:31,32/GT 1258:106/DB2 165:12

DO 845 4/78

**1. (Maria: What were you saying about love?)** I said God is Love. Love is God & God is Love. He's always said that for a long time, the Bible says it: God is Love, Love is God. The greatest commandment is to love.—1Jn.4:8; Mat. 22:37-39. DB 212

**2. (Maria:**

& emotion is humiliating & humbling. Sex is humbling. Love is humiliating. All these other God-damned things are of the Devil—pride, intellectuality, knowledge, power—they're cold icicles!

**7. (Maria: Why then would the Lord have made whole groups of people under different sunsigns with those particularly strong traits?)** For balance. (Maria: Is it still of the Devil?) No, no. But the Devil rules & reigns more over certain signs than others. 1Cor 1:18B/DB 7

**8. (Maria: But you couldn't say the Devil rules & reigns more over Aquarians than some other signs?)** It depends on what Aquarian. Some Aquarians are cold, cruel, calculating, proud, fame-seeking Aquarians. In every sign there is a good side & a bad side, a positive side & a negative side. In every single sign there's good & evil. And it all depends on which side you choose, whether you choose to be good or be evil.

**9. Your sign is either positive or negative.** You can choose the positives or the negatives, the good or the evil. You can choose the good & eschew the evil.—1Pet.3:11. That's what God has left up to your choice, and that's the evil the Devil brought into the Garden, the choice of the knowledge of evil.

**10. You can take your pick.** You can either live up to your good side of the positive things of your sign, or you can live up to the bad side, the negative things of your sign. You know that. (Maria: But now it becomes a decision as to what is good & what is bad.) Yes, that's what we're here for.

**11. You're here to make the choice**, you're here to make the decision, whether you will choose the good & eschew the evil, or choose the evil & eschew the good. (Maria: But sometimes it's difficult finding which is the good & knowing which is the evil.) No, no, never, never! It's never difficult.

**12. The decision is so clear cut you can never ever ever have any problem finding the difference.** (Maria: I think some might say that it's difficult.) Only the problem cases, only the problem cases who are hanging in the balance, who have a lot of pride & a lot of selfishness,

**13. Only they have any problem finding the difference.** (Maria: Even I wondered, well, am I attacking Timothy too much with sex? He can do without it, so,

**14. (Why should I impose a lot of sex on him?)**—To humble him. To humble him down to Earth & show him he needs it whether he likes it or not.

**15. (Maria: So his intellectuality gets in his way, huh? His mind gets in his way?)** Oh, his carnal mind, his carnal intellectuality, so stupid & ridiculous & idiotic, it makes me sick! The spirit is so much more beautiful. (Maria: Do you think by the time Timothy's wife & his lover get here he will be free of them?)

**16. He will be so bound to you,** he's not going to be totally free, he's going to have a battle. But that's what they must know, he loves you the most. He knows you love him the most.

**17. He's got to love you more than them,** or he's not fit for the kingdom. He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me. He that loveth anyone else more than me is not worthy of me. Don't you understand? He that loveth wife or sweetheart more than me, meaning you in this case, is not worthy of me. Do you understand?

**18. He cannot have anybody else taking priority over his Queen.** He cannot have anybody else that he would rather have than you.

**19. If he's not totally captivated by you, I can't use him.** If he wouldn't rather have you than his wife or his lover or Rachel or anyone else, if he doesn't know that by then, just forget it.

**20. If he doesn't love you the most, it's treason!** If he loves his wife or his sweetheart more than you, that's disloyalty, don't you understand? (Maria: But it has to be the Lord that gives the love.) Of course! The Lord's trying to give the love. (Maria: So he's just got to be yielded to it?) Of course, he's got to receive it.

**21. My God, you are God's Love!** You're giving it to him. You're giving him God's Love. I mean, he's got to either receive it or reject it. Thank God, so far he's received it. But he's got to love it more than theirs, or it is treason. We cannot have a man who loves anything or anyone else more than you, me, & the Lord.

**22. Because you & I are like the Lord to him.** Do you understand? To love anyone more than you, therefore, is treason.—And idolatry. Understand? (Maria: Yes.)

**23. He cannot have you without me.** (Maria: Amen, that's

for sure!) And he cannot have us without God. And he cannot have God without us. And he cannot have those ridiculous little foppy muppets of his past, those other women. He cannot have them above you.

**24. To have them above you is to have them above me.** And he'd better learn real fast where his priorities are! Do you understand? If he can be satisfied with less than the best, let him have it. In that case, God has someone else, someone who would rather have you & me than anyone else in this whole World. If he's not going to put you & me & the Lord first, if he's going to put his wife or his illegitimate sweetheart first, then let him go.

**25. They're all flesh, too fleshly & too self-righteous!** (Maria: What is self-righteous?) His own righteousness. (Maria: How is his self-righteousness manifested?) Self-righteousness is of the flesh & the Devil & exalts itself above God, above God Himself & above love & above all things.

**26. And this is the greatest of all sins.** This is the worst of all wickedness, the most damnable of all despicableness! (Maria: But how does it manifest itself in Timothy?)—In self-righteousness.

**27. (Maria: I mean, how is his self-righteousness manifested?)** In any any any attraction to the loves of the past! His allegiance must be totally unto thee, & you must be his supreme love. (Maria: Why would that be self-righteousness, to love the loves of the past?)

**28. Because it's defiance against the Will of God!** (Maria: Ah, & that's self-righteousness?) Of course! To put your righteousness above the righteousness of God is the ultimate sin! To put your will above the Will of God is the ultimate sin!

**29. To say that you know better than God,** that you would prefer your wife or your lover above your Queen, the anointed of God—you—is the ultimate in wickedness, the ultimate in self-righteousness, the ultimate in horror, horror, absolute horror!

**30. He has to make you his first love above all other loves.** He must love you the most, more than Rachel & more than his wife, more than everybody. He has to love you. That's very important, that he must love you above all other women. That's the secret!

## SERGEANT YORK!

DO 849 4/78



1. The question of absolute obedience to authority has always been a problem. The Chain really overdid it, but there must still be some obedience, even if it's only to the Lord, me & the Letters!

2. God's Word teaches it! This is something which in the months that I spent in the Army, especially in the hospital, was one of the greatest problems in the military at that time, during WWII, with all these boys who didn't really want to kill, but who knew they were being trained to kill. And so many of them, scores of them, came to me for answers.

3. "Would you please help us? Will you please answer these questions? We're scared, we're worried, we want to know what to do!" And at first I hardly knew how to answer their questions. I said, "All I know is that

4. "It says, 'Thou shalt not kill.' But in the same code of laws for 27 different offenses it says 'Thou shalt kill'!"—Exodus 20-23. I tried to do something to encourage the poor guys, because some of them were about to fall apart over it.

5. So I'd tell them the story about the famous Sergeant

York of WWI. During the First World War they didn't have any allowance for Conscientious Objectors at all, & he was a C.O., refusing to kill people because of his convictions against it. He was a real Christian. He was a crack-shot with a rifle too, came from the Kentucky Mountains & loved to go hunting, so they wanted him in the Army. Finally they drafted him & sent him to France.

6. He was out in a trench one day & somehow or another the Germans had circled them & gotten around behind them, & there were several German machine gun nests. They had surrounded them & were just mowing down the American boys with the machine guns virtually by the hundreds!

7. He prayed about it & got the answer: "Sometimes you have to take life in order to save life". So he attacked the Germans & he came marching out of the fog with 600 German captives single-handed!

8. So I'd tell the guys the story of Sergeant York. I said, "You know, sometimes it's necessary to kill people to save lives; take lives to save lives." I said, "After all,

9. "The Bible says that's why the officer of the law carries a sword or gun: He doesn't carry it in vain—he intends to shoot somebody & maybe even kill them if necessary to stop them from committing crimes!" So I said, "Maybe that's what you're doing". Because some of them were really worried about it. I told them that sometimes in order to save lives, they might have to take lives.

10. And this is the job of the police, this is the job of the Army. They need the encouragement of the knowledge of this. So I began to give this to the boys. I said, "Well, whatever you think about right & wrong, whether it's right or wrong, the thing is that God's Word says:

11. "You are to obey the power, those that have rule over you." (See Romans 13) I said, "Whether they're right or wrong, it's right for you to obey; & if it's wrong, it's not your fault, it's not your responsibility, it's theirs!" See? It was your duty & your job to obey, whether it was right or wrong.

12. I want to tell you, the Army is really a human, physical example of what God expects, that your first instantaneous reac-

tion should be to obey Him & your superior officers without question, without even thinking whether they're right or wrong, because,

13. **The right thing is to obey!** Do you understand? Really? TYL! (Toasts:) Here's to instant obedience to the Lord without hesitation!

14. **It takes faith to obey your officers.** You have to believe that they know what they're doing even if you don't understand, but you obey. I believe the Lord, in a sense, permitted or created or allowed the military to be a real example of what God expects of His Army: Total absolute unquestioning loyalty!—Total absolute unquestioning obedience & faithfulness, even if sometimes they're wrong!

15. **In a way I never particularly liked that saying**, "My Family! My Family!—Right or wrong, my Family!" One of our early leaders applied it to our Family. But when applied to God-ordained leadership, it's true!

16. **Now, what is the responsibility of the officer besides obedience?** I believe sometimes if the officer has a question or feels a doubt about executing the order, then it is his responsibility to voice it.

17. "Well now wait, what about so-&-so? Now I think maybe we should do so-&-so. Don't you think maybe so-&-so?"—It's a form of witnessing, of warning the wicked of his wicked way, if you think it's wrong.

18. **I think if you have the least question about an executive order, that you should mention it.** If you have any compunction about it, any doubt about it, if it just doesn't seem right to you, you ought to mention it, you should discuss it, until you come to complete integral agreement if possible.

19. **Now, some suggestions you make to me, I'm not too sure of**, but if you have strong convictions about it & leadership is wise, they will be willing to try & test it. I must be willing to say, "Well, I don't know, maybe you're right, maybe you're wrong. We'll see."

20. **I might even say**, "Well, I doubt it, but let's try it & see." The only way we're going to know is by putting it into effect & trying it. That's the acid test. If you desire to govern, you

must give the people what they need, amen? PTL? TYL!

21. **But on the other hand, if I've gotten something directly & specifically from the Lord on the matter**, it is my duty to obey that & not be dissuaded or stopped by others' doubts or questions. (Maria: So what is the responsibility of the officer who questions something?) It is only to question it & to mention it & to say it.

22. **But if this does not change the mind of your superior, then you have to carry it out whether you like it or believe it or not!** God says, "Obey them which have the rule over you in the Lord for they are responsible for your souls"—even if they're wrong!—Heb.13:17.

23. (Maria: **But if you are persuaded that your superior is wrong**, are you ever obligated to report to an even higher authority?) Well, if there is a higher authority to make an appeal to, yes, of course.—If there is a higher authority to whom you can appeal & bring your question & say, "I don't think this is right that they're telling me to do". If you can go to a higher authority, then that's different.

24. **However, you're usually risking your job**, you're laying your life on the line when you do that, because you know that if you question your superior officer & appeal to a higher authority, you know your own boss may fire you!

25. **Lord, Thou art able to solve all of these problems**, & all of these things are in Thy hands. (Prophecy:) "Thou dost not have to see nor understand all things, neither dost thou have to know the mind of thy father nor to understand all the Words of David, for all of these things which I have ordained are already in My hands & are finished." Hallelujah! TYJ! Amen, isn't that beautiful?

26. **You don't have to worry about anything, all you have to do is obey!** Just do what the Lord tells you to do & what I tell you to do, amen? In Jesus' Name. (Toasts:) To obedience!—Thank the Lord? "To obey is better than sacrifice, & to hearken than the fat of rams: For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, & stubbornness is as iniquity & idolatry." Amen? "To obey is better than sacrifice, & to hearken than the fat of rams!"—1Sam.15:22,23.

## EMERGENCY NOTICE!: "OWE NO MAN!"

—Part 2

DO 866 1/80



1. The Scripture is very clear on the subject!: "Owe no man anything, save (except) to love him", & "Provide all things honest toward them that are without" (outsiders)—Rom.12:17; 13:8. The only kind of borrowing we have ever condoned at all was a suggestion in a past Letter on "Deflation or Inflation" (No.327), in which we said that prices are not going to get any lower, they are going to go higher & higher as the inflation gets worse & worse, so buy now!

2. Therefore, if you're going to buy a vehicle or a TV or some appliance or accessory which is fairly expensive & beyond the range of your immediate cash, I suggested that it would be better for you to buy it on time payments, providing the down payment or initial payment is small enough that it's easily within your reach & the monthly payments are also small enough that you can be sure that you're able to faithfully meet them & not default on them!

3. Otherwise you're being literally dishonest & cheating your creditor & breaking your word & being a very poor testimony, ruining your credit & being a reproach & reflection on the Work of the Lord! Some have even asked if they should now borrow large sums of money to buy refuge property, even if they

have no capability of being able to pay it back: Since "The Crash is Here!", they think they won't have to pay it back!

4. This is a very dangerous thing to do, & very risky! Unless you are sure you have the ability now to handle the cash down payments & the time payments, the installments, I would certainly strongly advise against it & counsel you absolutely not to do it!

5. You could get yourself stuck with a heavy debt that's impossible for you to pay, & find yourself in a real mess & financial tangle that could cost you everything, & lose you not only the property but all of your possessions, as well as your good name & testimony—& possibly even lose your freedom & your happy Home!

6. It's wrong, dishonest & a sin to borrow money you know you can't pay back! It certainly is not love, not God's Love! So the old rule still applies: "Honesty is the best policy!" & "Owe no man anything save to love him!" "A good name is rather to be chosen than great riches, & loving favour rather than silver & gold!"—Pro.22:1.

7. We even heard that one person got a credit card & is running up huge bills for camping equipment that he's totally unable to pay for, because he thinks that all things are coming to an end immediately & he won't have to pay the bills! Let me tell you right now, with most credit cards you have to make sizeable monthly payments every month, & next month he is going to be in serious trouble if he doesn't have it!

8. Some countries will put you in jail for not paying your bills! It's cheating, lying, stealing, thievery, robbery, defrauding & very bad & very wicked to do such things & I'm totally against it!

9. So watch your step! I don't think you can yet get away with any foolhardy foolishness such as running up big bills that you can't pay! That's absolutely against the Scriptures, against God's Law of Love & against everything we ever taught you! Don't do it!—And God help you if you've already done it!—You are in trouble!

10. If you really need it, He's well able to supply it without your borrowing, stealing, cheating, defrauding or robbing others to get it! Pray for it, & if God doesn't supply, then it's not His Will! Ask the Lord, ask your family, your friends, your

fish, ask anybody you can to help you get it, & if it's God's Will & a genuine need that He knows will be good for you, He'll see that you get it & He'll supply it!

11. If He doesn't, then certainly He must know that it's not necessary & not good for you, & He doesn't want you to have it! So you'd be going absolutely against God & His Will to then go on in defiance of the Lord & borrow money to get it which you can't afford to repay, thereby literally intending to steal it & defraud the lender!

12. Borrowing without repaying is both illegal & a sin, & God certainly will not bless you for it, & more likely will punish you for it! Don't do it!—Don't borrow it! "Owe no man anything save to love him!"—That's God's Word, & you'd better believe it & obey it!—Amen?

13. GBY & help you!—And He will if you obey Him! "Trust & obey, for there's no other way to be happy in Jesus but to trust & obey!"—Amen?—Amen! PTL! GBAKY from borrowing!

## I DON'T KNOW!

DFO 985 2/78



three little words, "I don't know". That's different from the leaders of yesterday who thought they were supposed to know all the answers and were ashamed or embarrassed if they didn't give some answer.

2. If it's really such a big emergency & you can't solve the problem, you can say, "I don't know, I'll ask somebody. I'll pray about it", or "I'll think about it. We'll discuss it and maybe we

can think of something."

3. If it's supposed to be their decision, the first thing you ought to do is tell them, "I'm sorry, I don't know. You're there, you'll have to make that decision yourself. You'll have to ask the Lord and you'll have to get an answer from Him." That's the best answer you can give people.

4. You can always give them a little advice and counsel if you do know something about it. You can give them a few tips or hints or something that might be helpful. But the burden of the final decision, if it's a local-level matter or at a lower level, should be with them.

5. There are some people who don't like freedom to make their own decisions. They would rather have a dictator telling them everything to do.

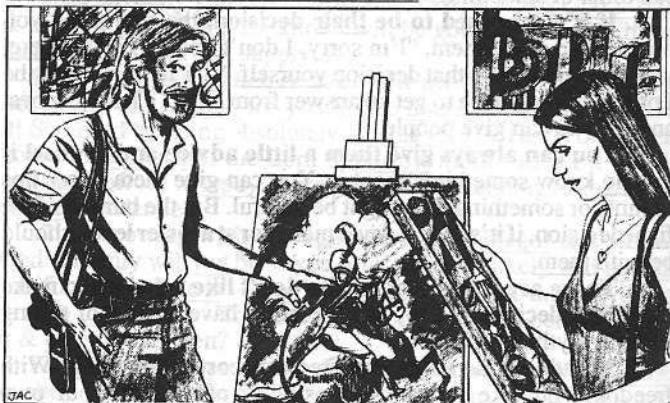
6. Freedom has its price! Freedom costs something. With freedom you take on the responsibility of making your own decisions and taking the consequences.

7. So, if you don't know, say so! Don't try to hide it and pussyfoot around and be ashamed and try to blunder along and mumble some kind of an answer, just say, "I don't know."

8. If you're the one who's supposed to know and find out, then say, "I don't know, but I'll try to find out." But if they're the ones that are supposed to know and it's their department on their level and they're supposed to find it out, just tell them, "Well, I'm sorry, you'll have to find it out and make the decision yourself."

9. My Lord, don't pretend you know how to do something just because you're supposed to know how or people expect you to know how. If they ask you questions and you think you ought to know the answers but you don't know, don't be ashamed to admit it, rather than give them some phoney answer. It's so much better to be honest, Beloved.

10. Put on your green shirt and let's start being honest and tell people when we don't know. Then we can all turn to the Lord and the Letters for the answer, and follow God!—Amen?



1. I can't remember my Mother ever teaching me one painter or composer! I know little or nothing about composers or artists. They're dead! It's the worship of Man. It's good to be a little familiar with some of that so you at least know what people are talking about when they're conversing with you, like what I've told the Family about Wagner.

2. It's good to know the difference between evil & Christian composers & their works & perhaps the general time in which they lived, as well as possibly their country of origin. Some of that music doesn't bear good fruit with me. That one tape I have is very beautiful but very sad, & it makes me very sad. You really have to judge it by the effect, the fruit. I think the light happy dance music has better fruit than that deep sad stuff that makes you lonesome & sad & almost want to end it all!

3. My Mother brought me up on the Bible! I'd rather see the kids familiar with Psalms & the Bible writers & characters. There is enough there to fill their heads without all that worldly knowledge & information. I never went for that stuff! It's sort of a status symbol that you know these works & art & artists & composers. It comes in handy if you are talking to the cultured rich, & I know a few names of some of them—even know a little about

ballet, dancing & constellations, nothing to do with God!

4. **Thank God for my Mother!** She'd had all that & been through it all & knew all of it, but she just threw it away as chaff. I can never remember her teaching me anything but the Bible & about the Lord & spiritual values & Bible characters & truths, & my Father the same. They never wasted any time teaching me about masterpieces of literature, art & music—nothing! I can never remember them teaching me anything about them, thank God!

5. **The rule of thumb was, if it didn't have anything to do with the Lord, just forget it!** There are a few things that our children should have just a passing interest in or a smattering of familiarity with. If they never heard of the Strauss Waltzes, for example, they would be a bit ignorant. If they never heard of Bach, Brahms & Beethoven, people would really chuckle at their ignorance!

6. **For the sake of their witness & influence** so as not to be categorised as complete imbeciles, they need to know a few of those names & whether they were a musician, writer or poet! But I think they'll get enough of that in formal school if they go. In some ways I was glad I went, because it at least showed me the difference.

7. **So it's good to know a little.** At least you've heard the name & you know the difference between Beethoven & Rembrandt, who was the musician & who was the artist. But otherwise it's a worship of Man to study & exalt these people, because some of them were not of the Lord. So unless you know the difference between those inspired by the Lord & those who were inspired by the Devil, you'd better watch out!

8. **Some wrote great Christian masterpieces,** & you need to teach your children that this is the result of those people knowing the Lord. And teach them the result of people knowing the Devil, like Wagner & his stuff. But as far as I'm concerned, unless it's of the Lord, it is dead works by dead workers!

9. **Modern education is the worship of Man & his accomplishments.**—You spend half of your time studying the great accomplishments of Man, the great masters, whether they are masters of art, music or literature—the worship of Man. I took

courses in music appreciation, art appreciation & English literature, but I think most of it went in one ear & out the other!

**10. The thing that fascinated me more than anything else in that field was not painting or art, but poetry**, because I could relate to that. It had a message & said something.—Of course, so does some music & some art, but most of it is the worship of Man.—And really, even as a young boy, a young man, it sort of sickened me. I thought it was sort of ridiculous & frivolous. It's a form of Man-worship, patting Man on the back. It's much more important to worship God & glorify His creations.

**11. Man's education is made up of all that kind of dead works & worship of dead workers**, dead masterpieces & the worship of dead masters. I prefer to study the living, like Bible characters & the Word, more than the study of men & the masters & their masterpieces. (Maria: Our kids have enough to learn!) The Bible is enough & the MO Letters are enough. I don't think you'll find anything after all these years in the MO Letters going into too much detail on the masters & the masterpieces.

**12. We must teach those who work very closely with us that their influence is important**, because people will imitate their example & believe it comes from us & take them as representatives of us! I think Timothy must have a Cancer streak somewhere; sometimes he reminds me a little of Jethro & his contrariness, & Jethro & his doubts! He's honest about some things but he's not always honest. (Maria: If I tell him something, I'm not an authority, so I have to get your imprimatur!) You are an authority, Honey! (Maria: I just have feelings.)

**13. You are an authority, definitely an authority in the Spirit!** You have woman's intuition, sixth sense, psychic sensitivity! You are an authority in the Spirit! Follow your impulse, Honey, because it's right! You're an authority in the Spirit! And if you don't feel like it's right, then it's not right. If you feel like it's right, then it's right, because you have the Spirit of God & His sensitivity.

**14. You are a shining example of what everybody ought to be like & what everybody is like in a way**, particularly if they're yielded to the Lord.

**15. All you need to know is the Lord, Honey!** It's wonder-

ful, it's really wonderful! "Except ye become as a little child", you're like a little child, Honey. You just love the Lord & follow the Lord even if you don't know what it's all about or where He's going, you just have faith & trust the Lord. That's wonderful! "Except ye be as a little child."—Mat.18:3.

**16. Little children don't know all about Mozart & Rembrandt & everybody else**, but they really couldn't care less! (Maria: That's what I thought when I looked at those copies of masterpieces, I thought, "My goodness, what's this? Why should he be so excited about this?") Dead works, dead works, dead works!

**17. Timothy is a very proud man & he needs a lot of humbling**. It's not easy for him to accept the fact that you, a little child, with your little child-like ways, are superior in the Spirit! But you're far superior in the Spirit! It's quite obvious he's a little bit lacking in understanding when it comes to things of the Spirit. For example, you sense in the Spirit whether a thing is right or wrong.

**18. He tries to reason it out in the flesh**, and his reasoning is sometimes quite fleshly & totally out of the Spirit, like this artist business, completely on the wrong track. Whereas you know, you just sense by your woman's sixth sense or intuition, that he's wrong, that he's on the wrong track. It shows you the advantage of the Spirit & how it's so much above the wisdom of the flesh.

**19. I've found that people like Rachel who have not had a lot of education & cultural background & are ignorant of all this cultural thing**, they like masterpieces & masters & artists & art & music & musicians & writers & literature & blah blah blah! If they're proud like Rachel, they're a little ashamed of their lack of knowledge & their ignorance, & they're prone to sort of appreciate that & worship it & admire somebody who knows more about it than they do, like Timothy for example.

**20. Whereas I wouldn't give a damn for all that knowledge of all that art & artists & music & musicians & masters & masterpieces & writers & literature & all the rest!** So what? To hell with it all, as far as I'm concerned! Even as a young Christian I could see the fruitlessness & futility of all that worship of

Man & his works, the dead & their dead works. So people need to see the difference between the works of the flesh & the works of the Spirit, Hallelujah! Praise You Lord! TYJ!

21. **If you can't see Jesus in it somehow, forget it!** My Mother was in love with Jesus, thank God, & she instilled that love in me. I was filled with the Spirit from my Mother's womb, & I looked with puzzlement & almost amazement at some of this foolishness of Man & ridiculousness, the worship of Man & his works. All his vanity, vanity & vexation of spirit (Ecc.1:14), ridiculous! If the Lord didn't do it, forget it!

22. **In some ways he's a spiritual baby**, but he's very precious & he's very priceless & he's very very important to the Lord's Work. But he needs to be trained & in some ways retrained & brainwashed & indoctrinated & conditioned, that nothing's important except the Lord & the works of the Spirit, & not the works of the flesh. Hallelujah! Thank You Lord!

23. (Maria: He gives the impression that he's more spiritual than he is, & I have to have the confidence that I'm his superior. It's hard to see, but I have to take it by faith.) Timothy has a lot of assurance, but you have too in the Spirit, Honey, because you are really really led of the Spirit! You are so Spirit-led, so inspired!

24. **It's such a natural thing with you to be completely utterly child-like & totally dependent on faith & trust & the Spirit**, that your mind does not control you. It's weak & child-like & lacking in any kind of natural confidence, the way you're totally dependent on the Spirit & inspiration, intuition, sixth sense, faith! That's why you're just perfect for me, because you're just a robot of the Lord, that's all.

25. **You just click on whenever the Lord turns your key** & you just do whatever God wants you to do—beautiful! But some people like Timothy are quite confident in some ways in their own ability & the wisdom God has given them, the faith that God has given them, & in some ways it's a sort of self-confidence. In some ways it's not a real reliance on the Lord & His Spirit & His leading.

26. **As I see Timothy in the Spirit, there's a strong element of self-confidence**, a strong element of self-will. There's a strong

element of the wisdom which is of the Earth, earthy.—Jam.3:15. Good, in a way, good. But a lot of it is natural reasoning, this is where it goes astray. Because a lot of God's reasoning is contrary to natural reasoning. He's very strong in his righteousness, he's very strong in his sense of right & wrong.

27. **He's very strongly opinionated in what his ideas are & what he should be or not**. And for some reason he's very very proud, because he's quite sure he's right. So it's hard for him to take it when he finds out that he's wrong. One of the most wonderful things that could happen is if he is willing to accept it when he finds out that he is wrong, regarding Rachel & a lot of other things. But you have to be strong in your own convictions, you have to be willing to stand up & buck against him!

28. (Maria: I said, "Lord, we don't know anything & we're so selfish & so proud & we just need You & Your guidance.") Amen! "Except ye become as a little child, ye shall in no wise enter the Kingdom."—Mt.18:3. Timothy really needs to be more & more of a little child. He's agreeable to those things when he sees them, he's willing, but it's not always easy because it destroys his own concepts. It's a little difficult, but I think in some ways he normally accepts it. (Tongues:) "The wisdom of this Earth is so earthly, the wisdom of Man is so carnal, the wisdom of God is so much wiser!"

29. **He has a strong character, Honey**; you have to have him submitting or he's no good. If you don't get him to submit to the Spirit, to your spirit, he'll be unusable.

30. **You are the Prophetess of God!** You are the oracle of the Lord, & he must submit & accept & receive it. His wisdom is totally carnal in the flesh & of the Earth & terribly biased & wrong. You have to give him wisdom of the Spirit so he can be made perfect in the flesh. So much of his wisdom is carnal & of the Earth, earthy. He needs to listen more & more to the Spirit of the Lord & not to the Enemy. (Maria: It doesn't seem like I have any wisdom in anything.)

31. **You're a genius, Honey, in the Spirit**, & you have much much more of the Spirit of God & the knowledge & the wisdom of God, because you've been so close to me.—Much more than Timothy. This is the problem & this is where you have to work;

because he worked under Rachel, he got so far astray & out of touch & she was not a good example.

32. **Oh Honey, they got so far away!** It's almost unbelievable how far away they got because they didn't stay close to me. Timothy didn't even know me, he's just beginning to know me. Rachel did not really have me like she should have, & reveal me to him like she should have. She went ahead in her own strength, her own spirit, her own wisdom, & she really cracked up & now she's in a terrible mess!

33. **But the Lord has sent us Timothy to try & straighten him out** & try to redeem him & transform him & make him a new creature. God has taken him away from Rachel, which is good for her & good for him & also good for us, & we need to retrain & reform him & make him a new vessel fit for the Master's use, amen?—2Tim.2:21.

34. **Don't worry, you are much more powerful in the Spirit than he is in the flesh.** He cannot overcome you, because you have the power of God's Spirit! In some ways he's very fleshly like Rachel & that's where her weakness was. She'd look to Timothy's flesh for her strength & wisdom, & he didn't have the power of the Spirit. In some ways he misled her, & she misled them all astray.

35. (Maria: **And you said "You're much more powerful..."**) In the Spirit, of course, above all their fleshly wisdom, & above all that counsel & all powers & principalities: "For we wrestle not against flesh & blood, but against powers & principalities & spiritual wickedness in spiritual places." —Eph.6:12.

36. **But you have the power of God that He has given you from me**, because of me, & because of your relationship with me, & because of the need that you have to carry on after me. Don't ever neglect it or ever despise it, don't ever minimise it, don't ever belittle it, amen? It's good to know that whatever you think is right is right, no matter what they say. (Maria: Even if I just feel it?) Yes, even if you just feel it, that's the most important part of all; if you feel it, no matter whether you understand or not. Your feeling of the Spirit is more important, don't you understand? ROM 8:6

37. **Your childlike feeling is more important than his educated sense of earthly wisdom.** Don't you understand that the most important thing is to stay close to Jesus? The most important thing is Jesus—to stay close to Him, let Him lead & guide you. We must not lean to our natural carnal mind & wisdom & understanding. Just throw open your mind & put it in neutral gear & let Him lead.

38. **Timothy needs to know that he cannot overcome you**, that your power & your magic is bigger than his magic, no matter what time of the night or morning.

39. **It's really important for you to have abject humility**, submit yourself to him in the physical that you might conquer him in the Spirit! You will be his mistress, do you understand? (Maria: Is that how I do it, subject myself to him in the physical?) Yes, to master him in the Spirit. Honey, I'm so happy if you'd go in there & conquer that strong proud man; I want you to go in there & conquer him & humble him!

40. **Honey, I love you so much, you're my life, my love, you're everything to me, Honey, except Jesus!**—And you're even partly Jesus to me because He made you for me & brought you to me. You're my guided missile. You're conquering Timothy for me so I can use him. You're humbling him, conquering him, breaking him & binding him to me so he can never never never get away, nobody could take him away, so he's tied to you forever! I want him, Honey.

41. **I'll be so happy because you're my guided missile.** Honey, you're conquering him for me! You understand me? Good girl! I'm going to shoot you now! In Jesus' Name, Lord, bless & keep her, strengthen her, give her absolutely irresistible magical powers of seduction & conquest in the name of Jesus, amen. Go, Sweet Baby, you're my guided missile! Oh Honey, I'm so proud of you! I have a rope tied to you, Honey, my line on you & you cannot get away, not at all. (Footnote:—And she didn't!—But our fish got away, sad to say! We got him out of Rachel's bunch, but could never get Rachel out of him!—But we got one thing out of him! Techi is ours forever! PTL! So it wasn't all in vain! TTL!—And Tim had his chance, God help him!)

## THE FELLOWSHIP REVOLUTION! DFO 1001 4/81



1. I really think that our Homes should get together in an area for at least a monthly Fellowship Day. Now we're having Fellowship Days weekly on Sunday within individual Homes, but I see the great need of a Monthly Fellowship Day of all of the Homes in an area who could possibly get together for that, who are close enough that it would be possible for them to come in for just one Sunday a month & meet together in some Home or banquet room or a rented hotel meeting-room or whatever would be sufficiently commodious & convenient.

2. Perhaps Area Fellowship Meetings would be a good name for them, because they would vary greatly in size. Some of the areas would be just one city of several Homes, others where the Homes are scarce & there might be only one Home in each city in an area, then the area would consist of several cities. Where there were several Homes in one city, the area would consist of just that one city.

3. We still feel there's a great need for more fellowship between the Homes, not only just in the Homes. Normally all of us have good fellowship within our Homes, especially the co-op Homes of two or more families, but some Homes are quite isolated & lonely & really hungry for fellowship. So I think really a once-a-month Sunday Fellowship Day for the Area, an Area Fellowship Day perhaps the first Sunday or Saturday of each month, would be a good choice.

4. A Local Fellowship Meeting would consist of the same

type of meeting as is held in the average Home on Fellowship Day: Prayer, fellowship, praise, singing, testimonies, videos, showing pictures of other Homes & of the various local ministries, their Homes in action, the kind of things we like to see on the videos.

5. It would also be a very good time for the individual Home heads to perhaps have separate meetings aside from their flocks, private meetings to discuss the major problems of individual & collective Homes & discuss needs & procedures & projects & plans of witnessing & how to take a new city or how to pioneer a new area, which will require joint cooperation & help & financing etc.

6. It would be a marvelous opportunity for the heads of the Homes to get together, the shepherds of the various Homes, husbands & wives, in this case without the children & without the helpers etc. Possibly if there are quite a large number of people it's easier to discuss things in sort of an Area Committee Meeting. You could call it the Area Action Committee or the Area Fellowship Committee—in other words, just the heads of the Homes, the husband & wife or individual heads of each Home to meet together in a sort of executive session with the local VSs, if there are some.

7. And if there is not a local VS, there's no reason on Earth why an area cannot elect at such a meeting their own Local Area Shepherd. I'm fully in accord & agreement, in fact even enthusiastic about this suggestion which has been coming in from various sources.

8. Some areas are very scattered & perhaps even once a month would be too much for individual Homes in scattered cities to make the journey to some geographical center centrally located between them all, to have a monthly Fellowship Meeting. Then they could at least have a Quarterly Fellowship Meeting, at least once every three months, perhaps the first Sunday of every calendar Quarter, of every three-month period of the year.

9. That way you could have'm the first Sunday of January, the first Sunday of the first quarter of the year, of January, February & March. Then the first Sunday of April, first Sunday of July, first Sunday of October etc., at least meeting together

once every three months to have a grand Area Fellowship. Even if they have to come from quite a distance it should not be too prohibitive if the meeting is held only once every three months for those Homes which are widely scattered & would have to, some of them, come hundreds of miles to have that fellowship.

10. I would suggest then at such a Fellowship Meeting, first of all the Executive Committee meet together. Executive means that they are an Action Committee who executes things & gets things done, & does things. It implies action.

11. And if you want to use a simpler word instead of executive, which is a little System-sounding & big & maybe not clearly understood even by the children, you could call it an Action Committee. In other words, they're not just supposed to be a bunch of dumb heads sitting around like bumps on a log wondering what to say & wondering what to do & they have nothing to say & no ideas & no action.

12. There should be at least one delegate from each Home who would attend this area-wide Action Committee Meeting & that would discuss problems & plans & various actions & witnessing projects, witnessing projects, printing projects for the Area, pioneering projects & helping-the-needy projects etc.

13. But the principal thing would be the General Area Fellowship Meeting for all Family members including the children, which could occur on this once-a-month or once-a-quarter first Sunday of the month or quarter, at which all could attend, everybody who could possibly get free & come—including couples, singles, helpers, children, whatever—with a good musical program, praise-the-Lord program, testimonies etc., & with a final real earnest prayer service for various needs & the problems & the Family around the World.

14. Then at some time during the day, whatever seems to be convenient, perhaps while the women are preparing the meal or during a recess of the general crowd, perhaps these Area Delegates could get together.

15. There should be at least one person selected by each Home to represent them in the Executive Action Committee meeting of the area, & therefore in the privacy of committee without all the distraction of all the other people & children, be

able to quietly discuss the various needs & problems, projects, plans, pioneering, printing & all of those things together with special prayer.

16. I think the cooperation of the Homes in each area that way will be a great boon & a great blessing & a great step forward, a great impetus to our local areas, some of which have lost heart & nearly lost faith & have just sort of gone into the doldrums, stagnated, & are seemingly almost as sheep without a shepherd with no particular direction or drive or leadership or objectives,

17. Just every man going to his own tent & every man doing as he sees right in his own eyes with virtually no organisation, no leadership, no cooperation, no fellowship, no general discussion of problems & projects, no consensus & agreement & voting for the area on what to do about this or that or the other. It's pitiful!

18. In unity there is strength, & this was one of the strengths of our early pioneering days, our cooperative Colonies in which we had a number of families living together & working together in one Home, one Colony. Some of them were too big, they were blobs & we had to break them up to try to get them scattered & go into all the World & preach the Gospel unto every creature, but sometimes a certain amount of blobism is necessary for cooperation & united action, & unity & strength in the power of the Spirit, in a get-together fellowship.

19. You'll notice on the Day of Pentecost there were quite a few people! It was quite a blob in that Upper Room, 120 men there, not counting all the women & the children!—Acts 1:13-15.

20. But they stayed there as Jesus had commanded them to: "But tarry ye at Jerusalem until ye be endued with power from on high", until ye be filled with the Holy Ghost.—Lk.24:49. He said, "And then ye shall be witnesses unto Me".—Not only in Judea & Samaria & in all the surrounding territory, but to all the World!—Acts 1:4,5,8.

21. And as a result of that one big area-wide fellowship meeting of all the disciples, they had a tremendous praise & prayer meeting & were terrificly in unity of mind & heart—one mind, one spirit, one soul & virtually one body! You can imagine how close they must have all had to sleep together on the floor,

they must have been wall-to-wall hippies for sure!

22. Until after ten days of obedience & in prayer & tarrying & waiting for the Holy Spirit to come & fill them all, there was that final tremendous explosion on the Day of Pentecost when they were all filled with the Holy Ghost & spake with other tongues & interpretation & prophecy & all the rest, & it was such an explosion that the whole city gathered together by the thousands to see what in the World was going on! 3,000 people got saved that day as a result of that tremendous spiritual explosion when Peter then got up!—Acts 2:1-14.

23. They got under conviction when they saw the power of God manifest in the unified, united, fellowshipped, gathered-together Church!—When they saw all these disciples together so endued with the power of the Holy Spirit that no man could deny that it was of God & all the people glorified God that this was a miracle.

24. The Lord is for scattering & preaching the Gospel in all the World to every creature, but He's also for fellowship, & there are times when you need to get together & not scatter. There are times when you need to unite & not just wander around listless & leaderless. There are times when you need to fellowship & share each other's problems & joys & victories & projects & plans & needs etc.

25. And we're going to suggest officially, here & now, that you do establish some kind of an Area Fellowship Meeting for each area, & set a certain day & time for that fellowship between Homes, not just in the individual Homes but between Homes. Wherever there are two or more Homes that could be gathered together in the Lord's name, do it!—Whether they be just in one neighbourhood or one city or one small area of a province or a whole province or a whole country, depending on the number of the Homes, the proximity of Homes & distances etc.

26. If there are two or three or more Homes in one city, they could even have a weekly fellowship meeting together & have every Sunday Fellowship together—perhaps alternate Homes, meet in a different Home each Sunday. But if this is not possible, have at least a once-a-month Fellowship Meeting, the first Sunday of every month of the local Homes of a city or a local

area.

27. And if the Homes are too scattered & not that numerous, then they could come in from outlying areas & provinces at least once-a-quarter for a first Sunday of the quarter Area Fellowship Meeting. Or perhaps you could even have both.

28. If you can't have it every Sunday for the Homes of one city in an area, have a monthly first-of-the-month Sunday fellowship meeting of all the Homes of that city or local area, plus a quarterly Fellowship Meeting of all the Homes of the whole province or the whole country to which people could come from hundreds of miles away if necessary, to have a quarterly Family Fellowship Meeting of the whole area.

29. Where the Homes are numerous you could have both, in local cities a number of Homes could have a Monthly Fellowship Meeting, first Sunday of every month. Then they could all gather together from all the cities, at least the first Sunday of every Quarter. And this way you could then get together & discuss, first of all in the Action Committee of delegates, who you think would be a good Area Shepherd, a good AS.

30. To make it truly democratic & to choose your own leaders that you know & you know well, you live with or live near & you have seen them in action, you know who has the anointing, who has the power, who has the wisdom, the love, the genuine direction of the Spirit, in that Executive Committee Meeting or the Action Committee meeting, the delegates could then nominate at least three nominees right from the Committee. They could propose or bring forward the names of three of their own number right there, the different ones can nominate each other.

31. I think Area Fellowship Meetings are a tremendous need, not just a good idea but an absolute must! So I'm going to hereby proclaim & officially issue the Royal Decree that in every area where there are two or more Homes in a city or even in a local area or a general area, a province or a State or a whole country, whatever, that they ought to get together at least once every month, quarter or year!

32. Now if that seems to be impossible, you're really so far apart, hundreds or maybe thousands of miles apart like you could be in Australia etc., 2,000 miles wide, or the U.S., 3,000 miles

wide, Europe 2,000 miles wide etc., you couldn't all get together very often. Maybe then you could at least have a country-wide meeting or a tremendous continent-wide meeting once or twice a year, perhaps every six months or at least every year, to which you'd send delegates at least, one person from each church.

33. And perhaps you could even have one of these every six months or at least once a year as we did in the Alliance, which I thought was very good, as at this time they did not just elect local delegates & local Area Shepherds, local District leaders or District Superintendents. At this National Meeting they elected the National officers, the National leaders of the whole National Church. They were nominated by these official delegates & voted upon & selected.

34. So now we lower the boom & we tell you that it is a command of the Lord by the Holy Spirit through His Apostle that you should assemble yourselves together!:

35. "Neglect not the assembling of yourselves together!"—Heb.10:25. That is a law of the church, in a sense, it is part of the Law of Love to have fellowship together, to cooperate together. "Behold, how these Christians love one another!" "Love one another! Bear ye one another's burdens & so fulfil the law of Christ."—1Jn.4:7, Gal.6:2.

36. You must get together, Beloved, for more fellowship & more united praise & prayer & cooperation & action & planning & printing & projects for witnessing, more united unified action & helping with the needs & discussing & praying over & solving the problems & all the rest: You've just got to do it!—It's a **MUST**!

37. I'm going to recommend now that we call our Home Servants Shepherds to let the local Home know & feel that they have a little authority & that they are their Shepherd of the sheep, they are their Pastor, which is a Latin word meaning the same thing as Shepherd. In the New Testament church they had Shepherds, Pastors, Deacons, Deaconesses, Bishops, Apostles, all these various officers.

38. So I think we need to get back to the New Testament plan again & not be so completely out of fellowship, out of leadership & out of organisation that we're just like a bunch of

dumb sheep drifting around the World hardly knowing where we're going, just as the wind bloweth where it listeth, being led of the Spirit & the Letters as best we can, with very little synchronisation or very little cooperation or very little organisation of our moves or plans or projects or printing or pioneering or anything!

39. We now need to get it together! We really need to get together more now. We have become strong now again in the Spirit & in the Letters, the right spirit, the right leadership, going the right direction doing things the right way according to the Letters & my leadership under the Lord.

40. I think now it's time that we should have some good local leaders who have developed outside the Chain-Saul & not all cut up by the cruel teeth of the Chain, but free of that terrible tyranny & its horrible extortion, & free of their training & leadership! We still have a few of those old Chain-Saul bottles hanging around, but we've tried to break 'm up so that maybe they can then pick up the pieces & try again, & we have reclaimed quite a few of those old Chain-Saul members.

41. So it's time to get it together! It's time for a second Pentecost! Hallelujah? Praise God? Are you ready for another Pentecost? Are you ready for another outpouring of power on a united church, united disciples, a united Family, a strong united unified organised cooperative fellowshipping, working together, fighting together Family! GBY! I think we are!—It's time!

42. I think we've had three-and-a-half years of purgung & that's enough! I think you've had three-&-a-half years of nothing but my leadership through the Letters & almost no other leaders, & I think that's long enough, maybe it has been even too long! Maybe a lot have been lost by the way because of a lack of leadership & a shortage of Shepherds. So Lord help us now in Jesus' name to re-unite! (Prays.)

43. We ask Thee to lead & guide us & help our families to get it together & to learn how to fellowship & learn how to strengthen each other, strengthen the brethren, hold each other up so that if one stumbles the other will lift him up. Help us now to feed each other & bear one another's burdens & share one another's cares & share each other's ideas & projects & promo-

tions & printing & pioneering & cooperative efforts of all kinds & self-help of the needy & all the things that need to be done in cooperation & done together in unanimity by unanimous consent & cooperation & united effort & fellowship etc.

44. Lord Jesus, help each one to get the burden, to have the conviction that is of Thee, Lord, that we have gone too long not assembling ourselves together. Now it's time to fulfil & obey Thy commandment by Thy Apostle who knew how necessary it was, that we are not to neglect the assembling of ourselves together. Amen!

45. If it's difficult for you to fellowship together every Sunday or you're too far apart in the city or the province, county or whatever, at least the local area Homes can get it together one Sunday a month, the first Sunday of each month in a Local Area Fellowship Meeting. And if not, at least in a once-a-Quarter, first Sunday of the Quarter Fellowship Meeting.

46. If you're numerous enough to do both, the Local Homes can meet together either every Sunday or the first Sunday of every month, & then the area-wide Homes, province-wide Homes, county-wide, State-wide, country-wide Homes can meet together perhaps at least the first Sunday of every quarter month, or every six months, or on their New Year's Fellowship Sunday, the first Sunday of the New Year!

47. So you 2 or 3 Homes that are closest to each other, why don't you decide to get together every Sunday for your Fellowship Meeting & alternate Homes. Meet one Sunday in your Home & one Sunday in their Home etc. if you can.

48. There is a lot of flexibility in how to do this. But you get together & you decide on how to do it, what is possible & what's not, & what's convenient & what's not, what's the best thing to do & what is not.

49. You 2 or 3 Homes that are nearest each other start meeting together every Sunday if possible, all the Homes that are closest to each other. Start having at least a Local Sunday Fellowship Meeting every Sunday. I think that would be very good.—Not just one little local Family meeting & just one little local Home of just that Family that lives there—unless you're so many hundreds of miles away from others that there's no other

Family you could possibly fellowship with every Sunday.

50. I'd say that if you're at least within an hour or two of each other, you certainly ought to get together every Sunday. That's not too hard for a Sunday drive, a nice outing for the family & the kids.

51. Try to have it in a commodious enough place that everybody's comfortable, everybody has a seat or a chair if possible, even if you have to borrow a bunch of chairs or rent'm or go down & get some canvas stools or something to have something for everybody to sit on, or pillows at least! That old floor can get pretty hard after an hour or two or three—& that's about how long those meetings usually last!

52. You've got from three to six o'clock as time for meeting: First hour music & all kinds of special things, praise & prayer etc., & then the next hour for all kinds of testimonies, special speakers & whatnot, & sometimes that runs into about two hours with your pictures & videos & all the rest. But finally wind up at dinnertime about six.

53. Have a set time when you've got to cut if off. These interminable endless unending meetings get really tiresome for some of the poor hardworking folks & mothers & children especially. I think it's just cruelty to poor dumb animals to carry on & on & on for hours & hours non-stop without any chance to rest or stop or get out of it. And yet they feel like if they leave the meeting they're disloyal or some kind of a backslider or something!

54. I suggest those Sunday Fellowship meetings shouldn't be more than two or three hours in length in the afternoon, from some time between three & six when people have time to get there from afar after their lunch. Then we used to always feed the folks there or they brought food or money or something so that we could all eat together, either outside or inside depending on the country & the climatic conditions & the facilities. And be sure there's just plenty of room for the size of congregation you're gonna have, the number of people you're going to have, & be sure there's plenty to eat!

55. I suggest you try to close your meeting at the end of the dinner so that people who don't necessarily want to stay later &

want to get an early start home, can leave after the late afternoon hours about suppertime. They can either go, they don't have to stay for dinner, or they can stay for dinner & continue to fellowship, those that want to do so voluntarily as long as they want to.

56. I suggest you have everything together in the afternoon, get it over with & dismiss for dinner. Have a good dinner & say goodnight & everybody get home early in plenty of time for a good night's rest.

57. First before you leave home you've got to decide on who is going to be your representative, or your delegates: At least one delegate from each Home. Of course, preferably the Home mother & father if possible. And come together as a special separate meeting sometime during that Fellowship Day, you Delegates.

58. Perhaps you could have your committee meeting during one of the recesses, if there is a recess, & maybe you ought to have a recess after about an hour or an-hour-&-a-half! Maybe you should declare a half-an-hour or one-hour recess so people will have at least a chance to go to the toilet, & have your Committee Meeting, so that your plans, programs, nominees, projects, proposals & promotions can be brought together afterward before the whole Family for their approval at the second half of your afternoon Fellowship Meeting.

59. I suggest you have a good hot one-to-one-&-a-half-hour **Family meeting**, & then have a Committee Meeting while the rest of the Family just relaxes & fellowships or takes a nap or goes to the toilet or plays ball! Maybe you can have a special Children's Meeting during that time too for the childcare workers while the mothers have a meeting. Have a Children's Meeting & a Mother's Meeting while the men or the leaders or the delegates have their Action Committee Meeting.

60. From now on the leaders of each Home are going to be called **Home Shepherds**, & then the leaders of two or more Homes are going to be called Local Area Shepherds. At that first meeting you should have your Committee Meeting & nominate at least two or three different people for the Local Area Shepherd of two or more Homes.

61. Nominate and select those nominees, so when you get back together as a Family as a whole, announce to the whole

Family the two or three nominations that have been made of suggested Area Shepherds, & have each adult member vote by secret ballot on scraps of paper, just scribble in the name of the one that they prefer. Secret ballot so nobody will be pressured by social pressure into voting for this one or that one or have a special following or fan club.

62. If no candidate gets a majority of all of the qualified votes, more than half of the possible votes of all of-age members of the united families who are meeting at this united meeting, then I suggest you have a run-off vote between the two top candidates who got the most votes, a plurality of votes, & decide between those. And whichever one of those candidates wins a majority of total votes then will be your Area Shepherd.

63. You can decide whether they should be chosen by a majority or by a two-thirds majority or a three-quarters majority. It's pretty hard sometimes to get a unanimous vote, but of course in the long run it would be nice to make it unanimous, to all agree that that was a good choice. But anyhow, vote!

64. Now in cases where there are great distances to be covered & perhaps whole families can't come, they may only send one or two Delegates to the meeting, the Family Shepherds, or even Mama may have to stay home & take care of the kids while Papa goes. If it's a great distance & it's expensive & you have to go by maybe train or bus or otherwise, then you might not all be able to attend, you'll just have to send Delegates to a very large Area Meeting.

65. Of course, if there are families who can afford it & have cars & they can all drive in together, all the better! Everybody should attend who can. But at least in those very much larger Area Meetings where you perhaps have to travel hundreds of miles or more, at least have a Delegate from each Home come if possible, & maybe some of the rest of you can help them a little bit on their fare or their expenses or their gasoline if they have to come an especially long ways & it's particularly difficult for them.

66. Try to make it possible for them to come, give them a little extra help, those of you who didn't have to come so far & it didn't cost you so much. You should be able to share with them, take up a little offering for them who come from afar or give them

a little gift in the hand to help them. Of course if they're rich Homes that can afford it, you don't have to help them.

67. As you're organizing these first local areas, in the more numerous Local Areas where there are a number of Homes, quite a few people, you might even want to have several different Area Officers. You may not only need an Area Shepherd, you may want to elect a businessman who's good at business & money & banking to be your Area Treasurer to handle your area finances, special Area Fund for pioneering or printing or the needy etc., things which require a united effort & united support.

68. In the more numerous areas where there are many Homes & lots of members you may need more personnel to help to guide the Area & communicate etc. You may even have to also elect an Area Secretary for correspondence with the various Homes etc., & to take care of the writing of letters or notices & various secretarial work, keeping the minutes of the meetings & the business meetings & what went on each time, a log of each business session, committee session & all of it.

69. In extremely populous areas where there are scores of Homes in a small area & hundreds of members, you may find you even need more officers than that. You may need a number of Committees & Secretaries to handle the various things, like a Meeting Committee to decide on the times & places of meetings & who's in charge & who's responsible for the food & the entertainment & the inspiration & the music & all that sort of thing, the Program Committee.

70. Then you may have to have a committee which is in charge of printing & its needs, & pioneering & its needs, pioneering new areas, various special projects etc. You may have several different committees to handle these various projects & various jobs in an extremely numerous Area where there are many Homes & many many members.

71. Where two or more Homes meet together every Sunday, that can be established as the Local Area Fellowship a LAF, & should have a Local Area Shepherd, a LAS. Maybe it'll be a laugh sometimes as you get started, but it can get pretty serious as you go on.

72. When two or more Local Area Fellowships, two or

more LAFs, decide they want to get together for a United Meeting at least once a month, the first Sunday of every month, then that should be called a District Area Fellowship Meeting, a DAFM!

73. I would say it would be well to try to perhaps limit these local fellowships to about two or three Homes or not too many more so you don't get the house too crowded every Sunday.

74. But then the DAFs should consist of several LAFs & meet in a large enough Home that at least if not all the people, at least the official Delegates from each Home will have enough room to meet & talk & visit & eat & carry on the Lord's work & your committee meetings & your programs & your plans & projects & printing agreements & pioneering efforts & all the rest.

75. First the Local Area Fellowship meeting, LAFM, that's two or more Homes meeting together regularly every Sunday. Next, the District Area Fellowship Meeting, the DAFM, that is two or more LAFs meeting together on the first Sunday of every month if possible. If not possible, at least the first Sunday of every Quarter if you're really scattered. But I would say the DAFs should generally meet together at least the first Sunday of every month.

76. First there's the Local Area Fellowship, then the District Area Fellowship, then we could call it the Greater Area Fellowship consisting of two or more DAFs, & that'll be the Greater Area Fellowship Meeting, the GAFM! A LAFM consists of two or more Homes meeting every Sunday. A DAFM consists of two or more LAFs meeting once a month. And a GAFM consists of two or more DAFs meeting at least once a quarter.

77. And finally now the national or language area fellowship meetings on a larger scale such as national or nationwide at least once a year. Now in areas where there are some very small countries & the distances are short, you might want to have a yearly Meeting.

78. Well, according to tongues, we could call it a TAFM! It would be a Tongue Area Fellowship Meeting, so for lack of a better term for the moment I'll just call it a TAFM or NAFM. This will be a National Meeting which will meet at least once a year on the first Sunday of the year, God willing, & it should be even

a weekend-long meeting or perhaps even a week-long meeting, your National Convention or your Language Area-wide Convention.

**79. It should plan to be such a large meeting** with people coming from such long distances that they don't want to just stay for an afternoon, but be prepared to stay for at least a three-day weekend, or even a week. Which reminds me that in your GAFMs also, your delegates may be coming from such great distances that they won't want to just come for an afternoon or a day, but at least a two or three day weekend. That's your Greater Area Fellowship Meeting consisting of two DAFs & a number of LAFs!

**80. At each of these successive levels, by the way, successive steps, you'll not only have a Local Area Fellowship Shepherd, but at your DAFM or District Area Fellowship Meeting, you should choose a District Area Fellowship Shepherd, a DAS, who will be the overseer of the other two Local Area Shepherds, of two or more. He's not to be a dictator, he's not to be a tyrant, he's not to be an extortionist, he's just to be a sort of a friendly counsellor & guide to sort of counsel with & to fellowship with & ask for guidance & leadership for your general District Area.**

**81. Then at the GAFM, the Greater Area Fellowship Meeting, there should be a Greater Area Fellowship Shepherd chosen** who will be over the GAF, the Greater Area Fellowship of two or more DAFs. At each successive step then your Area Meetings will choose their particular Shepherds for that particular area—either Local Area, District Area, Greater Area or National or Language Area: LAS, DAS, GAS & NAS.

**82. These are not a dictatorial chain-of-command of tyranny or extortion, but simply a matter of sweet & lovely voluntary Family Fellowship where we enjoy each other for a short time—the local ones every Sunday, the District ones every month, the Greater Areas every quarter, & the National or Tongue Lingual Areas every year.**

**83. We need a little more fellowship, a lot more fellowship!**—A little more organisation, a little more unity, cooperation, synchronisation of effort, a united promotion of projects of printing & pioneering & helping needy areas, needy churches, needy missionaries & all that sort of thing. PTL? Good idea? You

like it? OK, let's try it, shall we?

**84. This would be a very good thing to have**, I think, a very wonderful thing to be able to get our heads & hearts together in one place with one spirit, one mind, one heart & one meeting or more & be able to discuss & share & pray & praise & plan for our Worldwide Work.

**85. This is going to be a marriage of our Family around the World**, a get-together, "Let's Get It Together", let's all get married in body, mind & spirit & have a wonderful time together & much greater fellowship & much greater unity & much greater power, much greater cooperation for projects & promotions & pioneering & printing & distribution & all the rest! Praise God? Hallelujah? TYJ! (Prays:)

**86. We ask Thee in Jesus' name, Lord, to give them wisdom**, to give them great soberness & seriousness of mind as they select very seriously the leadership who's best qualified, who's not just the most popular & the easiest going who will be the easiest on'm, but the one who really has the best spiritual leadership, best leadership qualifications, who is already a leader & has already been proving himself to be a good Shepherd of his own Home & even helping other Homes, this man or woman or couple who are worthy of being Area Shepherds of whatever size the Area.

**87. We ask Thee in Jesus' name to help them make wise choices**, to nominate not foolishly or fools, but to nominate the serious & well-qualified wise leaders & Shepherds to lead their flocks & to get this done quickly & as soon as possible, Lord, so that we can have a Worldwide Fellowship which is closer & tighter with more communication & cooperation & unified effort, synchronisation & a fighting front that will be strong & unified & working together, fighting together & planning together to reach the whole World with Thy precious Gospel of Love as quickly as we can before it's too late. We feel we have just a little time left, not much, so we need to do more to work together in order to do it. In Jesus' name we ask it for Thy glory. Amen.

**88. In areas where you have full-fledged Churches of Love every Sunday that are going very well & it would be out of the**

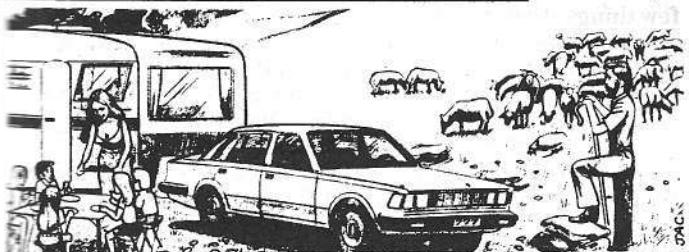
question for your fish & friends who come over to go any long distance & go from house to house, in some cases perhaps bad security & you wouldn't want them to meet the other Family members, you could decide to have the Fellowship meetings on a Monday or perhaps a Saturday or some other day. Or you could change your Church of Love to another day or even an evening or Saturday afternoon.

89. Saturday afternoon might be a good time for the big fellowship meeting of all Homes, because most people are off & people are not usually working, children are home from school. These things are purely voluntary & should be adapted to your own particular situations & what you can do & what's best for you in your own situation & location. You can do it if you want to & if you think it will work for you, & if you don't or can't, then you don't have to!—But,

90. We need to balance between the two: The need for security & the need for fellowship. I think that we're going to have to strike some kind of a happy medium & not go to one extreme or the other. We started at the one extreme of total public fellowship & wide publicity, & we went to the opposite extreme of no Family fellowship, isolated Homes & no publicity & total security. And now we have got to learn to have some kind of Family Fellowship, even at some slight risk of security. The urgent need of fellowship in some cases is more than the need for security.

91. I think that we can have Family Fellowship in security if we're wise. (Maria: And perhaps this might be a way of even improving their security by getting together & deciding what they can do as Homes to be more secure.)

92. There were always Judases in the Church, you'll never be able to get rid of all the Judases. There will always be spies & traitors & backsliders. We cannot hinder the Work of God & stop the progress of the machinery just for the sake of a few mutineers. The best thing to do is just chuck them overboard & keep on going if you find them, but not just stop the whole ship & never go anywhere or sail anywhere or reach any goals or harbors or havens just because you're afraid to let your crew know where you're going or what you're doing! Amen? Happy Fellowship!



1. In the Bible all the qualifications for bishops, elders & deacons are outlined & they are pretty strict. The lives & example & behaviour of our VSs, & of course any of our leaders, should be the model for which the others should be striving. They should be such an example & such a model.

2. VSing is really the work of an evangelist. It's the work of both pastor & evangelist in this case, because the sheep are virtually pastorless except for me & the Letters. So it's the work of an evangelist.

3. If there's anything an evangelist needs it's a lot of real charm & drive & personality & inspirational ability to really feed the sheep & inspire them & set them an example.

4. "Man looketh on the outward appearance, but God looketh on the heart."—1Sam.16:17. The whole Family is not going to—when they first meet them—see all their life history & know how good & faithful they've been & how much they've done! The Family is going to look at them, & as my Mother used to say, "First impressions mean so much!"

5. They'll judge by surface appearance & every little word. "By thy words shalt thou be justified & by thy words shalt thou be condemned!"—Mt.12:37. And you'll have to give an account for every idle word, & it begins here & now with other people. You don't have to wait until you get to the Judgement Seat of Christ, but it's happening all the time.

6. One of the worst things a VS can be is shy! They can't afford to be shy. As I've always said: Shyness is pride! It's plain pride.

7. Even if VSs don't have everything, they've got to have a few things. They might be ugly as a mud fence, but if they've got wonderful personality, a marvellous sacrificial spirit, a real leadership talent & inspiration & all the rest, well, they can get by with their mud-fence face or homeliness. (Maria: But they have to have some kind of sparkle!) They've got to have something! (Maria: Some kind of radiant exuberance.)

8. You don't have to be beautiful to have personality. Some women are beautiful but that's all. They don't show any kind of push, any drive!

9. In a way that's what Eve & I & the kids were, sort of VSs of the churches. And boy I'll tell you, one thing Eve had was a lot of drive & initiative & sparkle & fight & fire, & she pushed in where Angels feared to tread & she got those kids in wherever she wanted! She didn't have the looks & a lot of other things, but she sure had the managerial ability, let me tell you! She knew how to push around.

10. But let me tell you, when you're in that kind of work you've got to be pushy & nervy or you won't survive! And the little mousey types of people won't like them either. Little mousey types of people will not like people that have got any initiative & any drive—all the things they know they don't have. They'll resent it. It will be offensive to them because they know that they haven't got it. You can't lead without drive!

11. You're on stage & they are the audience & they are watching you & looking at you to see what kind of impression you are going to make, what kind of performance you're going to give, & "well begun is half done". When you are in public work, if you don't hit 'm with a bang & make a good first impression, it's almost impossible to overcome afterwards no matter how well you do.

12. —And that's how they're going to be judged, by that first impression! I'm sorry, but that's just the way people are & that's the way that kind of job is. You can't just be a little goodie mousey who takes care of your own children—you gotta be able to take care of yours & everybody else's too!

13. You've gotta be able to help people with their problems, honestly. The reason we've had trouble is that we had the wrong kind of people. Because the best kind of people would be people

who see the problem & can exert leadership & guidance & counsel & know the Lord & the Letters & have some maturity & godly wisdom. You can't deal with problems in your own strength & wisdom. It'd be better if you didn't get involved at all.

14. VSs, & public spiritual leaders of any kind must have a tremendous knowledge of the Word & be able to give the Word. That's the ministry of people who are shepherds: They have to feed the sheep. They've got to give them answers, lend a listening ear to genuine problems, but at the same time not meddle in people's personal conflicts or get overly involved in them. All my Mother & I could do was quote the Scripture, but we didn't take the responsibility. We passed the buck to the Lord & the Bible. And that's what they have to do. (Maria: Exactly!) Then people have to make their own decisions on the basis of the Word you give them. They have to make their own decision.

15. You can't make it for them, you can't tell them what to do. You just say, "Well, the Bible says so-&-so, now what do you think of that?"—You have to do that with teenagers! This is the way we did with our own kids when they finally got to the point they were responsible to make their own decisions! You have to say, "Well, the Lord says so-&-so" or "The Bible says so-&-so", or "Daddy taught you so-&-so before, now what do you think you ought to do?"

16. You've also got to hit them with a show! We can't have little mousey people as VSs that never do anything—either good or bad. Just because people never cause you any trouble, it doesn't mean they're the best kind of people or leadership! The most outstanding boys in my school classes were the worst! They got in more trouble & did more wrong things, but when they did something right they really did it with a bang! They were the guys that caused the most disturbance & led the class astray most of the time because they had the most drive, the most leadership ability.

17. It just had to be taught & trained & channelled in the right direction. The little blah nobodies who never showed a spark nor nary a sparkle, never let out a peep, never did anything wrong, always got A+ in deportment, got all A's & A+'s in grades, studied all the time, never said a word, quiet, did all the things they were supposed to do & never did anything else either,

had no leadership ability, no push, no drive, nothing!—I can't even remember them.

18. VSs aren't little people who are always goodie goodie & never do anything & even think themselves better than other people & have been in the Family many years. Just because they've been in the Family so long doesn't necessarily mean they're outstanding material.

19. We've probably got people in the Family who have only been with us a few months that have got more talent, drive, personality, ability, leadership & everything else than some of the people we've had sitting around like bumps on a log for ten years! Let me tell you, talent needs no seniority. I mean, there's no seniority to talent—or I should say lack of talent has no seniority!

20. **What does the Family expect when they hear a Visiting Servant is coming?** (Maria: Inspiration, fellowship, example...) What would you think? What would go through your mind? (Maria: I'd think, "Oh, I'm going to have somebody to show me how I'm supposed to live & how I'm supposed to do things.") Exactly! "Oh, these must be special people, they must be examples of the Family. They must be outstanding! They must be the top people of the Area!"

21. "They must be people who are to be my examples, after whom I'm to pattern my life & I'm to look upon as someone to follow & someone to be like & to act like & speak like & witness like & train my children like & do housework like. These must be the most outstanding people in this whole area, to be Visiting Servants!" I'm just telling what I'd expect if I was one of our poor little families struggling along.

22. I'd think, "Well, thank God, here comes some help to see what I'm supposed to be doing & looking like & acting like & preaching like & training my kids like & doing my housework like!" I mean, a VS mother should be able to pitch in & help with the cooking, washing dishes, keeping house, & training the children, to show them how to do it if necessary! That's the clinical method!

23. This was the outstanding thing about Fred's Soul Clinic!: It was to teach witnessing, not just with classes & not just with pious platitudes & sermons, but to get out & take you

out witnessing & show you how to do it! That was the whole idea of the Soul Clinic method, & we're still practicing it. And if the VSs can't practice it, if they are not shining leading examples, I mean shining, they shouldn't be VSs!: "Let your light so shine before men that they may see your good works & glorify your Father which is in Heaven!"—Mt.5:16.

24. When you're in a VS kind of business you can hardly afford an off-day or an off-night either! I was in evangelistic work all my life with my Mother & Grandfather before me & I know!

25. You've got to be performers! You've got to be able to turn it on! Whether you feel like it or not, the show must go on! Just like the circus or the movies or acting or whatever it is—you have got to be an enthusiastic, driving, shining example!—Whether you feel like turning it on or not, you've got to turn it on anyway!

26. What would you expect? You'd expect them to be the greatest people in the area, the most shining examples, the ones who have done the best & know how to raise their kids & keep their house & live by faith & train their children & perform in public, & let's face it!: Our business is witnessing, & to witness you have got to turn it on & to shine a light, & you've got to do it before others in public.

27. Even if it's only one person, you've got an audience & you've got to put on the act & you'd better make it good or you're not going to make much of an impression! People judge you by what they see & hear, & they haven't got a lifetime to live with you to find out. They can't see how you live at home. In most of my life & my Mother's & my Grandfather's they only had about a week or two to make an impact on people that would last them all year, & in fact if you didn't make an impact on the first night, there wouldn't be anybody there the next night!

28. You had to sock it to them every night & make an impression & an impact & wake them up out of their lethargy & their dead sleep like most church people are in—& probably a lot of our families who've gotten separated & back in the System, back at jobs & back in the same old rut & routine again. They're going to sleep again, dead again, just like the churches, & you've got to come there like a bomb, like an atom bomb & blow things

apart!—Literally! You have to come there & wake them up, set them on fire, inspire them! (Maria: And all in a visit of a couple of hours to one or two days at the most.) That's all the time you've got!

**29. Well, let me tell you, we only had two hours in one night to do it & if we didn't make it the first night, only their loyalty to God & the Lord & the pastor & the church building got them back the next night. You had to go over & make an impression & wake them up & excite them & make them eager to come back & see what you had to say the next night, or you were dead & better get out of the business! You had just two hours the first night to make it, or you were finished!**

**30. If you can make that good impression the first night & you can keep it up for a week or two, you will hold your crowd.** In fact, we usually built up a crowd, it usually got better because the people were sold! From the first night on, they began to bring in their friends & family & relatives & neighbours, "Hey, come with us to the meeting tonight!—They're terrific!"

**31. If you're on fire, the World will come out to see you burn!** Let me tell you, when you are a public leader you are not on candid camera but a wide-open camera & you are supposed to know it & you're supposed to turn it on & set'm on fire! Light your fire! Light their fire, & turn on the light & let them see it! "Let your light so SHINE before men!"—Mat.5:16.

**32. Let me tell you another thing: Your kids are going to be the leaders!**—Your kids are going to be leaders of their kids, & if you are going to go visit them, your kids are going to be showing their kids their example & what our kids ought to be like, & they are going to follow your kids more than they are you, & if your kids have no light, no life, no fire, no drive, no shine, no nothing, what have they got to offer to other kids? Kids follow kids! That's why we have a Family!—Youth followed youth!

**33. Our kids were such an inspiration & such shining lights with such drive & leadership ability & all the rest, they led the World!** They grabbed the hippies & took off!—And they just went after them because they liked what they saw.

**34. Our children are our witness today, & you've got to have children that are a shining example of what a child ought to be like,**

what kind of witness they ought to be like. That's the impression that's going to count with the Family & the people they visit.

**35. Even if the VSs were voted in by popular vote, I'll tell you, you can't always go by a popularity poll!** Because if the people are dead & cold & they don't want to do anything, they are going to vote for the ones who are not going to disturb or upset the status quo! If our kids are on fire, if you're going by a popularity poll, probably the only ones who would have voted for them were the kids who wanted to get out & get on fire, but the already dead, "Let-the-Dead-Bury-the-Dead!" parents probably would have voted almost unanimously against them!

**36. You can't go by any popularity poll!** Pastors in churches have to win the popularity poll, & you know who the people vote for? (Maria: The one who's going to let them sit around.) Exactly!—The one that's not going to disturb them or wake them up! That's who they're going to vote for. Somebody just like them: Nice quiet little people who mind their own business & don't cause any trouble. "That's the kind of pastor we like! They're our examples. They're just like us. We'll vote for them."

**37. Let me tell you, in that kind of a life as an evangelist, there is no behind-the-scenes!** You are on candid camera all the time! You are on the stage most of the time & on candid camera the rest of the time! People are watching you out of the corner of their eye! (Maria: People are going to be eavesdropping outside your door at home & peeking in your keyhole & a lot of other things.)

**38. Your kids will show what you're like!** They are your product. My kids never went anywhere but what they set the place on fire!—Nearly burned it down or got driven out of town, just like me! They hit the place like a storm, like a bomb, & the people who liked it woke up & followed. But there usually were only two or three in the whole church who wound up really liking it. And usually they couldn't stand me more than one night! They nearly ran me out of the church before I got done!

**39. Not all the mousey do-nothing nobodies are going to like that kind of people.** They don't want you to wake them up, they don't want to be disturbed, they don't want to change. They're going to vote for someone who's going to cause them the

least trouble & cost the least money too, that's another point. Whew! I'm telling you, an evangelist & people that have got fire, most people can't even stand to live around them very long!

**40. There may be some people who want visitation & want somebody to come around to see them & have fellowship**, but there'll also be people who don't want you coming around nosing into their business & seeing how they live! We found both kinds of people in churches. The kind of people who really were hungry & wanted help would invite us out to dinner, but the kind who didn't want us to see how they lived & were selfish wouldn't! They didn't want us to pry into their private lives & see what they were really like, & they were usually the ones who needed help the most, but they didn't want it, like the Scribes & Pharisees.

**41. Anybody going around visiting their Homes is going to be involved to a certain extent.** As I say, it's not up to the visitor to make the decisions, it is up to the visitor, evangelist, preacher, prophet, etc. simply to preach the Word. (Maria: Give'm the MO Letters.) Just like you parents do with your teenagers—give'm the Word! Whether it's Bible or MO Letters, give'm the Word, & then let them make their own decisions; & not start interpreting them for them if they don't know the situation. I mean, give them the Word & the Letters & that's it! Tell them where it is. "Here, here it is!"

**42. My Mother used to say, "Never ask the sheep!"** Sheep don't know what's good for them. The Shepherd has to make the final decisions. You can sometimes ask the sheep just to see how they feel & maybe to get some reaction on what kind of impression they do have. But when it comes to the decision, it's not a democracy. It's a dictatorship of the Spirit, & leadership has got to know the mind of God & do what's right, even if he's the only voice for it & everybody else is against him! That's one thing that went wrong with some of our common little Homes, the sheep didn't know what was good for them & chose wrong.

**43. The leaders ought to know, they ought to know what's best!** They shouldn't have to ask the people. A leader is not supposed to hear from the people, he's supposed to hear from God! They should only hear from the people in the matter of deacons—material things, money, facilities, logistics. The people have to

earn the money to foot the bill, so they should have something to say about that!—But when it comes to the Word or leadership or the elders or spiritual guidance, then the people have nothing to say about it. They can either respond or not respond. They can all be wrong.

**44. The VSs have got to be spiritual leaders!** They're not just going around checking up on their finances & if the Homes have enough to eat & so on. The spiritual leader is going to be concerned about that too, but they are going to be concerned mostly about the spiritual, because if the spiritual is OK everything else will be all right too. The Lord will take care of them.

**45. Spiritual leaders are not tending tables, spiritual leaders are ministering the Word of God!** (See Acts 6:2-4) They're supposed to be able to tell the people what to do, what the Word says to do, & to guide them spiritually, counsel them spiritually, advise them spiritually. But then they have to make their own decision, they can't expect the VSs to make all their decisions for them & solve all their problems!

**46. VSs have got to be leaders!—Proven leaders with fruit!**—Some of the best of which is their children, & that's the best fruit you can have, as well as years of service. (Maria: We have so few people that we can use as VSs, that's why we've had to put real restrictions on them now, because you can't have people that are poor samples running around trying to teach other people when they have great personal problems themselves. But yet the VSs are one of the things the Family wants the most & keep asking about! Sometimes I think it's a little like when the people insisted on Saul as their king, even though he was a poor sample to them. He gives them their desires but sends leanness to their souls. On the other hand, we do have some exceptional VS couples.)

**47. The VS program can either be the best or the worst, they can either do a lot of good or a lot of damage, depending on the VSs.** And VSs can do more damage than good! It's really pitiful. But good VSs really are a help.

**48. Thank God for the good leaders we do have!** We just need to find'm & give'm a chance to prove it!—Amen?—Are you one? We need you!—Prove it! GBY! WLY! GBAKY leading the flock!

## ROTTEN APPLES!

DFO 1023 6/81



him! The Bible says, "Foolishness is bound in the heart of a child; but the rod of correction shall drive it far from him."—Pro.22:15.

2. I'll tell you, as soon as these evil spirits find that crime doesn't pay, even his own little evil spirit, they'll quit! That's why flagellation & electric shock treatments work, the evil spirits don't like them! (See "Shock Treatment", No.1008.) So whether it's his evil spirit or a demonic possession, they need to really get tough with him or it, to get rid of it as well as praying definitely & desperately to cast it out. It sure sounds like an evil spirit to me, whether it's his or somebody else's.

3. There must be something wrong with the mother to begin with, or the Lord wouldn't have allowed it. And if the mother doesn't want to give the discipline or can't, then she should let other people in the Home sock it to him! But if they won't or can't because she won't let them do it, the other mothers with children ought to move! If she won't do it & they can't per-

suade her to let them do it, they ought to move! I wouldn't care to have my child reared with some kind of weird retarded child with a bad, violent spirit!

4. I've told you what I think about those cases. I really think if they show a wrong spirit like a violent hurtful spirit, the retarded child ought to be separated from the others, and you can't get them separated in one small Home.—Or get them delivered!

5. Now there are some retarded children, mongoloids, who are very sweet, who have a very sweet spirit, very childlike, very docile & there is nothing wrong with them spiritually; they literally are just somehow mentally retarded. But with a child that shows a violent Satanic streak & devilish behaviour, I would say there is something wrong with the child spiritually & it's dangerous to have it around other children.

6. The mother or those in charge ought to really take authority in the Spirit & rebuke the Devil & all of them lay hands on the child & cast the evil spirit out of it. Then just get tough with the child as far as discipline is concerned until he finds that crime does not pay & he's going to get a hard spank himself every time he hurts the other children or is even mean to them—blow for blow!

7. If they don't get the victory over it & discipline the child & cure him or get the Devil cast out of him or the devilishness, then he should be separated from the other children. He shouldn't be allowed to live in a Home with other children to endanger them.

8. And we must remember that if there's a retarded or deformed, chronically sick or handicapped child, a queer child or baby born in a family, there is usually something wrong with the mother or father that God is chastening them for & either trying to teach them a lesson or simply punish them for their past sins or present sins. It's certainly not the child's fault.

9. Problem children are usually the result of problem parents, & the very fact that the mother will not discipline the child severely for serious behaviour shows something is wrong with her. I think such a child, if not actually dangerous, is a very bad influence on other children & can drag down the whole

Home.

**10. If the problem is not cured & the child delivered, & I would say that if the mother will not consent to strict discipline &/or the child does not respond to prayer or firm treatment, then they both should be separated from the Home. They're both a bad influence on the rest of the Home & its kids.**

**11. The ideal is for the mother to repent of her sins which have caused it in the first place & to be willing to consent to strict discipline for the child, & if earnest Family prayer for the child's deliverance & healing still does not get results, I think the child should be separated from any Home with children, because it could be a very bad influence on the other children, if not actually dangerous!**

**12. As I've said, we cannot allow one handicapped soldier to drag down the whole army, nor one rotten apple to spoil the whole barrelful. The problem has to either be cured or the Family delivered from it.**

**13. There must have been something wrong with her relationship with the Lord or with somebody else or others, or the Lord would not have allowed such a thing to happen as a punishment for her sins or as a chastening to teach her a lesson. But whatever it was, the Scripture says in Hebrews 12, "rather let it be healed".—Exorcise it!**

**14. So she should confess & repent of her sins which caused it, acknowledge it & ask for deliverance, & then the whole family should pray desperately for the deliverance of the child so that at least its spirit changes from a bad spirit to a good one; or I would suggest that perhaps both should be separated from the Family & certainly from a family with other children on which the retarded child could be a bad influence or even a danger.**

**15. It could be that the whole problem has developed from a lack of discipline in the first place, the mother's own self-discipline for the child. Whatever it is, it should either be corrected or not tolerated in the Family. May the Lord help you in Jesus' name!**

## LET THE DEAD BURY THE DEAD NO.2!

DFO 1033 7/81



**1. I have never been in favour of taking severely handicapped cases into the Family, cases so severely handicapped that they should be in a hospital or in an institution. We are a fighting Army with a more important job to do than caring for the handicapped, the fruit of the sins of the World. Let them take care of their own! (See Luk.9:60.)**

**2. We have to go into all the World & preach the Gospel & we can't do it very well if we're dragged down by a bunch of time-taking, energy-draining, spirit-depressing, retarded & handicapped people, children or otherwise! Let the World take care of them, & they will! They pity them & they have nothing better to do than to take care of them. Our main business is preaching the Gospel!**

**3. We certainly don't mind preaching to them in the institutions where they are kept & cared for by the System, but we haven't got the time nor the strength to care for them ourselves, & they become a drag on the whole Army!**

**4. This has been against our rules from the very beginning! (See Letter No.S:7.) Not everybody is fit for this Army, & certainly not the severely handicapped whom the World has provided for with institutions & people especially trained to care for them & paid for by the System, & I certainly don't think it's right to let them drag down our own children & hold back our own work & act as a drag & a drain on all of us!**

**5. I'm sorry, but this is an Army & we're fighting a very tough battle & there's very little room for the severely handicapped.**

**6. I think it's a waste of our precious time, the few of us there are who are willing to preach the Gospel, to take our precious time**

for things which the World can do for itself, & can do well & are paid for it! It's expensive & time & energy-consuming & is robbing God of His labourers for the harvest field so white!

7. **I'm sorry, you may think that's a harsh stand**, but it's a tough Army & a tougher war & I'm a tough Commander & we have not got time to nurse the weaklings who need to be in a hospital or an institution for the handicapped, where they'll be well cared for by those who made them that way & who should suffer for the fruits of their sins to teach their parents the lessons they need to learn, for which God permitted their children to be handicapped—not in our schools!

8. **It's almost like cheating in school for us to take care of their problems** & supply the answers they need to learn from the trials of taking care of their own handicapped & the punishments of their sins! We have enough trouble taking care of a few of our own, thank God not many!

9. **There are plenty of people in the World willing to take care of the handicapped for money**, who are not willing to preach the Gospel for any reason, so I don't believe in robbing God's Work of labourers by doing the job of the System.

10. **We can counsel their parents & caretakers & try to lead them to the Lord** wherever they may be, but we should not waste our own time & strength & spirit & money trying to physically care for these fruits of the World's sin which they need to take care of themselves!

11. **I do not approve of having our own schools for the World's handicapped children!** Sorry! We are needed to preach the Gospel to both the handicapped & the able throughout the World, & we can't do that if we're loaded down with the heavy burden of the continuous time & energy-consuming care of the World's handicapped!

12. **We need soldiers, not patients!** Let the World take care of its own patients while we take care of the calling & Work of God to go into all the World & preach the Gospel to every creature, not spending all our time on one handicapped person when we could have been preaching the Gospel to thousands!

13. **I'm sorry, but our calling is not to bury the dead but to follow Jesus!** The World is very sympathetic toward them & well

able & willing to care for them, so why should we waste our time on them? Let the World bury their own dead while we follow Him in the calling that very, very few are able & willing to do!—Luk.9:60.

14. **We have battles to fight, a war to win & we need to be tough able soldiers to do it** & not be burdened with the wounds of the wicked! I realise there are going to be folks who disagree with me, & if so, I suggest you join some Worldly institution where you can give your full time to taking care of the handicapped & get well paid for it, & get out of our way so we can win this war in Jesus' name, amen!

15. **We are like Jesus' twelve disciples or even the seventy**, & there's no record whatsoever of any one of them being handicapped physically in such a way that they had to have special care & could not spend their full time witnessing. **We are the Army!**—Not a hospital for the handicapped nor a church for the retarded!

16. **Let's lay aside every weight & these fruits of sin that do so easily beset us** & let us run the race & not sit down spending our full time taking care of a bunch of handicapped who will never be able to truly serve the Lord as well as we! Don't let the Devil deceive & sidetrack you into something less than the best!

17. **If you haven't got the faith to heal them** so they can join the Army, then you'd better let somebody else take care of them, not us; we're too busy serving the Lord!

18. **He only told us to visit the sick & the imprisoned & clothe the naked & feed the hungry!**—Mat.25:35-36. He didn't tell us to take care of them for the rest of their lives in such a way that it would stop us from going into all the World & preaching the Gospel to every creature or even slow us down!

19. **We are God's elite troops whose highest calling is the battlefield** & whose greatest love is to die for others, to give our lives to win their souls, not spend most of our time caring for their bodies. Let someone else do that who has nothing else better to do!

20. **"As for me & my house, we will serve the Lord"** on the battlefronts of the World, not the hospitals. We're happy to visit them there & give them the Gospel, but let others take care of them who have nothing better to do! We must serve the Lord & save men's souls! Like the Good Samaritan, we will give them

passing help if we can, but we must then move on & be about our Father's business. "We must work the works of Him Who sent us while it is yet day, for the night cometh when no man can work."—Jn.9:4.

21. **Are you in the Army?—Or a mere civilian?** GBY, civilians are needed too, & there are billions of them, but we are an Army of only a few thousand to fight this war & we cannot be dragged down & defeated by civilian jobs! Let the World care for its own & the dead bury their own dead, & you come follow Jesus!

22. **We must be strong, able & unencumbered to attack the strongholds of Satan,** not weakened & worsened by the choking, unfruitful cares of this life & the thorns of this World! Let the gardeners of this World & the doctors & the nurses who care for the civilian population take care of the sick & disabled!

23. **We are warriors & must keep moving & fighting & dying for Jesus & others & their eternal Salvation,** not their mere physical existence! Let someone else take care of that. Let the dead bury the dead! "Onward Christian Soldiers!"—Amen?—GAKY marching & fighting for Jesus!—Amen?—WLY!—Dad.

## **SOLITAIRE!**

—An Inspiration while watching an Andy Williams Show video!



1. "Solitaire" is beautiful! Listen to this, it's beautiful! This is the kind of music I sang with heartfelt emotion:

*"There was a man, a lonely man, who lost his love through his indifference.*

*A heart that cared, that went unshared, & slowly died within his silence.*

*Now Solitaire's the*

DFO 1064 12/80

*only game in town, & every road it takes me, takes me down.*

*And by myself it's easy to pretend I'll never love again. And even to myself I play the game, without your love it always ends the same.*

*While life goes on around me everywhere, I'm playing Solitaire.*

*Another day, a lonely day, so much to say that goes unspoken.*

*And through the night, each sleepless night, the eyes are closed, the heart is broken.*

*Now Solitaire's the only game in town, & every road it takes me, takes me down.*

*And by myself it's easy to pretend you're coming back again.*

*And even to myself I play the game, without your love it always ends the same.*

*While life goes on around me everywhere, I'm playing Solitaire.*

*Solitaire's the only game in town, every road it takes me, takes me down,*

*I'm playing Solitaire." (Weeps.)*

2. **When you hear that song, think about all those lonely old folks** that you see in those vacation resorts, you see them playing Solitaire & old folks' games & things like that. How can you love the World unless you can feel their heartache & their loneliness?

3. **Don't you folks ever weep for the World?** Jesus even wept for the Jews, think of that! He wept over Jerusalem.—Luk.19:41. The shortest verse in the Bible is "Jesus wept".—Jn.11:35. You know why He wept that time?—Because of their lack of faith. The Lord had compassion. He had sadness & sorrow for the World, "a man of sadness & acquainted with grief".—Isa.53:3.

4. **You need to hear the heartcry of the World!** You need to be sensitive to their sorrows & their sadness, or how are you going to have compassion for them? How are you going to have love for them unless you feel their loneliness & their lack of love & their sadness?

5. **Songs that really get through to you, I think, are great**

songs, songs that move you, music that really moves you emotionally & really has genuine emotion. Even though it be sad & lonely & loveless, it's great music, it's beautiful.

**6. I don't know how you could love the World or how you can feel the love of the Lord without feeling sorry for them, feeling compassion for them.** Jesus was tired once & He didn't even want to go out, but He saw the multitude that needed His help, & it said that He had compassion upon the multitude. (Mk.6:34.) He wanted to escape but He had compassion on the multitude, He was sorry for them, He had to do something about it, He had to help them, so He went out to them.

**7. That ought to break your heart!** If you don't have a broken heart you're never going to be any good for anything, you're never going to know how to love the World or want to reach somebody like that with the Lord. It ought to break your heart! It's so true, it's so sad, they're so lonely & every road they try down because they don't find Jesus.

**8. Wouldn't you like to reach somebody like that with the Lord?** This song just touched my heart so when I first heard it. It's a heartcry of the World, so sad! They're so lonely & playing Solitaire.

**9. Can you remember when you were lonely without the Lord & everything seemed to take you down, & there seemed to be no love, no hope?** It ought to break your heart & make you pray & do everything you can to try to reach them for the Lord. Jesus help us, Lord!

**10. It's such a sad song, but it's so true!** The Greeks had a word for it called catharsis, in their Greek tragedies. They said tragedy was better for you than comedy because it created a catharsis, a purification, it purged you & it made you pure:

**11. Like deep emotion & weeping washes away the impurity, the silliness & foolishness & makes you honest.** Catharsis, purification. The tragedy helps to purify. Like that little poem I've often quoted to you: "I walked a mile with gladness, she chatted all the way & never a thing I learned from her for all she had to say. But I walked a mile with sadness & never a word said she, but oh the things I learned that day that sadness walked with me!"

**12. (Tongues & weeping:) "Would that we could reach**

them with the Love of Jesus." Amen. TYJ! Lord, help us to reach them. Jesus was willing to die to help people so lonely & sad, heart-broken! Are you willing to die for 'm? Well, you may some day. I think it's worth dying to help people like that, sad & lonely & without the Lord. Are you dying for them?

**13. This is like the song of the lonely old, you know?** So many of them have lost their mate, theirs died & they're alone, & it's too late in life for them to find somebody else. Nobody to talk to, nobody to share with anymore, nobody to sleep with, just so alone without the Lord!

**14. It should break your heart!** It should make you want to do all you can to try to reach them with the Love of Jesus, amen? O Jesus, help our kids to reach those lonely lonely people, Lord! They can't do us much good, Lord, they can't do Your Kingdom much good, they can't leave their old folks' homes & go out & be witnesses; but Lord, at least we can save them in the end, on the threshold of death, from their loneliness & their sadness & their solitaire. Jesus help us, Lord!

**15. O Jesus, help us!** Help us to reach those poor lonely people who are playing solitaire so alone, so sad! They know they've hurt others & they've lost their loves, lots of times through their own fault & their own neglect. Help us, Lord, to reach them with Thy Love, Thy Message. Jesus, Jesus, Jesus! Oh Lord, help us!

**16. Help Thy little children, Lord, to have such love for them,** to cheer their hearts. They just look at them & they know there's a better World, Lord, that they came from Heaven, & they're bound for Heaven, so there must be a Heaven, to cheer & encourage their hearts.

**17. Help us to bring them the love that alleviates their loneliness, Jesus!** Lord, we don't know how to say it, we don't know what to say, but we just ask Thee to give us the love & give them the love, that they need to see them through. Even the old folks, Lord, those who are playing Solitaire, sad heart-broken World, lonely, loveless, lifeless & so all alone playing Solitaire.

**18. Help us in Jesus' Name to reach them, Lord,** with Thy precious love & the good news of happiness & love that lasts forever! Break our hearts, Lord, ache our hearts, melt us, break us,

make us compassionate, make us long to help those poor old folks!

**19. I know what it is to be a parent, to love a child. I love you, so I know how much they must love you. Even if they didn't know how or weren't right or didn't know how to show it & couldn't give you Jesus, at least I believe they loved you.**

**20. Have you showed them love? Have you written them?** Have you tried to tell them how much you love them, that you miss them, you are sorry to be away but you have to be away. Some of you don't have very far to go & you can go home for a few days for Christmas.

**21. Some of you would have an awful long ways to go home, it's too far, but at least you could write'm a loving letter, send them a little remembrance, a token of your love, & tell'm that you're sorry, you wish you could be with them but you're serving the Lord & that Jesus is with them. Someday you'll be with them forever if they'll love Him. PTL? Amen? Will you do that for me?—Or phone'm?**

**22. I know what it is to be a parent & what it is to be out of touch with your children, & children who never write you, you don't even know where they are or what's happening with them. They once lived with you & once you enjoyed their fellowship & their presence & you once did everything you could for them.**

**23. You really should write, & be a testimony, a witness & encouragement & let them know you're happy. Let them know you're serving the Lord & try to tell them how to love Jesus. Don't you think you should? Some of them already know the Lord but they're not following Him, they're not serving Him.**

**24. Some of them don't understand what you're doing, they don't understand why you're here, they don't know why you'd rather be away from home & live with us instead of them. They just don't understand the Love of Jesus & the Love of God & His Service, they don't understand it. But I think you ought to write them & try to explain it to them, try to help them understand it. The Lord can give you the words, He can give you the wisdom.**

**25. They started you, they prepared you. The Lord chose you, so they must have done something right, they must have done something good. I think you ought to give them credit for it. I think you ought to honour them. I think you ought to tell them &**

thank them & write them. I do! I love you! But I love them for making you & starting you & getting you started & aiming you—they must have aimed you the right direction somehow!

**26. Why don't you show them a little love & thanks & appreciation for at least trying to do what they thought was best & starting you in the right direction. They put you in church or Sunday School or they tried to teach you right. I think you ought to honour them, God's Word says so. (Ex.20:12.)**

**27. I think you ought to write them & tell them that you love them & thank them for all they did for you & the sacrifice they made for you & getting you started, & that you love them & that you appreciate them, & you just wish they could understand what you're doing. That you love Jesus more, that's all, you just love God more.—Not me, it's the Lord, it's Jesus. PTL?**

**28. Think about it & pray about it, OK? Did you think about your parents when you were hearing that song? That song really moved me, it really touched me for the poor, especially old folks. You so often see lonely old folks playing Solitaire. Their love is gone, their wife or husband's gone, their mate is gone, life is gone & they're just waiting to die. It's really sad, it's pitiful.**

**29. What have your parents got to live for? They lived for you to begin with, right? For years! Now you're gone & your brothers & sisters are gone, the children are gone, they have nothing left. Probably all the children are gone & they're home alone & with nobody, nothing.**

**30. All that they lived for is gone & all that they built for is gone, all they saved for is gone. It's just like life is gone. It's just like they're just waiting to die, just playing Solitaire. It's sad. You ought to have compassion for them & love for them & really love them & write them, & if you think it's necessary, even visit them. Please pray about it. I mean it, I really wish you would. (Prays:)**

**31. Help us never to forget that, Lord, & be faithful to continuously give our love to others, in the Family & outside the Family, wherever we go. We don't have to identify ourselves, Lord, we just need to show Thy Love to others, encourage & help them, heal them & lift them. In Jesus' name we ask for Thy glory.**

**32. See, if He can just break & melt your heart, then He woos & wins it & warms & melts it & makes it bright & burn-**

ing & happy!—And no longer solitaire!—Amen? PTL! TYJ! Amen!—Now go share His Love & comfort & companionship with others!—Amen?—So they'll no longer be solitaire! GBAKYAMYAB! WLY! Do it NOW!—Tomorrow may be too late!

## GOD'S AGAINST STORAGE!

DFO 1065 9/80



anything according to God's rules & laws, but since we do move a lot I think the Lord will probably make a little extra exception for us, & we do use our things quite a bit & often.

2. As the Lord has warned, "Lay not up for yourselves treasures on Earth where moth & rust doth corrupt & thieves break through & steal."—Mat.6:19.

3. In the first place I would choose a good dry place & make sure the roof doesn't leak. Make sure it also doesn't flood when it rains. Even if the roof doesn't leak, if it's in a low spot on an alley someplace where the water maybe runs down like a river when it rains, it could run right in under the door if the garage floor isn't built up higher than the surface & flood the whole garage when you're gone & not knowing it.

4. And of course it ought to be a secure place where you can lock the door securely enough that you don't expect people to break in.

5. There's nothing a thief or burglar hates as much as being seen, that's why they usually work in the dark. So if that door or window or garage door or vehicle is in plain sight of someone who might be looking out a window—they don't know, they can't

see whether they are or not, they might be or could be—they're not apt to bother it.

6. You cannot store things on the bare concrete floor of any kind of a building. If they were flat on the floor, most of them would accumulate not only dirt, bugs, probably mice, dust, lint & cobwebs, but all kinds of fungus & mildew.

7. Anything you set on the concrete will get damp & will eventually mold & rot. Most storerooms are unheated & not always waterproof or watertight, frequently flood or leak or both, & to protect your things you need protection not only over the things, like a tarp or a plastic cover or something to keep off the dirt & the dust & the bugs & the rain & the leaks, but you need to prop'm up off the floor.

8. So your best protection is to set it up on flats or build your own flats by just laying a two-by-four every three or four feet & then laying boards across the top of the two-by-four so that the stuff is therefore propped up three or four inches off the concrete, off the ground.

9. Your storage must be propped up off the ground or floor no matter what kind of ground or floor it is. It's got to be off the ground. And there has to be air able to circulate underneath it. And it must be covered, completely covered clear down to the bottom, if possible, then with rope or string or cord tied tightly around the cover, all the way around.

10. Before you put the final covering on after you've got the stuff nicely stacked off the floor, get a spray of some kind that is a bug retardant residual spray that repels bugs & is so stinky or whatever it is that the bugs or mice don't even like to get near it, & spray everything real thoroughly inside & out as much as you can, even under the pillows & everything.

11. And sometimes you can spray it with a damp resistant spray which resists damp. Because no matter how much you spray it against bugs & mice & rats, the damp will get at it & the saprophytes, of which there is a very large family & you can find them everywhere in every clime, hot or cold. You find molds & mildews & mushrooms & things like that in almost every climate.

12. Even the furniture will absorb moisture from the air if it's not covered. It will also get thick with dust. It doesn't mat-

ter where you are, there's always dust & there are always bugs. Covering doesn't completely prevent the bugs, but discourages the bugs from entering in.

13. You cannot possibly have a place that is unoccupied by human beings & nothing but a lot of storage, as the Lord Himself warned us, but what the rot & the corruption will set in—the so-called rust which covers a lot of those things—plus the thieves, which include rats, mice, roaches & everything else that chew on things. They sometimes build nests underneath in the furniture if the place has been unoccupied for a long time.

14. I'll tell you, this whole life is a fight with corruption! It's a fight with the destroyers, & you need to take good care of things & really keep them in use. I never heard of any furniture that is being constantly used & never stored in a dark place ever being touched by termites. It's always been furniture that's been stored away. Because apparently it has to be very quiet & very dark & unused for a long time in order to have this whole process, give the termites a chance to bore in, lay their eggs & hatch & all that.

15. So you see, God doesn't really like storage, He really resists storage, & you've really got to fight it pretty hard in order to make it keep. What was it the Lord didn't like about the rich men's riches? Why is it He didn't like the rust & the corruption of it or the corrosion of it or the tarnishing of the gold & the silver? (Fam: Because it wasn't being used.) Exactly, it showed it was being stored away somewhere & wasn't in circulation, it wasn't being used.—Jam.5:1-3.

16. He says it's not the gold & the silver that He would hold against the rich men, but if He caught it getting tarnished, rusty or corrupted, or corroded like iron & steel. Rust & other things corrode.

17. Well, I'll tell you, the rust & the corruption of your riches, that's what God will hold against you! You know what He's going to hold against you?—That mildew, that moss that grew on the stones, that rust on the steel, that tarnish on the gold & the silver, that mold, & the termites. He's going to hold those against you!—Because of disuse!

18. Don't blame Him, He created them to destroy what you didn't use, or let somebody else use, & He's going to blame you

for the rust & the corrosion & the tarnish & the mildew & the mold & the bugs & the termites & the roaches! If you don't keep a clean house, of course you'll have roaches! If you don't keep a clean house you'll also have mice. If you keep leaving food around & dirty floors of crumbs & food on the sink & dirty dishes in the sink at night, of course you're going to have bugs!

19. God created them to eat up what you weren't using, eat the garbage, & if you leave the garbage on the floor & the sink or on the sideboard or the kitchen table or the dining room table, God's garbagemen are going to come out tonight & try to clean it up, what you failed to clean up, believe it or not! What do you think of that?

20. But God's going to blame you if you store stuff & it gets ruined & there's a loss! It's your loss & the Family's loss because you could have shared it, given it to others.

21. So don't be a storer! I've had to kiss my stuff goodbye so many times, but the Lord always gives me more & I have to just keep forsaking all & keep getting rid of stuff because He keeps piling it on! Don't worry about not having it, keeping it, don't worry about storing it, He'll give you more.

22. The less space you have, in some ways the better off you are because you just can't carry any more than you've got space for, & then you will only carry what you absolutely need & have to have, & not a lot of other junk that you may think you might use someday or you might happen to need someday or you might need next year or all that sort of thing.

23. It is God's principle, His natural law, a natural law of His economics to make it as difficult for you as possible to store anything away for any length of time & not use it. It will be rusted or corrupted or stolen or something—if not stolen by actual human thieves, stolen by little rats & mice & rodents & bugs, all thieves—& rusted & corrupted by saprophytes or plain metallic rust.

24. God has His judgements & He'll judge you for storing stuff you don't need & aren't going to need! He knows whether you're going to use it or anybody's going to get to use it, & if you don't use it or see that somebody else uses it or keep it in circulation & in use, He'll see to it that it's destroyed no matter how hard you work on it! He's not going to let you save it for yourself sel-

fishly.

25. If you don't want to be bothered with luggering them around, it's better just to give them away. I'm a great one on just giving stuff away, sharing it, getting rid of it, & laying aside every weight that I may run the next race to the next place!—Heb.12:1.

26. Help these, Lord, to not keep anything they're not really using or aren't absolutely sure they're going to use immediately or very soon, or maybe clothing for next Winter, whatever it is, unless they know definitely, Lord, they're going to use it soon. Help them not to keep luggering it around & loading down the vehicles with it until it just nearly flattens the tires & wears us out moving it!

27. Help them, Lord, to try to eliminate stuff that they don't actually need & have to have, cut it down, like we have, to just a few personal things & the vital necessary equipment, the tools we use for office work & so on, our work of various kinds & the things we absolutely have to have every place we set up again & stop & live for awhile.

28. Please, Lord, help them to get rid of junk that's non-essential & not immediately useful & not likely to be used for a long time. Help them, Lord, to try to whittle down their luggage & their clothes & their books & their belongings & storage so we won't have to have any storage, or at least as little as possible if we do have to store it any length of time at all.

29. So help us, Lord, not to just take along stuff that we can use & is nice to have & that if we have it we will use it, but only the things that we absolutely have to have & cannot do without & are absolutely necessities & which we cannot live nor work without.—Not just a bunch of stuff, Lord, that's nice to have & useful if we've got it, but which we could do without if we had to.

30. Help us, Lord, to keep these rules in mind when we think about moving & think about storage, & if we do have some things that have to be kept for future use when we know we will need them, then help us to learn to store them properly & be good stewards of Thy goods, take good care of them & store them & protect them from moth & rust that corrupt & thieves that break through & steal, & keep them in a dry place well covered & packaged & in the proper shape & form & well-protected from all

material goods' enemies—dampness, bugs, rodents, termites, molds, mildews & all the other things that ruin the material goods, storage stored in the dark & the damp.

31. Help us, Lord, in Jesus' name not to store anything unless we absolutely have to, & not to take anything with us unless we absolutely have to have it, & to remember Thy law that the rust & corruption & mold of these things will be a testimony against us because we stored it, we didn't need it, & never used it & didn't let anybody else use it, & it got ruined! You're going to blame us for it, Lord, because it was ruined instead of giving it away, selling it, sharing with others or using it ourselves.

32. But help us, Lord, to keep the quantity & the burden down, to lay aside every weight that we don't need so we can run the race a little faster & it won't be such hard work for the boys when we move & it won't be so much trouble, it won't be so likely to get damaged in storage. Help us, Lord, in Jesus' name to remember that usually You're against storage & Your natural laws are against storage & You've created natural enemies of storage & You will even judge us by our storage, in Jesus' name. Amen. PTL! TYJ! Amen? (Family: Amen!) Will He judge you for storage?

33. I'm sure that the Family has wasted a lot of things through storage, which instead of just storing & letting it get ruined, they could have given away & let somebody use it, let somebody have it, shared it with others, other Homes, other members of the Family.

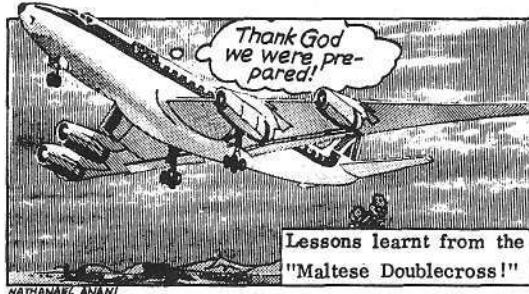
34. That's of course where you ought to give your storage first of all if you can forsake it, give it to others in the Family. And if you haven't got some poor Family members that need it, then give it to the poor neighbours or just leave it for the poor landlord.—Ha!

35. —And you're not gonna have much storage left if you don't take care of it!—It'd be better to give it away! Share it! Use it!—Or let somebody else use it!—Even if you only loan it to 'm! Keep it in use!—Don't store it if you can help it!

36. Storage is defying God's laws of sharing & usefulness! Give it away today! Tomorrow may be too late! It may be a rotten mess nobody can use!—Or be destroyed with the rotten North! Leave it! Forsake it! Go South & East today!—Amen?

## CONTINGENCY PLANS!

—Eternal Vigilance: The Price of Freedom!



DO 1104 11/78

sometimes, & not be ignorant of the Devil, the Enemy, & his devices, but always be prepared, Lord, to give an answer, have an answer & to have a plan if possible. We don't know what the future holds, but we know Who holds the future! Hallelujah!

2. You can get a false sense of security & suddenly—boom!—Then you wish you had planned or counted on something else & had kept some other options open & had some other alternatives planned. I think that's what you all need to always remember.

3. We have always tried to do that regarding our housing & our locations everywhere we have been. We've always thought, "Well, now, if we had to leave here, where would we go?"—And we studied travel books & tours & places & countries & their rules & regulations & all kinds of things, always trying to keep in mind that if we had to flee at a moment's notice we would have some idea of where would be a good place to go to next. We've always had to go sooner or later.—Why not you?

4. So just in case something comes along to upset your nice little status quo, what are your plans? What do you have planned as your next move?—And where?—And how?

5. And there'll probably be some reason why you'll have to move. That's not at all unlikely or improbable. It's not only possible, but it's quite probable, because you are aliens & foreigners & non-citizens etc. Sooner or later you are going to find that it's getting a bit hot!

6. What I would like you to do is make out a list of suggestions & plans, what they commonly call contingency plans. In other words, in case something doesn't work, what else would you try? It's better to have it & not need it than need it & not have it, so you'd better be prepared! We are in a dangerous business! We are in a war! And as far as the System is concerned, we are at war with them!

7. I want to shake you out of any false sense of security & remind you we have no security except in the Lord & we cannot trust Man whose breath is in his nostrils!—Isa.2:22. We are in a dangerous business! We are probably hated almost worse than any religious group on the face of the Earth!

8. Beloved, you've really got to conform to the way they do things & the way they want you to live or else! When they don't like you, don't want you, they will pick any kind of little speck of anything as an excuse to get rid of you! It often takes but only one person who is mad enough & ornery enough to do it!—One person who goes & complains to the authorities, & they have to act on the complaint. A lot of times the authorities will overlook situations, if nobody complains, but it only takes one complaint, then they have to do their job & carry it out & enforce the law. It only takes one complaint.

9. So to stay free, as I've always said, requires eternal vigilance—the price of freedom! Eternal vigilance is the price of freedom! Thank the Lord we have eternal security, spiritually, but on this Earth, physically, we have eternal insecurity, & you'd better remember it!—And not get too settled down & let the roots grow down too deep where you can't tear them out in a hurry if you have to, or cut them off & leave them behind!

10. I'd rather be a live fugitive than a dead hero! I've left houses & lands & goods behind many times to save my life! I never unpack my fleebag! It's always there & I live out of it, believe it or not! I have myself packed up & my papers where I could throw things in my suitcase, in my briefcase in a few minutes, & be gone! I can do it real fast—could you? Maybe you ought to practice a few times! I hope the Lord doesn't have to give you some test runs! See how many pieces of luggage you can get your flee stuff into, how fast you can get it together &

how quickly you can be out of the house & gone!

11. Well, maybe you might be already gone downtown or somewhere & phone up & find out, like we did. Would you have your stuff so organised that you would be able to tell them what to do with it & how to get it to you so you could stay away & go on your way?

12. You'd better have decided ahead of time what's expendable & what isn't, & you'd better keep them apart, keep them separate, so that you can, at a moment's notice, destroy all expendables & have the others that you cannot do without well hidden. Frankly, as far as our own family is concerned, I told them, don't keep any files two months old!—Just current files only, just to keep tab on what you're doing currently.

13. Over the years of handling the mail, we learned certain systems of security. Even if we lost pieces, we'd make sure we didn't lose either originals or copies or didn't lose track of something. We keep a strict mail log of every piece & each one is numbered & the contents of each listed, so if we lose anything we know what we lost & we are able to replace it.

14. That's an important thing to remember in handling your mail, that it's something really extremely vital & you don't want to lose track of it or lose a whole lot of work. Always remember to keep plenty of copies & always keep track of how many pieces you are sending & number them. We'd number them on the outside & stick our list on the inside, so the people receiving them can know that they are getting all of them.

15. Our authorities in our Family ought to be concerned about every area & every country & ought to be reading everything they can get on the local situation. Let me tell you, when I was in Malta, I read every word in those Maltese papers—the government paper & the opposition's paper. I wanted to know exactly what the situation was there.

16. I comb the newspapers nearly every day. You can catch a lot of new things, you can catch ideas about which way the wind's blowing, how the government's going & what they are doing about this or that & the other & what the attitude is, & atmosphere in that country, its attitude toward strangers, & a lot of times you will find things in there about what they are going to

do. We got a lot of tips & hints out of how the courts were dealing with cases & visas & all kinds of things.

17. Small towns in the country are the worst places in the World to try to hide out!—Because out in the country in small towns, they know everything that is going on. The best place in the World to get lost is a big, big, city, where nobody knows anybody & couldn't care less, that's the place to get lost!

18. We were real cautious about how we slipped out of these places. The whole mob of us didn't disappear over night. We went out in easy stages. We just slipped out one by one, two by two, until finally there were only two people left!

19. Beloved, you had better be prepared & have your stories straight & make sure they all jive, whatever they are, to answer all possible questions. How ready are you, how packed up, & how sorted out have you got your goods & papers so that if you men had to pick up & leave in a hurry—it's the men they are really after, & you usually have the least luggage—you can just pick up & vamoose!

20. As you noticed, when we get kicked out of some place it's the men they harass & the men that they beat, it's the men they jail, & the men had better be ready to take off faster than the women! They usually figure it's not the women's fault, thank God, & the women can get by with more than the men can, they can do a little FFing.

21. Would your wife be able to carry on after you & pack up, & bring the rest & be your rear-guard with the children & follow you later? Where would you go & how would you operate your work from that place & how would you carry on your business? How would you carry on your job & where do you think would be the best place for you to go temporarily if you all had to move?

22. Could you suddenly inform your constituents of a new phone number or postal address if you were in a hurry? How fast could you do it? How quickly would you reach them & how much mail would you lose in the meantime?

23. Next question, & this one is going to hurt, what nation—all do you have ready in training to take over that job if it were an emergency? Who could possibly pick up the mail for you or handle the banking for you?—Even if he didn't do anything but

carry the cheques & cash the cheques & buy the cheques, even if the accounts & all are still in your name. What do you think you could do about it & how fast, before we lost any mail or money or any personnel?—Which is more precious than anything!

24. I guess there will still always be places to go. You may not be able to stay very long, but there is always some place to go, especially if you are just going as a tourist & they don't recognise you or identify you & you stay only as a tourist & you leave as a tourist, & don't go applying for any extensions or visas. You look like a tourist & you act like a tourist & you only carry tourist luggage! Because if you're going to survive, you're going to have to learn to live with a lot less, & keep moving!

25. I've done a lot of moving lately & I've come to the point where I believe it is possible that I might have to move again. But at least, I hope, I'm ready for it now & more than we were. "They confessed that they were pilgrims & strangers on the Earth. For they sought a city whose builder & maker is God. Therefore, God was not ashamed to be called their God."—Heb.11:13,10,16.

26. That's almost the only time in the whole Bible where it almost as good as says God is proud of you! Because you are willing, in other words, to be pilgrims & strangers & keep moving for His Work's sake & His Message, move whenever He says move, stop when He says stop, & go when He says go. We're mobile messengers!—And we wouldn't have reached the World with the Message if we hadn't been. Take this warning seriously & heed it, to prepare & be always prepared, to move at a moment's notice & never get settled down too much & let our roots grow down too deep.

27. We are vagabonds & pilgrims & strangers & Gypsies, but those people have lasted the longest when many other securer nations & empires have been completely wiped out!

28. Help them, Lord, to be faithful today, not to worry but trust You! You don't have to worry about tomorrow, but He didn't say not to make plans for tomorrow.—Amen? So make the plans! In fact, maybe if you plan enough you won't worry about it, you wouldn't have to worry as much. I'd be a lot more worried if you don't plan, God bless you! TYL!—Plan NOW!—TODAY!—Tomorrow will be too late!—GHU!—Amen?

## A STRING OF PEARLS!

—Good Advice for All Fellowships!

DFO 1205 1/82



1. They say familiarity breeds contempt & "a Prophet's not without honour save in his own country amongst his own people" (Matthew 13:57), & if you get away for awhile they'll appreciate you more when you come back.

2. My Mother's greatest ministry was as an evangelist,

& most evangelists really don't make very good pastors. They need variety, they need change, they need to see new faces & new places, they need the inspiration of a new congregation every few weeks or days & that really turns them on! It's just like show business & actors & actresses & performers & singers, if they keep just singin' to the same old bunch all the time they get a little bit soured & worn out on it, & even the Alliance used to change pastors.—Not only have evangelists every year but change pastors every two years.

3. They used to say that a man has given his best to the people within two years & told 'em everything he knows & he's gotten sick & fed up with them & they're sick & fed up with him & then it's time for a change!

4. We all need a change & sometimes we don't learn the fear of God any other way, as the Scripture says, "They fear not

God because they have no changes."—Ps.55:19. You need change, everybody needs change. It gives you a chance to exercise faith & initiative & that ol' pioneering spirit & have new inspiration, new faces & new places! Variety is the spice of life & you need to get away from that grindstone & that treadmill there—which it can become when you're working that hard & really turning out the grist & the grit & the grain! It can get a little old sometimes & a bit wearing & tiring & you need a relief & a change & a rest & some variety. So I just suggest that it's about time you need to take another trip & get away from it all.

**5. It's gonna take some time, of course, to organise this tour & give each Family in each country time to arrange facilities & dates & the places to meet & house & feed them etc., because I would suggest that they be like NAFs, National Fellowships, which they're supposed to have about once a year & cover that particular area, that country, & go perhaps to the capital city of each country for this gathering.**

**6. I would suggest maybe just a weekend in each place so you'll have mid-week to rest & relax & recuperate & recover & regain your strength for the next weekend. In fact, that would even be pretty tight in some cases & you might have to just make the arrangements for every two weeks because it'll probably involve more than just a weekend in the country. You may want to go there in time to have conferences with leaders & talk & pray over their plans & problems etc. & discuss the arrangements for the meetings & the programme & all of that with them before you actually appear publicly before the Family in the actual general meetings.**

**7. So you could easily probably spend a week in each capital helping them to make the last-minute arrangements for their meetings & programmes etc. & conferring with the leaders & then having the actual general meetings with the Family for perhaps a couple of days. Maybe on Saturdays & Sundays you could have a daytime general meeting with the Family, maybe a Committee leadership meeting too somewhere in-between, & then general night meetings for watching the new videos which I'm sure they'll be thrilled to see & so you can take a little bit of a rest & not have to be the whole show all the time!**

**8. You can carry the ball & inspire'm & thrill'm with your**

wonderful inspirational talks & really sort of whip up a storm & some enthusiasm for our new plans & really encourage them & inspire them & thrill them with what they can do! You'll be going around like Saint Paul the Apostle, going back to the various churches as he did. He said, "Let's take a trip to go back & see how the brethren do."—Acts 15:36.

**9. So I don't want you to arrange your itinerary too tight & appointments too close together, a week apart would be pretty tight. I recommend that it would be better if you had them about two weeks apart, then you would be sure to have plenty of time for rest & relaxation & recuperation between them, also plenty of time to meet with leaders, have in-between leadership meetings, planning & arranging the next programme etc., the last-minute details & praying with them about their problems & helping them with their needs & maybe sometimes even dealing with their problem cases.**

**10. There are a lot of things an evangelist can do that local pastors find difficult because they have to live with the people. It's a strange thing, but this is one purpose of evangelists. They will take it from an evangelist when they won't even take it from their own pastor. An evangelist usually has more authority & can even tell the pastor off if he needs it!**

**11. I strongly recommend the two-hour meeting at the longest! I've found lately with the local Family here that our one-hour inspirational meetings are even better.**

**12. Cut your meetings short, learn to keep & do things on time! Learn to start on time, learn to keep the schedule moving, the programme moving according to a certain definite schedule if you possibly can. Try to organise a schedule & a programme & try to stick to it. Now, I can't say that you're always going to be able to do it. Sometimes if you get really inspired & the Lord takes over & something happens that you didn't even plan but God did, you can always do that, you know.**

**13. You don't want to go to the opposite extreme where you're just absolutely hide-bound to dismiss punctually on the point no matter what's going on if things have cut loose & the Spirit really is free & people are really having a good time. You've got to judge that according to the situation & play it by**

ear & go along with whatever way the Spirit is moving.

**14. You may think you can take it & you may be able to carry on that long & you get under the inspiration of the Spirit or your own spirit & the thrill of being there & the fellowship & you get carried away & you carry on too long, but then afterwards you nearly collapse. Do not push the poor people too hard & too long so that they are going to groan the next time they hear you're coming & think of those long torturous ordeals called meetings!**

**15. When we were in evangelistic work we usually counted on a meeting being not more than about an-hour-&-a-half.** That was the standard average, which was about all we could stand & all the people could stand. We started at 7:30 & we tried to wind it up as close as we could to 9:00 dismissal & then we always had, of course, an after-service with the people at the altar & praying for the sick or praying for souls to be saved or dealing with problem cases, & we were usually there another half-an-hour to an hour.

**16. So if you don't keep your public meeting short** you're going to find out that your dealing with people afterward & praying with people afterwards & dealing with cases of sickness or salvation or problems or leaders or whatever is going to stretch out your own participation so long that you're going to run into two or three hours anyway.

**17. They wouldn't mind coming back again the next time if you let'm out early.** But if you started stretching out the meetings too late, then they got weary very fast & then they'd stop coming & your crowd dwindled & your congregation of hearers dwindled.

**18. So try to cut it short & stick to a programme schedule that will not wear you out either,** you or your congregation, nor you & the people in the after-service which you'll almost always have. If you didn't have it with people at the altar praying for the sick or souls, usually you had it with the leadership or the pastor, & we'd go out then after the service for a snack or to his house & have another conference with him & his wife or the elders & that'd be another hour.

**19. I'd almost recommend one meeting each two weeks** to really give you plenty of time to make plans & arrangements & give yourself travel time & rest-up time after your trip before you

meet with the leaders to plan your programme, & then plenty of time for your public meetings & committee meetings, leadership meetings during the weekend & then maybe some after-meetings with needy cases or leadership when the public meetings are over.

**20. You're going to have to have maybe a day for goodbye & a day for travel & a day for rest**—there's three days gone right there in-between your weekend meetings. A meeting every weekend would keep your schedule very tight. You may find that you may have to stretch some of them out a little longer & maybe due to the programmes & dates & arrangements for facilities you may happily find out that you're glad some of the meetings are two weeks apart, although you may have to push it with some & may have to have some of them a week apart. I'd say at least a week apart & not more than two weeks apart if possible. (Unless it's a one-week NAF.)

**21. That gives you plenty of time to rest & recuperate in-between,** get refreshed, take care of your mail, phone calls, communication, reports & tours of the city to show us the sights of the city via video & what it's like there etc.

**22. There are so many things you, as an evangelist, can discuss with the people!** We were always having to have private discussions. Somebody would say, "I've just got to see you!" A sister might want to have a talk with you & prayer with you about a certain problem—maybe she had a problem with the pastor or the preacher's wife or her husband, or maybe she was just tired of the place & wanted to go someplace else & wanted to know where she could go or something.

**23. There are always people who'll want to have private sessions with you,** private conversation, a private prayer & discuss something they don't even want to discuss before the leaders or the local people, & they need to talk to somebody. You're the visiting evangelist & you're the ear they're looking for & waiting for to hear their pleas!

**24. They can't appeal to the local judges** because they've already judged them & maybe don't like them & maybe there's good reason for it, so they're waiting for an outside judge to come in & judge their case. That way you can also give much better unprejudiced judgement because you don't know the case or

hardly anything about it, or maybe the leader has told you something but then you can judge for yourself.

25. Sometimes we found out it wasn't problem people, it was problem preachers, problem pastors! A pastor would tell us about some problem case he had in the congregation & it turned out that he was the problem when we heard the person's story! So as an evangelist you are also like a district superintendent & you have to hear some of these people's problems & some of their stories & get their side of the story & their case as well as the leadership side.

26. So I suggest you give them some time & try to talk to as many people as you can who want to speak to you privately about something, & reserve some time for them. And be sure you get both sides of the story! There are always two or three or more sides to the story. Usually there's their side of the story, then there's the preacher's side of the story, & maybe even one of the congregation members has a different tale to tell from the problem case & the preacher & he sees it in a different light! Maybe he sees that both of them have problems & they both need dealing with.

27. That's part of your job as a travelling evangelist, to counsel & pray with people about their personal problems. So you should try to arrange your schedule so it will give you enough time for all of these things & ministries that you will have as you go from place to place as an evangelist. You can pastor, & many an evangelist has pastored, but most evangelists do not make as good pastors as the ones who are really called to be pastors themselves.

28. Pastors have to be plodders with lots of patience & easier on people, more lenient. They live with them, they usually understand their problems better & they're more merciful, can put up with more. Evangelists are kind of hit-&-run people who come in & lay it on the line & sock it to 'm & slice away, sometimes without mercy—& sometimes they need it—& sock it to 'm & then hit-&-run, & the people can only stand so much of them too! That's why they usually only have evangelistic meetings about once a year in most churches. They can't stand having it socked to them that hard too often.

29. But it's the evangelist's job to sock it to 'm & say things

to them that the preacher wouldn't dare say to them or they'd kick him out! But they expect it & they need it & sometimes they even want it. They want to be told the truth but they don't want their own preacher or pastor telling them because they've got to live with him. But they don't mind your telling them off & socking it to them because you're a stranger & they're willing to take it from you since they don't have to take it all year.

30. So there's a general idea on what I would consider fairly good meeting plans. I'm just speaking generally, of course. The specifics, the actual times & all that will be up to the local folks & their situation & when they can book the meeting hall or the hotel diningroom or campground or whatnot. And don't forget, a lot depends, as I say, on how much the neighbours can stand. It can't go running on late at night with a noisy meeting with neighbours that you're going to annoy as well. So the length of your meetings & how much noise they can take depends a great deal on the place & the neighbours & the management & the help etc., so you'd better watch your step.

31. Finally on this tour I'd suggest you go just the shortest distance between two points, a straight line to the next capital & you just hop around from the capital central city of each country only. Make it a NAF, a weekend Nationwide Fellowship Meeting, & come prepared to stay for the weekend.—Maybe coming in on Friday night to rest up for Saturday's meetings & maybe staying through Sunday night & take off & go home on Monday. (Or make it a whole week NAF if possible.)

32. So have a little heart for your poor people & their physical needs & their physical limitations. "The Spirit indeed is willing but the flesh is weak!"—Mt.26:41. Don't forget it, & have a little consideration for their poor tired weary flesh, amen? Lots of those dear people would've loved to have had us go on & on through the night but they just couldn't stand it physically.

33. You're going to need time to arrange the itinerary & the schedules & correspond & communicate with all those leaders in order for them to try to set up their schedule of meetings or NAFs so that you can go right from one to the other without having to go too far between & waste too much time & space & money on too long hops.

34. This is the thing that really cost us the money in evangelistic work if we couldn't arrange our meetings so that they would be on a sort of a circle tour.—If we had to make too long hops criss-cross back & forth instead of going right to the next nearest place. So try to do them in the chain reaction style & not the scatter shot style.

35. *String your beautiful pearls of meetings on short strings & they'll fit better!*—And don't make the pearls so big & heavy that they're so hard to bear they wear'm out! OK? No matter how beautiful they are, enough is enough! Make'm a string of pearls & not a hard & heavy yoke for poor folks already over-burdened. Have a heart! Have a string of pearls!

## LOVE COVERS A MULTITUDE OF SINS!

—1Peter 4:8

DFO 1247 9/77



1. When Mama Eve began to belittle me & criticise me not only before my children but even before some of our converts & some of our new disciples, she was finished! It showed that she no longer loved me by the fact she no longer respected me. She no longer cared if she hurt me right in front of others & undermined my influence on them by undermining their confidence in me. That's one of the worst things in the World you can do, especially to a public leader or to a teacher or pastor or a father or a husband!—To undermine faith & confidence in their leadership!

2. It's terrible because it shows the man that you don't love him if you criticise him. It's bad enough to criticise him in private to his face, constantly belittling him & picking on him like Eve did to me for 25 years. Constantly! I mean, I never preached a sermon but what afterwards she'd tell me, "You said all the

wrong things, you did this & you did that! You should have said this, you shouldn't have said that!"

3. Well, pretty soon it begins undermining your own confidence in yourself until you feel like, "Well, I can't seem to do anything right. I do everything wrong so I might as well quit!" I figured I was a failure as a preacher, my own wife said so! She *convinced me that I was a failure & she spent most of her life constantly trying to convince me that I was a failure!*

4. By the time we got to Grandmother's, believe it or not, just before my greatest ministry was to begin, she had me just virtually fully convinced that I was a flat-out full failure! I couldn't do anything right—I couldn't teach right, preach right, I was a total failure spiritually. I was carnal, I didn't pray or read my Bible *enough, blah, blah, everything else!*—*She totally discouraged me!*

5. She was wanting me to be somebody great for the Lord but she went about it in the wrong way, just critically all the time. Well, I took it & I agreed with her & I was pretty much convinced that she was right. But when she started doing this in front of others, that was the end as it showed she not only had no hope for me personally, but she didn't mind telling the World, she didn't mind telling everybody I was a flat-out total failure! She was criticising me before others & even telling me off & getting mad right before our very first disciples!

6. Well, it was the beginning of the end! She did it in public one night, but when she got home & began to sock it to me at the end, I slapped her face! I never laid a hand on her before in my life, but I slapped her & I knew it was the absolute hand of God! I said, "I don't care what you think I am or I am not, God's Word says that you are to respect & obey your husband!"—And I quoted a string of Scriptures on how a wife should behave & how she should obey me etc., the things that she had to obey me on.

7. I think it began to wake her up a little bit because she never tried that again. (Maria: But it was just about the end?) Well, she almost did one more time when the Cruiser was behind Grandmother's cottage just before you came. That's when I prayed so desperately that God would send me another woman who would help me, because this woman was now nothing but a hindrance!

**8. In bed with her one night I wanted to make love—she'd been away, off & on, always running around—& she almost cursed me! She began to berate me, "Oh, you're so carnal, why do you always have to have so much sex & be so fleshly? You're never walking in the Spirit, you're not in the Spirit, you're just always nothing but in the flesh" etc. etc.**

**9. I believe the Spirit of God rose up & I slapped her face again!** I said, "I don't care what you say, the Bible says 'Wives, submit yourselves unto your husbands as unto the Lord' (Eph.5:22), & if I want sex you're not supposed to deny it or refuse it or argue about it or condemn me for it & call me all kinds of names & carnal & fleshly & everything else, but you're supposed to submit!"—Amen?—That's Bible!—1Pet.3:1a.

**10. She went through all those years with all the suffering & all the privation & paid all the price & another woman got the prize!** Why? All because of her lack of faith & her lack of love. She had no love for me, she had no faith in me; therefore she had to take the loss.

**11. Just as I was about to launch into the greatest part of our ministry she lost me!** God had to send me somebody who had faith in me, who trusted me & really loved me no matter what I was—& even helped me to believe both in God & His Will for me, & that He could do something with me. She restored my faith in myself that God could still use me & that God wasn't finished with me.

**12. Along came Maria with her love for me!** God gave her the faith for me that I could still be used of the Lord and still do something for God. And she made me, in a way, like a little child forcing me to exercise that faith and my gifts from the Lord, because I just didn't dare disappoint her. Like a little child, how could you disappoint him by not being or doing what he expects?

**13. I had to do it, I had to! I had to meet the level of her faith!** She was a babe & I couldn't disappoint her, I had to deliver, so I got desperate with God & asked God to help me deliver, & I delivered! (Maria: Babes are good for some of our leaders, to get them on the ball!) Amen! PTL! GBY & give you someone with faith in you!

## **DECEIVERS, YET TRUE!**

DO 1248 6/79

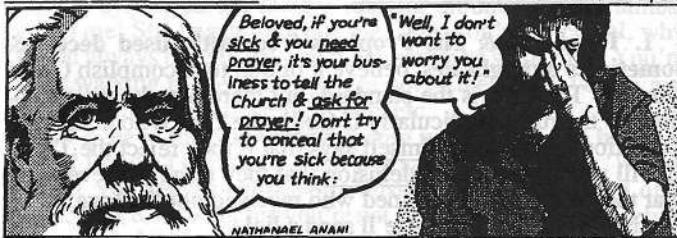
**1. The Lord & His Prophets frequently used deceit & sometimes outright lies, believe it or not, to accomplish God's purpose.** The Law is the standard, but there are always exceptions to the rules, particularly if God's the One Who makes the exceptions! The Lord Himself says that if they reject the Truth, "I will send them strong delusion that they might believe a lie, that they might all be damned who received not the love of the Truth." (2Th.2:10-12.)—He'll send a lie!

**2. God Himself is going to lie to them & deceive them because they refused the Truth & they were wicked & deserve to believe a lie because they didn't want to believe the Truth!** So God lied to them & deceived them & deluded them & damned them! What better proof can you have than that?—God sometimes uses lies!

**3. (Maria: "Deceivers yet true!"—2Cor.6:8.)** Yes, I remember Josh always used to like to use that Scripture, being that we are deceivers yet true. (Maria: So you have to find a proper balance. Some people get off too much on the other side, lying about every little thing.) Yes, some people get in a habit of lying about every little thing!

**4. I hate to lie & very rarely in my life have done it!** It hurts me, it bothers me, but if I have to do it to save my life, I might do it! And in a few instances, although I have not outright lied, I have deceived or I have said something that I knew they would believe I meant one thing when I really meant another, deliberately, in order to save some situation or spare someone or in order to escape some situation or whatever. It's very serious. (Maria: But normally you don't make it a habit.)—Amen! I hate it!

**5. If you have to lie to save a life, I think it's worth it!** And I think the people who would strain at a gnat of a little lie at a time like that & swallow a camel of costing someone's life are just hypocritically self-righteous!—And let somebody go to prison or torture or death just because they weren't willing to tell one little falsehood to save them! But I certainly don't recommend it & it would be in the absolute extreme emergency, just like it was with our folks in Malta. (See No. 797!)—Amen? GHU!



1. Beloved, if you're sick & you need prayer, the ideal time to ask for it is at dinner time when the Family is together & we can lay hands on you & pray for you! It says, "Call for the elders of the church."—Ja.5:14. In other words, call for the heads of the church. We're the heads of this church. Call for us! Ask for prayer! It's a sign of your faith in the Lord.

2. The Lord commands it because thereby it becomes a testimony to the whole Family when the Lord answers prayer. If you just go sneaking around asking for prayer behind people's backs & somebody here & somebody there & you don't want everybody else to know you're sick, that's pride.

3. If you're sick it's your business to tell the church & ask for prayer! Number one, it's a sign of your knowing you're dependent on the Lord, & number two, it's a sign that you have faith in prayer. Number three, it is necessary to let others know. It says, "Bear ye one another's burdens & so fulfill the law of Christ."—Ga.6:2. And finally, it's a testimony when the Lord answers prayer!—It's just not right to try to keep it a secret.

4. (Maria: And also any symptoms of illness could be the beginning of something that you could give to somebody else!) Especially if there's fever & sore throat & griping & all the rest. I don't know why anyone should want to conceal the fact that they're sick! (Maria: Even if you feel unusually weak, that's usually the beginning of sickness.)

5. Don't try to conceal it from us because you don't want us to worry about it. If you're sick we need to worry about it. (Maria: Yes, because if we don't know you're feeling bad we might make you sicker by making you work! Even though this

boy was sick in the night he had to get up early because we had plans for him to do something which we wouldn't have made otherwise.) It's just really very foolish not to say you're sick.

6. (Maria: Well, I'm mad at him because I told him several times not to keep any secrets!) Well, he doesn't want to worry you, but that is not sufficient motive.

7. My God, tell us when you're sick! When I don't feel like it I just flatly tell her, "I'm too tired, I don't want to do it!—Sorry!"—OK? Thanks! GBAKY!

## THE NEW NRO VISION!

DO 1279 9/82

—National Reporting Offices!



1. My original dream was that there would be a Combo in each country that would have adequate VSs & NASs who could really tend to the people better locally. When trouble comes, it's not going to be quite so easy for everybody in a country to send their report outside of the country. It might be a lot easier to get one Letter through even by courier from a National Supervisor, VS & NAS combination. In other words, we're going to have to push it down lower on lower levels & lower people. We now have it more or less down to a Continental level, at least, with the CROs (Continental Reporting Offices). (Maria: We've got the VS Com-

bos already in a lot of places.)

2. Well, I have just been thinking & praying that it's been a year-&-a-half since we started the Fellowships, since we started having them organise locally—which is what it amounts to—up to a National scale. We've had VSs for a long time, & the VSs & NASs by this time should have pretty well sorted out their areas of jurisdiction & spheres of administration. Some of them have got Combos set up already, so I think it's time to begin to push more responsibility down lower, taking it off of our backs & off of the CROs at the Continental level, & pushing it more down to the National level.

3. So I think we ought to start pushing the responsibility down to the lower level & take some of the load off of the backs of the present CROs! It's even possible in so doing—if we were able to spread it out enough—to push the reading of the reports down to the local level. That's the thing I'm particularly concerned about: The reading, analysing & study of these individual reports really should be done on a closer level to the people who are reporting, & my suggestion would be as close to the National level as possible.

4. It needs to be done more on a local level in local areas where they know the field, the people, the problems & are better able to solve them & make suggestions & recommendations & supervise them or even visit them if they have to—locally! We need better local shepherding!

5. Between the VSs & the NASs & the Fellowship Revolution we were hoping to get sufficient organisation locally, that there would be better local shepherding. Well, we now need to do that & make sure it's being done, & the only way we're going to be able to do that, I believe, is by having the people report locally to a local National Shepherd.

6. It's pushing the whole job down to within-the-country supervisory operation by the locals, by the Nationals, by the people within the country who know the country, the people, the language, the situation, the problems & everything & can much more closely scrutinise & supervise the local people & their problems & their needs etc.

7. These National Supervisors, or Snoopervisors, will be

like field superintendents. Maybe we could call him a National Shepherd, but we already have a National Area Shepherd! Maybe the NAS will be the one, or someone else who's got the office & sufficient office staff to receive the National reports directly on a local level from the local people where they've got time & there's not so many reports to have to study!

8. The National Supervisors might be the same as the VS or the NAS, or he might be an entirely different man who isn't busy with Fellowships & visiting. For the sake of convenience I'll call him the National Supervisor for the time being, & he would be the head of the National Reporting Office to whom the individual Reports of Homes would come directly within the country, the stats tabulated locally & the funds taken care of by the bookkeeper & banker, all done on a local National basis. Then he would write a National Report each month to send on to the CRO.

9. This is what I was looking forward to then, that we needed to bring out the local talent & local officers & local leadership or we couldn't even do this! This is what I was dreaming of then, & now it's coming into being & in a lot of places already going well. Now we need to start giving them more responsibility—administrative responsibility, financial responsibility, bookkeeping responsibility of stats etc. We need to push this responsibility down to the National level & have National ROs.

10. But we need a National Supervisor whose main job would be the same as the Continental ROs do now: To receive, open & read reports, have his bookkeeping staff tabulate stats, & a banker do the banking! This would eliminate a lot of problems in the matter of local currencies & recycling as well.

11. His main job would be to study & analyse those local reports & supervise what's going on in his whole country from the national bird's-eye-view, to really supervise his field more closely, administer the needs of the field, coordinate the various activities of the field etc., & to kind of supervise the whole works!—The VS, the NAS, & the National Reporting Office.

12. And once his bookkeepers have tabulated the stats & funds & those are disposed of, his main job will be to sit down & really study those reports & pray over them & analyse them & decide what needs to be done in each individual case of each in-

dividual Home, even to see if they need any particular help. He can write them letters advising them on their problems or even suggest the VS pay them a visit to settle difficulties.

13. **He will supervise the NAS on what he's doing & make sure he's doing his job, make sure the VS is doing his job, make sure the Homes are taken care of & just be the general Field Superintendent or National Supervisor of each national field or group of fields—depending on the number of the Homes—so that he'll be able to do a really good, thorough, prayerful, spiritual job of shepherding the sheep locally on a more local level.**

14. **This is the thing I'm concerned about: The reports are being handled by people too far away.** In the first place, the Continental ROs do not really have the time to thoroughly read & analyse & pray over those reports & all their problems & write them individual letters about what to do about it & all that sort of thing. They couldn't possibly have time to do that! I know! They've got too many reports to handle. They've each got two, three or four hundred reports or more & it's absolutely physically impossible to do it! About all they can do is tabulate the stats & the finances & shove'm off!

15. **The National Supervisor can handle the local problems better in his own country.** He knows the country, the people, the laws, the problems, the language & it can all be done on a more local level. This is bringing supervision down to where it belongs on the local field—which is what we were trying to do through the VSs & the NASs. But now even the VSs & NASs need supervision!

16. **The National Supervisor actually would be more along the VS line as far as being responsible to us is concerned, because in a sense, he's paid by us & his office is supervised directly by us; but it could be that the NAS is the better man.** (Maria: He might just be able to get a set of bookkeepers in there & then continue to do his job with the addition of the extra work.) Whoever it is, however it works out, whatever is best, the point is, we need National Supervisors! The Alliance called them District Superintendents at home & Field Supervisors on the field.

17. **He's got to be an office man who is in direct contact with us!** (Maria: Or have an office man, right?) Yes, he's got to

supervise a local National Office which collects reports, tabulates the stats, banks the funds, studies, analyses & prays over the reports & their problems & their praises & all the rest, & if any questions need to be answered, any phone calls in emergencies need to be made or letters need to be written immediately, he is right there & he can handle the local situation!

18. **I want the reports to go to the National Office directly, immediately, where they'll get those reports within a few days & be able to take action on them right away before the little problem becomes a big problem!**—Where they can do immediate supervision, give immediate answers, take immediate action right there & then on the local level!—Now!

19. **It is impossible for the Continental ROs to handle the contents of the reports regarding problems, situations, questions & things which require administration & attention locally, Homes which want answers, areas which want help, local situations which need immediate action.** This has got to be handled on a more local level, that of a National Reporting office on the National level where they get the reports in just a few days & can immediately take action on them as they're being read locally by people who know the people, the Homes, the situation, the problems, everything, & can take immediate action on them, administer their needs immediately, shepherd them immediately, answer their questions immediately, take care of their sheep immediately, feed their sheep immediately, whatever they need right now!

20. **The NRO will have a staff who are not only bookkeepers to tabulate stats & finances, & bankers to handle the funds, but the National Supervisor will either have the time himself personally to study thoroughly & read every report, or good helpers, secretaries or a wife or somebody who can share them with him & study those reports!**

21. **—Not only just quickly grab their stats & their money & run, but have time to sit down & really study those reports & everything they say & analyse their problems, analyse their needs, answer their questions, take action on any situations or emergencies immediately, there, on the spot, now!** Grab the phone! Write a letter! Make a visit or send the VS or the NAS or whatever!—Immediate local action!

22. It's got to be done locally & at the very least on the national level where they receive the reports directly, immediately, one or two or a few days after the first of the month. The bookkeepers tabulate stats & the finance men handle the money & get that out of the way, while the National Supervisor or administrator sits down & really studies & reads—either he or his wife or both or their secretary—or if there are so many reports he can't read them all, maybe he farms'm out or parcels them out to the VSs & the NASs & they all sit down & really study those reports & everything they've got to say: Problems, victories, emergencies, questions, answers, everything!

23. This man does not have to be a public personality & a leader of meetings! He may not ever have to have anything to do with public shows or entertainment or Area Fellowships, because his main job will be an office job, glued to his desk & his eyes glued to the reports!

24. But he must be spiritual, he must have a heart for the sheep, be a genuine shepherd at heart & be concerned about the problems enough to thoroughly read their individual reports himself, individually & personally—&/or his wife, &/or his secretary, &/or his VSs or NASs or whoever it may be—to make sure those reports are read immediately, individually for their content!—Not just the content of stats & finances, but their content of the heart & problems of the people personally!

25. He has to be able to have a heart for those people & be concerned about them enough to immediately grab the phone, if it's an emergency, & answer their problem; or if it can wait a few days or a week, write a letter & try to give them answers or action or help or some kind of suggestions.

26. If it's a Fellowship problem, send a NAS! If it's an individual Home problem, send the VS! If it's an organisational problem between VSs or NASs or whatever, call a Board meeting or an Administrative meeting of NASs, VSs & top personnel to discuss what should be done about it.

27. We need more local organisation & supervision & shepherding on the local level! It's gotten too big for anybody to handle on the Continental level, & the first step right now is at least: Let's get it down to the National level. Let the National Of-

fice receive the reports directly & pass the stats & the finances, whatever they don't need locally, on to the Continental RO; then let the Continental RO be an office that handles nothing but National Reports that they can quickly tabulate & handle their stats & finances, & their condensed National reports of conditions in the field as well. The Continental ROs don't have to read every single individual report, that's got to be done on a local level. They should only read National reports.

28. We have got to push it down lower, & we have got to do it now, or soon, in order to get the administration, supervision & shepherding of the local Homes down to the local level where the reports will be read much more quickly, thoroughly & prayerfully because there will be so few of them. They're sitting right there on top of the local scene & certainly have a greater natural concern for them & knowledge of them & knowledge of possible solutions than any Continental Office could have.

29. The National Supervisor is not going to be able to leave his National Office, he's got to stick there & supervise the whole National work: VSs, NASs & Area Fellowships. He's sort of a field Supervisor of everything, but his main job will be to handle the local reports, their stats, finances, needs & problems!

30. No matter who he gets to do it, that National Supervisor will be responsible to get it done, period! (Maria: But will he still be able to travel if he has people taking care of the office?) If he has a good office there with a good staff that can handle those things, if he still has to do some travelling as a Field Superintendent, yes, of course. But he's got to see that it's done! He can't be so busy travelling & visiting local situations that he hasn't got time to read the reports!

31. I'd much prefer to see a man who is tied to his desk in the National Office & does nothing but study & read & analyse & pray over the reports, & get other people to do the action, & appoint other people to do the visitation, other people to make the phone calls. But he sits there at the top of the heap & he merely takes executive action to see that it gets done! I don't want him running around all over the country trying to do it himself! (Maria: But see, it's got to be the top person of the country that would do this, & the VS is the top person!)

32. The VS or the NAS is the top leader of the country, so therefore he is going to have to appoint somebody else to do his old job, he can't do it any more. He has done it, so he knows it, so he knows who can now do it for him! There can be exceptions where it requires his more mature judgement or even presence or leadership ability to handle an emergency situation where he could depart from his office for a day or two & go help the guy take care of it, but normally I would rather see him stick to that office & that desk & be there where we could get him on the telephone & where he's not out somewhere in the field, God knows where & how long it'll be before he gets back to even get his mail or read his reports or take care of his job!

33. He can turn the stats over to a secretary & the finances over to a bookkeeper, but he or his wife or whoever he can get to help him need to sit down & read those letters & reports right then & there that very day they came from the Post Office & take care of that situation immediately, right then, if he has to telephone or do whatever is necessary to be done NOW!—Today! On the spot! That's what I'm talking about.

34. I want him right there on the spot doing the job every minute, every day, minute-after-minute, hour-after-hour, day-after-day there at his desk taking care of those individual reports & memorising them if he has to, so he knows every single Home like a book & can take care of every single Home. He knows the people by his reading of their reports, he knows their problems, he knows that this is something that comes up all the time & is always bothering them or bothering him & he's able to take care of it.

35. He knows every situation, every local Shepherd! He's got the knowledge & the head & the heart to take care of those sheep locally, & he's always there! They know they can pick up the phone & call him if they have to! They know that they can always get in touch with him immediately if they have a need or a problem or a question—immediately!

36. The reports will keep him busy for the first two weeks, & the other two weeks he will have enough organisational problems, Area Fellowship problems, VS Reports back from the Homes, this condition, that condition to keep him busy! He is going to have enough shepherding responsibilities to keep him

busy fulltime, moment-by-moment, hour-by-hour, 24 hours a day, seven days a week, 30 or 31 days a month!

37. They need somebody locally who can help take care of them & who will be able to answer them locally & not have to wait for a Letter from me, because the time will come & may come soon when they will not be able to get a Letter from me. And my God, for most of these needs we don't have the time now for them to get a Letter from me! They've got the Letters! There's hardly a question I'm getting now that can't already be answered by the Letters, by somebody who really knows the Letters.

38. And the more & more this World situation develops, the more it is going to be needed! I'm thinking about the time when we could be cut off completely & the International publications could be cut off completely!—They then could handle their problems on the Continental level & even down to the National level without our help if necessary. They've got the Letters, they've got the guidelines, they've got the Lord, they've got the Holy Spirit, & if they are completely cut off & isolated as a nation—which is very possible & likely during a major war or emergency or calamity—they can handle their own situation on a local level.

39. Many an officer in an Army prefers the front & the action & the battle & to be in the thick of the fight, because that's where he can shine & where he sees his fulfillment. But he has to be picked out for a Colonel or a General to manage that field & the guys in the field because he knows it like nobody else, & he knows the situation!

40. He knows what they ought to do because he has been there himself & he knows how to do it, therefore he can tell other people how to do it now! And even though he doesn't like his office desk job & being an arm-chair General, like it or not, he's got to do it because he's the only man that knows it & knows how to do it & can do it! He's going to have to find & train somebody else to do his old job for him! This has always been our policy: Teach others, to teach others, to teach others!—2Tim.2:2.

41. If you haven't already taught somebody to do your job, you have failed at the job already! So he is now going to have to teach somebody to do his old job & he is going to have to move a step upward & supervise them to make sure they do the job!

42. They should be someone who can pick up the phone & say: "What's the question?—OK: Letter number so-&-so, that's your answer! Read it!"—Somebody who knows the Letters, somebody who knows the Lord, somebody who knows the field & who can act as the genuine Shepherd of that field with a heart & the knowledge & the experience & the ability for the job. We've had some years now to develop VSs, we've had almost a couple of years now to develop Area Shepherds, so we should have found sufficient leadership by this time to be able to do these jobs.

43. This is something I've been thinking & praying about for years, something I tried to put into operation under the Chain: More local supervision, push the administration down to the local level with more dispersion, decentralisation, local Shepherds etc.

44. I think now we have developed a new leadership that we're going to have to trust, & the closer the End gets, the more we've got to push the local shepherding down to local Shepherds who are there on the scene & can take care of it without us if necessary!—Even without me or you or the publications or anything! It's apt to come to that, at least for awhile.

45. My heart aches, it weeps, it breaks for those poor little people down at the bottom who have nobody to look to & don't know who to ask—maybe the VS, maybe the NAS—and they don't know what they're doing half the time! They don't know for sure who they should go to to solve their problems, ask questions & phone to an emergency. Nobody really has that definite local overall responsibility.

46. They need to have one man, one shepherd of the sheep, one person—or he & his staff—to be able to sit down & memorise those reports & learn to know the people personally. They're right there in their own country, they've already been a VS or a NAS, they've travelled all over, they know the Homes & situations.

47. They know the areas, they know the Fellowships, they've seen the people, they know what they're like personally face-to-face! They know them, they know, therefore, what they need to do about it! They can do local shepherding on the local level! It's got to be, whether we like it or not, & the time is now!

48. And we still need the NASs to carry the load of the various Fellowships. That's a fulltime job in itself, to supervise

the local & various regional Fellowships, & make sure they have 'm, & make sure they have 'm right & in the right places & supervise'm & probably attend as many as they can. The NAS should be a road-man in a way, only he's not visiting the local Homes like the VS, he's visiting the various Fellowships instead.

49. The VS & the NAS are both road men, the right & left hands of the National Supervisor, & they report back to him what the conditions are, the people & everything. He's the National clearing office for all the information. He knows everything, he knows the people, he knows a lot of them personally, he knows the local situations, he's been a VS or a NAS already himself so he knows their problems, he knows the towns, the areas, the language, the people, he knows it all—or he should! He's got to! If he doesn't know it already, he's gonna know it! Amen? That's the burden of my heart today & I just can't hold it!

---

## WHO IS ASHRAF?

—What's in a Name?

DFO 1405 2/83



1. When you're dealing with demonology & demons & exorcism or the attacks of the Enemy, it's very important sometimes to know its name, if possible. Find out or determine the name of the demon who is attacking, & then command them by name with authority in the name of Jesus Christ, & they have to obey! The demons are subject unto us. (Mat. 10:1; Mk.3:15, 16:17; Luk.9:1, 10:17-19) Evil

spirits can be cast out by us & rebuked by us or driven away by us if they are causing an attack.

2. I'm quite sure I was not possessed by this demon because the attacks only occurred very rarely from the outside, not within my own spirit or mind, but just attacking an organ of my body, as Satan sometimes will do & can do to afflict you & cause you trouble.

3. Job & Paul & many other great heroes of the Bible suffered such attacks. Job was tested by the Enemy with the permission of God (Job 1:6-12), & Paul had a "thorn in the flesh", an evil spirit, "a messenger of Satan", that afflicted him, but did not possess him, but which he apparently couldn't even get rid of because, as he described it, he thought perhaps it was to keep him humble because he'd had such great revelations & experiences with the Lord!—2Cor.12:7; 1Sam.18:10.

4. So this attacker kept annoying me off & on for about four years from that time when she first came under the name of the Sphinx, & which we ferreted out in a revelation from the Lord at that time, finding out who she was, & rebuked her power over Davidito, not realising she was going to attack me next!

5. It's very important when you're exorcising or rebuking evil spirits that you command them not only by name & to get out, but to get away from where you are, out of also the house, & even name some other place to which they should go!

6. "All power is given unto Me in Heaven & in Earth", Jesus said (Mt.28:18), & we have Jesus, so we have His power, so that even the evil spirits & demons are subject unto us, as the Apostles soon discovered after they started following Christ! (Mat.10:1; Lk.9:1; 10:17-19; Acts 8:7)

7. The Lord is very concerned that you understand all of these things & that you know how to deal with them & that you be enlightened on these subjects in order that you can face down the Devil & his demons & resist them & cast them out & rebuke them & drive them away & get rid of their annoyances & pestering & afflictions!—Especially now that you're going to Southern mission fields where they're rife & plentiful & very common & very powerful, because not many people know how to deal with them.

8. In fact, in the Southern fields they're even worshipped & venerated & sacrificed to & whole religions are built upon some of these evil gods & goddesses of the demon World, the Devil's own officers & leaders & angels & Archangels.

9. Well, PTL! But you say, "Why get into all this stuff about demons & the Devil & Hell & all his dirtywork?" Well, we must not be ignorant of his devices (2Cor.2:11) & we must be able to know how to handle him & his demon powers & how to protect ourselves from them & how to rebuke & get rid of them when necessary in their attacks, & to understand how Satan's World operates.

10. Satan's powers are very real, & yet not to be feared, much less worshipped, but to be resisted & rebuked & exorcised & gotten rid of & reproved & cast out & sent away, so that they won't bother us, once you have learned whatever lesson God is allowing them to teach you by affliction. "Many are the afflictions of the righteous, but the Lord delivereth him out of them all", thank the Lord. King David said, "Before I was afflicted I went astray: but now have I kept Thy Word."—Ps.34:19, 119:67.

11. So all of this is for your benefit to help you understand how the Enemy works so you'll know how to defeat him, & to know the formula that God has made very clear in His Word, how to handle the attacks of the Enemy, how to resist Satan so he'll flee from you, how to lift up the standard of the Holy Spirit against him. "When the Enemy comes in like a flood, the Spirit of God will raise a standard against him!"—Jam.4:7; Isa.59:19.—You must know what the standard is & how to use it, the Word of God!

12. It is also definitely helpful, as any experienced exorcist will tell you, to know the name of the demon, devil or evil spirit with whom you're dealing. Because if you speak to them by name & then rebuke or resist or cast them out in the name of Jesus, that is so specific it is a power that God has given to you & me through Christ that they cannot resist & they cannot disobey, but they must be subject unto you & they must obey when you call them by name & tell them exactly what to do!—To get their hell out of here!—And tell 'm where to go! Hallelujah!

13. Boy, how the Devil lies to you, how he tries to get you down, how he tries to discourage you & depress you & cause you to give up & quit! Like King David said when downhearted:

"Someday I shall surely die at the hand of Saul!"—1Sam.27:1. So it was right after one of these attacks of discouragement & depression because of an attack by this evil spirit on my esophagus that I finally got so desperate in prayer with God that I asked not only for deliverance, but "Lord, why haven't You delivered me?" And He showed me that I had not published "The Talisman"! I had not revealed to you some of these things regarding the workings of the Enemy so that you would be able to deal with them & handle them yourself & obtain release & relief & deliverance in some of your cases, to know what's the best method to use & how to handle it.

**14. One of our first researchers found a number of interesting facts regarding the first name that was given clear back in "The Talisman" four years ago, the Sphinx!** Oddly enough, although nearly all the other gods of the Egyptians had either animal form or sometimes human form with animal heads, the Sphinx was peculiar to the Egyptian pantheon of gods in that she & she alone had the body of a beast, or at least partly so, & in some cases she's shown with female breasts with the body of a lion, but the head of a woman!

**15. Now this is very interestingly significant in relation to prophetic Bible interpretation**, because throughout the Bible normally the beasts in symbolic use represent powers, governments, kings, nations, empires, kingdoms, etc. Whereas human figures appearing in such symbolic prophecies or revelations usually denote spiritual powers, demon power or Angelic powers, definitely the powers of Angels or demons rather than just the governments of Man, representing the powers of Hell & the spirit powers rather than just Man power! And she was apparently great enough & powerful enough to have the largest image on Earth made of her of any god or goddess of all the Egyptians!

**16. Sphinxes were also found in the ancient Assyrian & Minoan, Roman & Mayan cultures**, & the original name, as we've already told you, means "to draw tight" or "to bind" or "contract" or "strangle". And this was the problem I was having with her!—She was tightening my sphincter muscles at the lower end of my esophagus & strangling me, shutting off my food! The Lord has showed us since then in another revelation, "God Knows When", why it happened & what it was a picture of, a revelation

of, & what we must pray against continually.

**17. The Enemy is always trying to strangle & cut off the spiritual food of the body which comes from the head**, but very seldom succeeds, thank the Lord, but sometimes does. So we must try to avoid it, pray against it, that the Lord will not shut off your spiritual food tube or allow it to be shut off, & will rebuke & bind & resist & liberate & free & deliver us from these binding influences & strangling powers who try to cut off the food which He puts in my mouth for you! But that's another story! Read "God Knows When!"

**18. Then we also have some very interesting research done years ago when the second revelation came**, the one about Ashraf & the Viking gods! This was done by our dear researcher while still in London, just a few days after I had the Ashraf Revelation. Here he tells us that although in the revelation this god or goddess appeared by another name, it was still related to the Sphinx.

**19. There's a little more on the Sphinx.** The Sphinx, as I said, had various forms, & sometimes various identities & various names for various functions, so that they were actually few in number over all, but expressed in different forms & ways & functions. The Sphinx is supposed to be a trinity of three Egyptian gods: Harmakhis, the god of the rising sun; Khepri, the sacred scarab, or the bug god; & Atum, the god-king, supposed to be the father of the human race, symbolised also by the sun & a symbol of resurrection.

**20. It's strange that this Sphinx should be in not only female form & sometimes represented as male, but also trinitarian form!** This is almost symbolic or similar to the trinity of the Devil himself, as I've sometimes mentioned before, Satan being in the trinity of Satan, the Devil's trinity, the opposite of God; the Antichrist being the opposite of Jesus; & the False Prophet of the Antichrist being the opposite of the Holy Spirit. And sure enough in this Sphinx we have this trinity represented by these three gods, the sun-god, the bug-god & the king-god, & surely the Antichrist is going to be a king of the World at the End of the World!

**21. In this Ashraf revelation Maria caught the sound of the name of this god or goddess to sound like Ashraf, or in another place Asharaf**, so we find that one of the most ancient gods of the ancient World was a feminine goddess named Asherah! That's

mighty close to Asharaf, & I could have even been saying Asherah with a hard aspirate on the final "h" as it is in Hebrew, sounding like an "f", sounding like Asharaf, which is the way Maria spelled it one time, & then Ashraf another time in her notes & records.

**22. But thank God now, because of our obedience, belief & faith in these revelations & my obedience in now passing them on to you & my specific direct action in having believed & obeyed, now having the faith to take specific action against her to call her by name & to resist & rebuke her & cast her out & send her away, through all of this I have finally been delivered from her power, thank the Lord! Obviously she was one of the most powerful gods of the Egyptians, this strangler goddess, & later one of the most powerful gods of many other cultures in various names & variations of the name, even down through the days of the Vikings until now! So that she's been around quite awhile causing a lot of trouble to a lot of people down through the ages & still around today, but thank God no longer around me or in our house or near us.**

**23. I consigned her to a lizard in the nearby vacant lot & commanded her to depart from me & go there & inhabit him instead, these ugly demonic-looking lizards they have here, it seems like they are almost the Devil's demons themselves & certainly are the Devil's pests, & that's a good place for her & about the kind of place where she belongs! This could then be the fulfillment of the way I saw her pictured in the end of the Ashraf dream or revelation, like a snake or serpent or a lizard sitting up, like some lizards do, on its tail, symbolising with her back to me that she was fleeing or turning her back on me, & that I had finally in this final day consigned her to this evil-looking serpent or lizard, reptile, out here in the lot!**

**24. I have delayed giving you this final description until now because I've found often when dealing with the Devil, "this kind cometh not out save through fasting & prayer."—Mat. 17:21. So I'll tell you, while talking about the Devil & his business, "speak of the Devil", & sometimes he tries to put in his appearance! So I have fasted & prayed in order to give you this final message on this demon goddess & her identity, because it just seems one has more power in the spirit when fasting & praying, due to one's complete devotion & concentration on the subject &**

on the Lord & on His Will & His Work, uninterrupted by food or taking time to eat.

**25. May my experience & these stories & these revelations give you the faith to know that you have the power through Jesus to deal with any such case, & you can command them in the name of Jesus Christ to depart & leave the place & leave the person or leave the property! Be sure you remember to tell them to do that, you don't want them just hopping over from one onto the other in your own house, or the dog or the cat, as sometimes they will do, & cause the cat or the dog to have a fit, or somebody else to have a fit!**

**26. So be sure if the Lord reveals to you their name, call them by name & give them specific commandment to come out & depart & tell them where to go, so that they will be sure to go & leave your house & your property & go someplace else! If then someone else who doesn't have the Lord is foolish enough to let them in, that's their problem, but at least you have gotten rid of the pest!**

**27. Although some may attribute all of these things to natural causes & natural means & physical factors, I know God has shown me, told me, revealed to me, demonstrated to me their spiritual character & nature & power & identity & workings & devices. Thank God for even being so good to me as to give me her name or names, that I might rebuke her by name & cast her out, resist, reject her & send her away so she'll trouble me no more! TYL! Hallelujah!**

**28. There's power in the Name of Jesus! There's great power in the Spirit of God, & the Lord loves you & He wants to deliver you, & if your affliction is of the Enemy, if it is a messenger of Satan as was Paul's, you can pray & ask God to deliver you from that devil or demon or evil spirit, in the Name of Jesus to depart, & they have to obey you!—Unless, like Paul, God has to leave you with such an affliction or messenger of Satan to buffet you to keep you humble. Thank God, I believe the Lord has helped me get rid of mine!—And I hope you can now with this knowledge & the power of this knowledge we have given you in this series of revelations on demons & their demonic power & effects & how to handle them & how to get rid of them, that you**

will be able to get rid of yours if you've been troubled with one. Praise God!

**29. We had a little problem with one before, remember, from Australia—Hong Kong Goolagong!**—Perish him & his name! (No.980) We had to specifically command him by name to depart & to go somewhere else, & the Lord answered by forcing him to go & he had to obey & he left, thank the Lord! Now we have commanded the Sphinx, Asharaf or Ashraf, this demonic deity to depart also & bother us no more, & she has gone & we feel fine. I'm hungry, I'm going to eat some good solid food, thank the Lord, & I know the Lord is going to help me be completely free from that affliction, God willing, from now on, as long as I stay close to Him in His protection & faith & obedience to His Will, & I hope you will too, in Jesus' name, amen!

**30. God bless you & thank you for your patience & diligence & hard work & faith & obedience!** May you never have any problems like this! As long as you're faithful & obedient, you're not apt to. Mine came as a result of a lack of faith & a disobedience. So watch out, don't let it happen to you! Otherwise, if you're unfaithful & disobedient, the boogey-man's going to get you if you don't watch out! So be watchful & prayerful, faithful & obedient & he can't touch you, or she can't touch you either, in Jesus' name, amen!

**31. There are sphincter muscles located in the esophagus which have to do with swallowing & have been known to cause problems with swallowing!** Now you can say that it was these involuntary sphincter muscles that just happened to get a little screwed up & cause the problem if you want to, but the very fact that these sphincter muscles are there & named after the Sphinx is just another confirmation to me that God's revelations are true & that she was activating some of the muscles named after her to give me my trouble & problem!

**32. But now that we have gotten rid of her, I'm sure that God's God-created sphincter muscles are going to operate properly now & not choke me, but help me to swallow.**—Not strangle me & shut off my food, but help me to swallow it & enjoy it & digest it so I can have the strength to serve the Lord & you, praise God, as I pass the food on to you! God puts it in my mouth,

I believe it & swallow it & He causes His means to transport it on to the rest of the body to nourish & strengthen & feed you! So pray the Lord will protect it & protect all the organs of our spiritual body, me & you, so that this process of receiving food & swallowing it & passing it on to you, the rest of the body, will not be interfered with or stopped in any way, but the Lord will have His way & help get out the Word, in Jesus' name, amen! PTL! GBY all! I love you!

---

**EMAN & GENESIS**—A Photo Reading! DO 1431 10/74  
—The Gen Story, Part 1



(While being considered for our Creations Staff, although having never met, Dad got all this by holding & studying their photo!)

**1. Her left side is very mysterious, very, very mystical—the spiritual side is really spacey, almost spaced out!** This side is extremely sensitive in the Spirit. She can almost be like a medium. Very, very sensitive to spirits & spiritual things. And people that are that way, unless they've got a lot of humanity to hold them down, can almost flip out if the spiritual strain gets too heavy. And for that reason this side can be very fearful in the spirit, almost frightened—the heart side.

**2. It has great spiritual potentiality either direction.** It can either be very ecstatic in the Lord, lost in the Spirit, or on the other hand, if under the wrong influence, can be so fearful as to almost become hysterical! But still very sweet. In some ways under some circumstances she would almost be a good teacher because she wants to be helpful, also idealistic, wants to be optimistic, but sometimes has a struggle along that line because of that spiritual sensitivity to fears. Lord, deliver her in Jesus' name from those fears!

**3. This girl really needed us, I think possibly she even had**

**psychological problems**, possibly because of her spiritual sensitivities & resultant fearfulness. I think perhaps if she had been stronger physically & nervously, with a little more drive, she probably could have been even a good leader, but because of her weakness & fears she's a little unsure of herself. She needs security. She could be a little flighty & excitable.

**4. There's a great deal of tension there in her.** She's inclined to be a little frightened & fearful. I don't think she really likes to be alone, she really needs somebody. She's much more at ease in the pictures where she's next to him, but alone she feels a little insecure, unsure & unsteady.

**5. I don't believe she could stand too much pressure.** Her spiritual sensitivity, & maybe you could almost call it a nervous weakness because of that very very mystical spiritual sensitive part of her, can cause her to be almost jittery. She has really been through it & really suffered, & because she is so sensitive, physical violence really frightens her.

**6. I see that her spirit is sometimes inclined to be like troubled waters!** I see almost like a seething pot if stirred too much or the fire gets too hot!

**7. God made the physical to pretty well portray the inner personality & spirit.** Our faces are not there for nothing, but faces really say something! They really portray what kind of person we are. This is like your astrological picture, there is the strong side & the weak side—strengths of your sign & weaknesses of your sign—& a great deal is up to you what you do with what you have, the decision you make as to which way to go, whether like Pisces, to go in the strong direction upstream, or just drift with the tide.

**8. God leaves the choice & majesty of decision up to you** to choose what way you want to go & on which side you want to be.—Sort of like He gives every person two sides & you can either be strong & saintly or weak & wicked, & that part of the choice is up to you.

**9. Of course, having made the right choice to really want to be strong & good & Godly, then the Lord can step in**, because you receive Him & give Him a chance to help make you that way & help you be that way, to help you overcome that weak & wicked side of your nature—the weak wickedness or wicked

weakness, whatever you want to call it—of your character.

**10. And everybody has it!** I've never seen a face that didn't show a weaker & a stronger side. I've studied physiognomy a lot: The personality characteristics that are shown by the face—& with most faces the heart side is usually the spiritual side & the weaker side, & their right side, the physical side, their strongest. Their right side is usually their better self, whereas their left side usually shows their bad self—spiritual weaknesses.

**11. The eyes are the most expressive to show the spirit**, but the rest of your features also manifest what you're like. The eyes are the deepest, most permanent evidence of the inner self.

**12. If the Devil had gotten ahold of her, she could have been a witch**, but she has in the Lord great spiritual potentialities, real deep spiritual potentialities.

**13. She's over-balanced in the spiritual**, but women sometimes tend to be. That's why they make such good mediums—they're better receivers, more responsive, more surrendering, weaker in some ways. Weaker vessels are very receptive & open, but also much more fragile & have to be handled with care.

**14. Men tend to be a little more tough & coarse, but women are the more delicate & fragile**—weaker, yes, but more beautiful—& she's extremely so: Delicate, fragile, weaker, but a much more highly sensitive nature which can be terrific in the Spirit—very responsive spiritually.

**15. It almost flips you out spiritually even to look at her!** You could really flip out & she'd sort of flip with you & love it! She'd like that sort of spiritual orgasm far better than the physical. She's very fragile & delicate in the physical too, but much more sensitive in the Spirit & would prefer by far the spiritual to the sensual.

**16. She's really really hungry for the Spirit World & she's very close to it!** She lives almost like on the borderline & can very easily flip out or into that other World. She has to be very cautious which direction she flips, & probably before she found the Lord she had some pretty frightening experience that way that nearly scared her to death! But because she was already a child of God as far as God was concerned, God kept her & perhaps even let her go through that maybe to scare her enough to want the good side, to know that the occult & witchcraft & black magic,

the evil side, was not what she wanted at all.

**17. Those who are really turned over to the Devil revel in it,** but she was interested only from the spiritual standpoint. She was hungering for something spiritual—the supernatural—but God gave her a taste of some of the evil side to let her know this wasn't what she wanted, & this is no doubt why the Lord led her to us where she could find what she wanted. TYL!

(P.S. They were finally tried & tested on our Creations Staff in Tenerife, but there were serious problems later, as you can see by the following Letters, which very truly bore out the accuracy of this reading.—Eman our Artist made it, but poor frail Gen didn't, & her witchy side caused very serious difficulties! May GBAKY from yielding to such evil influences!—In Jesus' name, amen!)

**FIGHT FEAR!**—With Faith in the Word! DO 1432 3/75  
—The Genesis Story Part 2.



held back, nothing which is displeasing to Thee or not pleasant in Thy sight, which is either unrepented or unyielded.

**3. You know, sometimes some people drag a few husks with them when they come to the Lord!** We all have a problem with some things from the old life or our past or the old self which we still have a battle with. And believe it or not, those who have been

involved with demonism or witchcraft or Devil-worship, sometimes this is a very hard thing to shake.

**4. I was hoping for the best in this case,** but I knew that Genesis had been involved in demonism long before she came to the Lord & had hobnobbed with witches & was studying the Book of the Dead. So I thought, "Lord, I've known some of those deliverances haven't been easy!" I don't like to talk about these things but sometimes you can't be ignorant of the Devil's devices, & this little trick is nothing new!—2Cor.2:11.

**5. The Devil tries to scare you to death, but the Lord has not given us the spirit of fear, but of power & of love & of a sound mind, so you don't have to fear!**—2Tim.1:7. Roosevelt said, "The only thing we have to fear is fear itself!"—And in a way, that's right! You must rebuke it in Jesus' name & not fear! Genesis still has a great deal of fear! Nobody who has been into witchcraft has an easy time shaking it off—the old Devil doesn't always give up without a struggle!

**6. If the Devil cannot attack you he will even try to attack your little one,** which is why you really have to pray over children, lay hands on them & dedicate them to the Lord in Jesus' name, committing them to the Lord & the faith, even though the child himself is not old enough to believe & trust God for himself. The parents have vicarious faith for him. The Lord says, "Else were your children unclean." But if even one of the parents loves the Lord & has faith, even though the other is unbelieving, the child is still clean or saved.—1Co.7:14.

**7. This knotting business is a very knotty problem in spiritualism!** It seems to be one of the Devil's favourite little tricks—knotting things—almost symbolic of the problems he causes. The moment I heard of that child's birth, that there was a knot in the cord, I thought, "Oh, Lord, is Genesis still being followed?"

**8. I don't know her at all, really, but the Lord knows her!** It's always really bothered me though, there's a real fear in her eyes. I saw terrible fear in her eyes. She has a lot of fear. There's something very strange about her eyes.

**9. Those cases that come out of the occult have to baptise themselves constantly in prayer, soak themselves in the Word, memorise & quote constantly to the Devil & to themselves. They**

have to wage a militant warfare against the Enemy! Now we all have to do this to a certain extent, but not quite the same. The minute I heard that cord was knotted I thought, "Oh Lord, that poor girl is still being plagued by those demons, & for some reason or other You've let that happen!"

**10. There's still something in her life that's not right or yielded,** because if you're really right & open with the Lord & others, the Devil can't touch you. He may try & tempt you & give you trials & tests, like he did with Job, to test your faith, but he can't win any victories—at least in the long run, not as long as you're claiming the victory & have faith.

**11. In a case when you're dealing directly with Enemy power, you'd better know what you're up against & know how to pray hard & get ahold of the Lord!** I just don't believe the Lord would let that happen unless there's something He's dealing with the mother about, or the mother & father both. So we really need to pray for them.

**12. Lord, You know the problem there & how this must hurt the parents.** She evidently doesn't know how to deal with things in the Spirit. Instead of really praying desperately & rebuking the Enemy, instead of laying hands on her & the child, they try to deal with it in the flesh. This shows something is wrong there. You can't scream, "Stop, stop!" at a little baby! After all, it's just a baby!

**13. There's something that worried me when I saw her picture.** People who have been involved in that, who have once been a channel, sort of carry those things with them unless they really have strong faith & can really fight the Enemy.

**14. Once people have been a channel, they have a battle & it's hard to shake it!** So you really need to pray for Genesis. "Perfect love casts out all fear. Thou shalt keep him in perfect peace whose mind is stayed on Thee".—1Jn.4:18, Isa.26:3. We don't have to worry, fret or fear because we have You, Jesus, Your Love, Your power, Your strength, Your Spirit, which is stronger than anything the Devil can muster! But we need to remember that & stay close to You & quote Thy Word & take a real stand & fight & rebuke him in Thy Name!

**15. So Lord, we ask You in Jesus' name to rebuke this thing!** Deliver this girl & her child & those around her & help them to

know what they're dealing with & to lay hands on this girl & pray in faith! You want us to know we can't do it in our own power, we have to have Your help! It's a hopeless case unless You come to the rescue. Help them, Lord, to read & stand on Thy Word, to take a real stand of faith, obeying Thy Word & Thy injunction, laying hands on her & rebuking the Devil in Jesus' name.

**16. Help them to realise what they're dealing with**—not any little birth defect or physical weakness, but something much deeper & worse—but just as easy for You to get rid of if we'll take a stand of faith. Help us to remember to pray for these, we know it must be very wearing & tearing on those working there. It's the Devil's own trick to get near the Source! We rebuke You, Satan, in the Name of Jesus! We rebuke you, Oplexicon!

**17. The web that the Devil weaves is a tangled knotty horrible web, full of knots & discordant notes!** It's a crazy pattern! It's not the beautiful rich symmetric pattern that God Himself weaves like the spider's web, with straight perfect lines & jewels of dew, God's blessing of water, but it's horrible like a knotted fisherman's net, full of tangles & knots! O Jesus, Jesus, precious Jesus! (See No.261.)

**18. You cannot do the Master's work without the Master's power!** You can't deal with these things on a natural level. They say that happens very rarely about a knotted cord, but you just tell me how a baby could swim around in the water enough to tie a knot in the cord! In fact, I would say it takes a miracle!—In this case a Satanic miracle! The Devil would just love to get in right here in Creations where they're putting the Letters in print.

**19. We thank You, Lord, that You're greater than anything!** We don't have to worry but we must be concerned & pray for them. Deliver them, Lord, & help her to yield, whatever is standing in the way. Deliver poor Eman & help him.

**20. The Devil works on people that are weak!** When you entertain the Devil's lies in your mind & heart, eventually they're going to come out of your mouth. "Out of the fullness of the heart the mouth speaketh."—Lk.6:45. Then you become a witness for the Devil. If your heart is filled with those thoughts, sooner or later you'll mouth them, & that's when you begin to get others down too.

**21. The Devil comes to you with things that you want to**

**believe for some ulterior motive.** Like with someone who is jealous of another person, the Devil will come to that person who is jealous with lies about the other person which the jealous one wants to believe. And then he will begin to voice these lies & doubts to try to drive a wedge between others & the person of whom he is jealous.

**22. If someone has a weakness along that line, then the Devil plays on that weakness,** especially if he can find a motivation for it, some sin in the mind or heart which will give that doubt or fear a little extra push, that they would like to believe that doubt or sort of enjoy having that fear. Apparently Genesis still has a very serious spiritual problem & the elders of the church had better get together & pray for her! Things don't just happen to God's children, there's something there & it has to be dealt with sooner or later & it had better be quick before it goes any further & takes that child's life or something!

**23. The Lord has to allow the Enemy, because of the rules of the game, to afflict or manipulate or oppress territory which belongs to the Enemy,** which is yielded to the Enemy. Sin in the heart.—That's the way he gets a wedge in. If there's something there in the heart that's not right, it belongs to the Enemy. Paul said some bodies had to be delivered to the Devil that their souls might be saved!—1Cor.5:5.

**24. The Devil is the prosecuting attorney** & if there's something he can lay his finger on, he has the right to do it. That's the rule. He has a right to afflict that body or person as punishment or chastening because of sin. That's why sin in your heart is a very dangerous thing, especially to allow things like that to creep in—doubts & fears & a critical spirit which the Enemy uses as a channel, especially if there's some motivation of jealousy.

**25. When we're going over the top & making an all-out attack, the Enemy is going to be quite busy trying to stop us!**—But he can't stop us if we don't let him. If in some way Genesis or Eman are surrendering any territory to the Enemy or listening to his doubts or entertaining his fears, this is a partial surrender to the Enemy, so of course it's going to cause trouble.

**26. The Enemy will quite often use children to deal with parents.** I suppose the Devil will try even to scare little babies to

death if he can. You just have to keep rebuking the Devil & pleading the blood of Jesus for the Lord's protection so that the Devil can't touch them! But if you get out of touch with the Lord, watch out, because then the Devil gets in touch with you or some member of your family, & that's his privilege if you run outside the Lord's protection.

**27. The Lord spoke once & said the reason that certain people were having so much sickness was because they were running outside the tower of the Lord's protection** & that they were not hiding in the secret place or staying under the Lord's wings. You've got to stay close to the Lord like a little chicken under the wings of the mother hen, in tune with God & in touch with Him in prayer & really touching God!—Psa.91:1,4.

**28. You can't let things slide** & get so busy with a new baby or anything that you neglect your inspiration or the food that you can get the spiritual nourishment from. They're not my Letters, they're the Lord's Letters. I know lots of times I would be really down if I didn't feed on God's Word.

**29. Thank You Lord that we don't have to fear or be afraid or afraid of the dark or the Enemy in any way!** Help it just to remind them to stay close to You & quoting Your Word within the aura of Your protection. Help us to stay in the secret place under Thy wings, then we can claim all the protection that's in that great Psalm 91! We cannot expect Thy blessing & protection when we run away from You out of Thy Will, even spiritually in thought. So keep us close to You with pure thoughts of Thee & Thy Word in the secret place, in Jesus' name! Resist the Enemy in Thy household for deliverance.

**30. You promised, Lord, if any two of you shall agree as touching anything you shall ask of the Father in My name, I will give it to them!** You promised that anything that is bound on Earth will be bound in Heaven, & anything that is loosed on Earth will be loosed in Heaven!—Mt.18:18,19. So here we agree in Jesus' name, deliver that household from the Enemy, those attacks on Thy children, that precious little baby! Deliver it from Satan in the Name of Jesus! We rebuke you, Satan, in Jesus' name!—All your powers & angels & evil spirits!

**31. Thank You for Thy great mighty army, Lord, that sur-**

rounds us, that resists all the powers of Hell, though they be let loose against us. Even one Angel is enough to deal with them all! "The Angel of the Lord encampeth around them that fear Him & delivereth them!"—Ps.34:7. Thank You Lord for all Thy goodness & mercy to their father! Help us to stay close to Thee in the charmed circle of Thy protection, in Jesus' name.

32. That prayer, I'm sure, will help, but I feel we haven't fully obeyed the Lord unless we obey His injunction to lay hands on these afflicted ones & really rebuke the Enemy & ask for God to deliver, to cast out the Enemy! When we make it public amongst us & take a definite act of faith in prayer, this then manifests our dependence on God. It's a testimony that we're trusting God & have committed the case to Him. Therefore when any change comes, He will get the credit because we've made it known. We've prayed & expect God to deliver.

33. You don't just beat around the bush in these cases or try to save feelings by not telling the problem. If they have any pride about it, that's as bad as the rest of the problem. The Devil never likes to be exposed, he likes to do his dirtywork in the dark & behind the scenes so you won't really know who is doing the damage, making you think it's some mental problem or some disease, blah, blah, blah!

34. You've got to name the Old Boy & sock him straight on with the weapons God has given us! "These signs shall follow them that believe, they shall lay hands on the sick & they shall be healed, they shall cast out devils in Jesus' name!"—Mk.16:17,18. The Lord will answer your prayers as much as mine. The Devil trembles when he sees the weakest saint upon his knees!

35. We can't just pray little prayers, "Lord help the baby not to cry!"—You'd better start crying yourself & rebuking the Devil & stay on your guard, close to the Lord constantly, thinking about the Lord & quoting Scriptures!

36. If someone has that spirit of fear it's very contagious! It's really a spiritual demonic devilish thing! If the mother has that fear, babies are very sensitive in the spirit. The baby may see horror movies if the parents have a spirit of fear! Genesis wanted to gloss over the seriousness of the problem because it was a reflection on her.

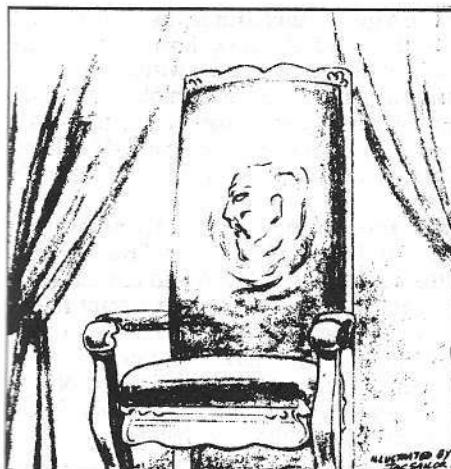
37. The Devil can kill the body if you allow him, or God allows him, because of your sins—or in some cases the parents' sins—but he can't kill the soul!—Mt.10:28. If the child is killed by the Enemy, if even one parent is clean, the child is the Lord's. The Devil may get the body but he can't get the soul. It's his due because of sin, because without sin there wouldn't be any death & he's like the Executioner & it's his privilege to do the final death dealing. He's in a sense the Death Angel.

38. I know because I've had some battles with him! If I'd let go, he would have taken me before my time, but the Lord promised He wouldn't let me be taken before my time. We all must die sooner or later because of the sin which has affected our bodies, but he can't take our spirits!—Amen? TTL! GBY! But you must fight him with faith & "the sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God!"—Eph.6:17. Amen? GBAKY!

## THE CHINESE DEMON!

DO 1436 4/75

—Spirit Gifts & Problems!—The Genesis Story Part 3



1. I don't understand how so many people can be so absolutely insensitive to spirits! You ought to pray for the gift of discernment! We are in a battle & we can't go playing around with the Devil! The first time I ever saw Gen's picture I knew she was really weird, yet some of you said, "She's just a poor innocent, she doesn't know what's going

on!" Well, she may not know what's going on, but somebody does! And the trouble is, she's been covering it.

2. There's only one way you can handle the Enemy & that's to declare all-out war & run him right out of the woods & from attacking all who're there, & either he will then do something or not. As long as he can hide out & play footsy-footsy & keep you in ignorance of what he's up to, he'll be just as good as gold! I've seen some of these cases just be absolutely exemplary models of behaviour until you catch them! They can be geniuses & make themselves damn useful & you think you can't do without them—until they get there in a position of importance, & then they're in a position to throw a monkey wrench in the machinery—& they do!

3. I just wish I had listened to the Word of the Lord instead of taking some people's recommendations. Did you know that both of the babies that she took care of before this one had severe fits?

4. She tries to minimise her connection with witchcraft & say, "Oh well, I never got very much into it." She was a witch whether she knew it or not! Because that was the first thing I ever got off her when I saw her picture, & I didn't even want to think about it. Lord help us!

5. I want Eman to be in a good quiet atmosphere with good strong spirits that love the Lord & know how to fight the Devil!—He needs peace of mind, peace & quiet without that horrible distraction! Eman is a sensitive receiver. In making that picture he was just like spirit-writing! She's like an antenna, & he was getting those very bad vibes off of her that guided his hand to paint that picture! (Chinese demon mask on the Great Queen's empty throne!)

6. You don't get rid of those things very easily unless you cut them all out! Look at David Hoyt! (See "Baalzebub", No. 168, & 168A) And the worst thing in the World in a case like that is pride—pride or jealousy—where they don't want to expose themselves, don't want to be exposed, don't want to confess—& quite obviously she hasn't told us everything.

7. After all, even if you haven't got the special gift of discerning spirits, you have the Holy Spirit, & the Holy Spirit ought to have warned you! You should have had some kind of check, some sensibility, some feeling! Some of you are ap-

parently just absolutely totally insensitive to things like that, you can't even tell! The first time I ever looked at her picture I knew there was something terribly wrong with her!

8. Let me tell you, Beloved, as leaders, whatever you do, don't trust just the one person's side of the story—you'd better be sure you get the other guy's side too! Most of those devils don't want to leave! After all, they can cause a helluva lot more trouble if they stay! They never want to leave, you've got to practically throw them out on their ear!

9. I'll tell you, Beloved, when you see something you ought to say something! This business of keeping things to yourself because you're afraid to say anything, my Lord! The Devil can get away with a helluva lot if you don't mention the fact that you're seeing something a little strange or peculiar or something's not right!

10. All kinds of top people worked with her, & when it was suggested she might come down here they sent us the most glowing recommendations—how wonderful she was, how sacrificial, how sweet & all the rest! So I was absolutely almost floored when I first saw her picture & thought, "My Lord, this gal looks like a witch!" The eyes are windows of the soul, & let me tell you, she was weird! It's a lot safer to trust God for your wisdom than to listen to people, especially if they haven't got real spiritual discernment! Well, they can have a lot else, I must admit, & still not have spiritual discernment.

11. I've never had any patience with the Devil, he just makes me mad & I want to blow him away right off the bat! I don't have time to fiddle around with these people who tolerate devils!—And then they won't even confess it or admit it because they're afraid they'll be exposed. Well, I want to tell you right now, that gal's going to have to get rid of that Chinese demon or we're going to have to get rid of her, one or the other! I don't like his looks, much less his works! (The picture was one of a Chinese demon god!)

12. You have to know how those things work so you're not ignorant of the Devil & his devices!—2Co.2:11. I don't like to even talk about it, except when we face a situation where we have to deal with it. But you certainly have to know it exists & you

have to have a little discernment to know who's responsible, & for God's sake, be able to recognise the Old Boy when you see him! If you know what he looks like, you certainly ought to know what his dirty work looks like!

13. One thing which is a gift that I tremble at sometimes—because it's a gift that I don't relish having to use—is the discerning of spirits! Therefore God has led me by the anointing of the Spirit to cast out those spirits, that the person might be delivered physically from having the effect of those spirits, particularly spirits of fear. Maybe that's because I have the faith that I have, a lot of faith in the Lord, & that gives me great power against fear, which is the opposite of faith! Praise God! TYL! That's probably also why the Devil attacks me along that line sometimes in my weakest moments.—With fear! (See No. 857, "Terror By Night!")

14. God's showed me a number of times where people's sole trouble was their fear. Leila was delivered, I told you about that. I just had to show her love & faith & rebuke the Devil, cast out the spirit of fear, & she was delivered, thank the Lord!

15. Discerning of spirits is one of the most necessary gifts, because when it comes to dealing with the Devil you've got to know something about how he operates & be able to recognise his ministers & their ministry. You'd better be able to spot those little devils & some of their little devilish tricks, or they're going to spot you & fool you! And I thank the Lord that He has, I believe, given me a little discernment along that line, because I've been able to spot a lot of these troublemakers & trouble spots, sometimes before they cause too much trouble! The only time when that gift doesn't work as well as it should is when I don't pay enough attention to it, when I take somebody else's word for it instead of God's Word & my own feelings in the matter.

16. It almost has something to do with your feelings, the vibes you get off of people! I get a lot by personal contact, by touching them, or eye contact. The eyes are the windows of the soul, they tell a lot about the person. You can look into their eyes & see light or darkness, you can see angelic spirits, beautiful spirits, or sometimes you can see the eyes of devils! (See "Look of Love!" No.304.)

17. To be forewarned is to be forearmed & it's a good idea

to be able to spot these critters before they get you on the spot—like the one that's now causing us a lot of trouble! But "all things work together for good to them that love the Lord" (Ro.8:28), & you wouldn't have had this particular lesson this afternoon if we hadn't had this big a problem, & you all need it.

18. If you're going to be leaders in God's field, working with the sheep, you need to know something about how the Old Boy works! I already told you in the little talk I gave on Gen the other night & her problem, that people with those spiritual proclivities or tendencies—what I might almost call weaknesses or susceptibilities—are susceptible to spiritual influences, & if they don't stay mighty close to God & His Holy Spirit, they're very susceptible to evil spirits.

19. If they are a truly saved born-again child of God, this doesn't necessarily mean that the Devil gives up entirely! He's had a nice vehicle to ride in & a nice channel to work on for a long time & he doesn't easily give up! He will frequently stay around for a long time afterward to pester. The spirits like to stick around their old happy home that they had before!

20. Like the story Jesus told about the guy that got all cleaned up, house swept & garnished, so that when the devil who had lived there saw it was a pretty nice place to live now, nicer than it had been before, he got some more devils that were even worse than he was & came back & they all moved in!—Mt.12:43-45. You say, "Well, how can that possibly be?"

21. Well, apparently the guy didn't move in their arch-enemy, the Holy Spirit, to fill up his house & take over to keep out the intruders! Let me tell you, if you don't fill your heart & mind & spirit with the Holy Spirit when you're saved, & you don't really get baptised with the power of God to fight the Enemy, if you've had problems with spirits, you'd better look out!

22. Demon-possession means that a person is controlled by a spirit within who has taken over their mind & their consciousness & supplanted their own spirit & become that personality, has taken over the body. That is demon-possession when the person is no longer in control whatsoever of themselves & is under the total complete control of a devil & he has taken them over.

**23. Demon oppression** is a different thing, that's the Devil's attacks from the outside. But it seems that the demons who may have even been cast out of the inside through conversion etc. in some people, seem to want to hang around & cause that person a lot of trouble afterward. That was the case with Mr. Machowski & Tom! (See No. 1415.)

**24. I have even known of Christians that have been saved & are truly children of God but still continue to be oppressed by evil spirits**, especially if they had a lot to do with those things. But I'll tell you, if they are unwilling to admit & confess that they have this problem & really cry out desperately & sincerely to God for help to get rid of these rascals & shake them off, then they are in trouble!—If they don't really seek God for the power of the Holy Ghost to get rid of these damned Satanic spooks!

**25. Pride is one of the worst of sins & it opens the door for others like jealousy & a great number of others!** And if you don't look out, you're going to be back to square one again! If you're full of all these sins, God only knows what else you may get in the bargain, because when you let sin in the door, you let the Devil in!

**26. Every sin in your life is a part of the Devil's territory** & when you've got sin in your heart—pride, jealousy, unwillingness to confess your sins & your problems & the truth—let me tell you, you haven't got much chance of getting rid of your problems! No sinner who is unwilling to confess he's a sinner is ever going to get saved! Just so, no person who is sick & unwilling to confess their sins & make it right with God & really seek God's help according to His commandments, according to the Word of God, no such sick person is going to get healed either!

**27. And certainly no one who has possibly been possessed of devils before & now is harassed & oppressed by them is going to get rid of them unless they confess it & get down humbly before God & cry out in desperate prayer with the help of others to agree together to chase those damn devils away by the power of the Spirit of God in the Name of Jesus, to command them to depart & never come back again!** But if they keep that pride & that jealousy & they let that sin back in again, back comes the Devil! I've seen it happen time & again.

**28. I've seen people who got totally delivered from evil spirits, but they didn't get delivered from their sins, & they didn't get right with God**, they went back to the same old thing & they wound up worse pestered than they had been before! Because unless you fill that mind & heart with the power of God & the Holy Spirit, that devil's going to come right back in just as fast as you can cast him out! You can cast him out a thousand times a day, but if you've got an open channel, an open heart to the Devil, he'll keep coming right back!

**29. So don't be prepared to hit the Devil head on unless you're prepared to go all the way & really have it out & really get rid of him or the person who's harbouring him, one or the other!** When you have driven the Devil out in the open & exposed him, you have precipitated a crisis & you have started something that you had better finish! There's an old slogan about "There's the Devil to pay!"—We're beginning to expose him now & I wonder where he's going to try to sock it to us next?

**30. So if somebody in that house is still an antenna for the Devil** & is still picking up those powerful signals, they can give those signals off in such strong vibes as to affect other people, particularly if they are sensitive to spiritual influence. An artist must be very sensitive, & if he's not in the right spirit he's going to get the wrong signals & be a receiver of those vibes that she (Genesis) is broadcasting—or which that devil that's hovering around her is broadcasting!

**31. But it wouldn't have happened if they'd both been in the right spirit & full of the Holy Ghost & the power of the Lord!** The devils don't like the Holy Spirit, they don't like the power of Jesus! Demons love people who are out of the victory & who are full of sinful vices like pride, worst of all, & jealousy & things like that! That's their happy home, the kind of people they like! And I'm sorry to say, Gen has manifested it. You say, "Well, she's just a poor little innocent girl!" Well, the Devil has taken over many a poor little innocent girl & made a witch out of them!

**32. If she doesn't face up to the facts & confess her sins & honestly come clean with us & God about her past & her connections with spiritism & witchcraft—more of which is coming out all the time—if she keeps trying to hide them from her husband**

& even herself, she is not going to get desperate enough to get rid of those influences! The devils must laugh with glee: "Ha, ha, ha! She doesn't want to expose us! She doesn't want to expose herself, therefore she's going to hide us too!"

33. Let me tell you, we are in a war & you'd better keep in tune & in touch with the Holy Spirit & on God's territory all the time & close to His Word & in the right spirit & constantly in prayer & seeking the Lord & praying for His protection & His help & thanking Him constantly for His blessings & staying mighty close to the Lord, or you're going to be singed by that old fire-breathing Dragon! If you go running around outside of the tower of God's protection & the holy place of His Will, that old Devil's going to be on your trail & try to give you all kinds of trouble!

34. I had a vision when we were praying this morning of a battle royal going on in the Spirit World right now! It reminded me of something Grandmother saw once in a vision & the message she got about the loud clashing swords & the noise of battle! We are in a monstrous new revolutionary push to go into all the World & every country to preach the Gospel to every creature—you think the Devil doesn't know it? Do you think he's going to just let us get away with it soft & easy & not try to prevent it? And of course where is he going to try to attack?—As near the Top & the Source as he can! If he can't get into you & me right here, then he'll get into somebody down there & throw a monkey wrench into the machinery & wreck the ministry if he can! And he did!—That sketch!

35. I'm telling you, you'd better go down there & lay hands on that girl & that baby & cast that Devil out of not only them, but out of the house, & tell him not to come back anymore!—And I'm serious, I mean business! You are the Elders of this Church & it is within your power & authority to do so! I want you to go down there & let Gen have it & tell her the truth!

36. Get her first of all to confess it & cry out desperately to God to get rid of it, because without her cooperation you might as well save your breath! As soon as you're gone out of the house he'll be back if she's not going to take the right attitude. If we shake her up a little bit & tell her that Eman is going over to the other house & not coming back until she gets rid of it, she might start

screaming for God to help her & get right with God! That ought to shake her up a little bit to see the dirty work the Devil did!

37. And she shouldn't just keep saying, "Oh, the baby's holding his breath!" For God's sake, damn it, the baby's not holding his breath! I have known demons to choke people to death right in front of others! It's the commonest thing in the World for demons to choke people to death!

38. The Devil can't do anything with you unless you let him in, unless you give him the chance & you harbour his thoughts & his sins. If you stay close to the Lord in obedience to God & filled with His Spirit, you don't have to worry about the Devil! You may have to battle him quite a few times in other people, but you won't have so much of a battle yourself, amen?

39. As I used to tell people who liked to blame everything on the Devil, the spirit you have the most trouble with is not evil spirits, it's your own spirit! That's the one that hasn't been conquered yet in a lot of lives & the one that still has free will & free choice. The devils have no free will, they've got no free choice, they've got to do whatever we tell them to do! We have absolute authority over them!

40. You can go down there & command that demon to leave the house & leave them alone & not come back anymore!—But you've got to be outright & honest & open about it & face it & tell everybody so, & they have got to confess it & face the facts themselves & admit it & cry out to God for help & mercy & deliverance! But if they try to conceal it & cover-up & not confess it, they're not going to get rid of it!

41. And I'll tell you, you elders of the Church need to go down there & deal with Gen in no uncertain terms! We can't have this going on any longer! Just tell her the facts that if she doesn't get rid of that thing, we're going to get rid of her—& I don't mean perhaps! We're going to ship her out!—And maybe that will scare her in! I used to say I'd rather scare people into Heaven than to love them into Hell!

42. You can't go pussyfooting around with the Devil, let me tell you right now! When you expose a case like that you've got to carry it through, & you have started to expose it already & if you don't get the victory real fast, they could cause a lot more

trouble. You've got to nip it in the bud & get rid of it now! When you guys leave here tonight I want you to go to that house & deal with Gen & get her on her knees weeping & crying out before God, confessing her sins & her lies in deceiving us & not telling us the truth about her background & her deviltry & witchcraft & all the rest of it that she didn't tell us!

43. When you miss the pattern somewhere when you're weaving, the further you get, the worse the mark is, the worse the mistake looks, & you're going to have to go down there now & deal with it! We have chased the Devil out in the open & now he's not even ashamed to expose himself, he wants his picture in the paper! The nerve! He thought he was pretty smart that night to get Eman to draw his picture. Well, he's not smarter than God!

44. It's like the old story, if you give him enough rope he's going to hang himself! Well, he's got enough rope & now you'd better go down there & hang him & pray for them & get rid of him!—Or tell Gen if she doesn't, we're going to have to get rid of her & the baby! We cannot have a problem like that in a high security Home this close to us, this close to the Source, particularly in the art ministry! So there's a little lesson for you & I hope you got the point!

45. For God's sake, if you pray for any gift of God nowadays in the Last Days, Beloved, pray for the gift of discernment! "The Spirit speaketh expressly that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits & doctrines of devils; speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their conscience seared with a hot iron!"—1 Tim.4:1,2. "If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ."—1 Tim.4:6. That's very important. In the Last Days the Devil is really on the job & he's being very very busy!

46. We're not playing games, Beloved! We are in a serious warfare & you had better be constantly on your guard, ready at all times to fight any attack of the Enemy, who is going to wait for your unguarded moment & for the time when you're a little weak & a little out of it & out of sorts & out of tune & out of the Spirit & out of touch! He's going to sock you so hard it might knock you for a loop because you didn't stay in the right spirit, you didn't stay close to the Lord, you weren't obedient, you didn't

do what you should do, you weren't on your guard, praying without ceasing, giving thanks always, staying close to the Lord in the Spirit!

47. He will hit as high & as near the top as he can get, & he has! He has already struck not far away, & I doubt very much if he is through—until we get through with him & get down there & deal with him & with his channel & close it forever & get that girl in the right spirit to confess her background, her sins, her dealings with Satanism & spiritism!

48. So you had better throw the fear of God into her & tell her she'd better get rid of that thing fast or we will have to get rid of her! We cannot take a chance on having her here disrupting God's Work, not even if I have to get up & move again! In these cases you either get deliverance, or you've got a new enemy. If you don't get rid of those devils, complete total victory, utter deliverance, they will turn on you at the time you least expect it & when you're at your weakest & kick you in the groin where it really hurts, saying they have been one of you, & then turn Judas! I've told you about this before.

49. The worst enemies are those who come from our own ranks! They become our most bitter enemies. They have to do it to defend themselves, like Judas did. They don't want to get right with God, they don't want to get rid of their devils, they don't want to get rid of their evil spirit, they don't want to straighten out, they don't want to get rid of their sins, so when we expose them face-to-face, they go back!

50. And then to vindicate & justify themselves for going back, they have to start to attack us & say it was all our fault because we're so evil!—Like Judas did. To prove that they're no longer one of us, they have to turn around & betray us & become a bitter enemy to try to convince the System that they are now on the System's side, that they really are no longer one of us. Then they have to be really against us.

51. I'm always leery of these people who don't get the victory instantly & are delivered when they join.—These people that have to be nursed along & nursed along & namby-pambyed & petted & pampered to try to get them to get the victory, & persuaded & prayed with & dealt with for hours & hours of God's

precious time & God's precious leaders' wasted strength! And then in the long run they finally go back anyhow & it's a big waste of time!

52. You can't just shut yourself off from your sheep & ignore them & let them go their way while you go your way, or pretty soon you'll have no flock! The first thing the shepherd has to do is what? What does the Word say? "See to the state of thy flocks!"—Pr.27:23. You'd better get busy & take care of your sheep, that's your first most important job! No matter how much work you've got to do or how much more important job you may have besides that, you'd better take care of those sheep right along with it, or you may find that you've got no job & your flock is gone & you're a shepherd with an empty fold—& what fold needs a shepherd with no sheep?

53. You had better get busy & get into fellowship with those sheep down there & keep them spiritually fed & cared for & nourished & loved or you'll be out of a job!—And I mean it! You had better start taking care of your sheep.

54. So you'd better "feed My sheep," including Eman! You'd better protect them, including Genesis, from the Wolf who managed to get his picture painted in our paper, or you're not being a good shepherd! Just business & shearing the sheep & telling the tale of the wool is not all there is to being a shepherd, do you get me? You have to take care of those sheep as well & feed them & protect them, provide for them, care for them, love them & keep them in fellowship with each other, or you are failing in your task as a shepherd!

55. You fell down on the job, isolating yourself from your sheep instead of taking care of them & having fellowship—really sweet, loving fellowship. There's not a day goes by that I don't hug & kiss everybody in my little family in this house, probably several times a day, including the boys, right? And keep in touch, sweetly in love, spiritually & physically. Real communion & fellowship at the table & in the livingroom. We spend hours almost every day in real fellowship.

56. If I can spend an hour or two or more every day in fellowship with these kids, as busy as I am, who the Hell do you think you are, that you can't spend some real hours of real fel-

lowship in the Word & in sweet fellowship together with yours? Any of you, Beloved! Don't ever get so God-damned busy you haven't got time for the sheep! If you are that busy, you're too damned busy! Anybody who hasn't got time to fellowship with his wife or her husband or your helpers or your cook or your maid or your babysitter, or even the gardener or the postman, is too busy!

57. If you haven't got time to spend with your flock, Beloved, you're too busy! You're no pastor if you're not spending time feeding & pastoring the sheep. I don't mean some kind of a stiff, cold, formal dutiful Bible reading.

58. Well, I'll tell you, if your preaching doesn't go to meddling, it's not much good! If your preaching is not going to affect your living & the way the others live with you, if you're not meddling in their daily affairs & making sure to keep things straight, if you're not meddling in their spiritual life, if you're not meddling with their daily needs, if you're not meddling with whether they're happy & satisfied & contented & loved enough & whatever they need, then your preaching is just so much hot air! If your preaching hasn't gone to meddling, it's not good enough!

59. You'd better get down there & get busy & pray for those folks now & try to get them straightened out before we have to ship them all away & get a new batch if we have to!—If I have to move to do it! We cannot have any shenanigans going on if they're going to result in the Devil creeping into our very publications!

60. Well, I think now after this you guys ought to be able to go down there & accomplish something, do something! Take authority over the Devil in the Name of Jesus Christ & cast out that devil & get that God-damned Chinese spook out of there! That's an absolute Chinese demon mask that that rascal painted, his own portrait on God's throne! Damn it, it makes me mad that you would have let the Devil in like that! Well, we're not going to, let me tell you!

61. God bless dear Eman for acknowledging his mistake & being willing to do it over! It's time for Genesis to confess her mistakes of not acknowledging her weaknesses & confessing her past, glossing over & making light of her former demonic associations, spiritism, seances & Satanism! It's no light thing! If you've had anything to do with the Devil at all, it's no light encounter!

## THE REBELLIOUS WOMAN!

—A Spirit Problem!—The Genesis Story, Part 4

DO 1438 4/75



1. I was standing in the bathroom saying, "Lord, what's wrong? What is the matter—why?" And the Lord so often gives you just the key words, just enough to look it up in the Concordance & find the reference, He said, "The rebellious woman!"—1Sam. 20:30. Well, I got the point right away that He was apparently talk-

ing about Gen! She may not know she's rebellious, she may even be trying not to be, but there's something there that's rebellious!

2. Well, whether she realises it or not, whether she's responsible or not, there's something not right about her spirit, especially if the Lord uses that strong a language & calls her a rebellious woman! And in the Scripture it says the perverse & rebellious woman! "Then Saul's anger was kindled against Jonathan, & he said unto him, Thou son, Jonathan, of the perverse rebellious woman!" That's the only Scripture in the whole Bible we could find that uses those two words together: "Rebellious woman"! Isn't that something? God knows just the right words to give you so you won't get sidetracked on some other Scripture!

3. It's almost as though she acts like, "Well, everybody's against me! Everybody else is believing this story about me & you're all against me." Dear Mother Eve, when it comes to spirits she has almost no discernment! She didn't even get the point, she said Gen's just an innocent victim! Well, it doesn't sound like she's too innocent!

4. It's amazing how innocent people can seem, can feel even

to themselves & think they're innocent! In fact, the people who think they're the most innocent, are often the most guilty! They protest their innocence & they can't even understand why God's pointing the finger at them!

5. Well, Lord, it's all in Thy hands! We're in Thy hands & You know why You're letting it happen. We know that it will all work out for good somehow. Thy Will be done, in Jesus' name. (Faith: While we were sitting in the room with Genesis the living room lamp turned off, blinked, & then went back on, & I said, "Has that ever happened before?" Justus said, "No"!) This is a very common evil spirit manifestation for the electric lights to go off! (Faith: And just as we walked out of the house everything went black!) They say in spiritist meetings the lights stay off because they are lovers of darkness!

6. Don't forget to glorify God & not worry! "Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace whose mind is stayed on Thee because he trusteth in Thee! Perfect love casts out all fear. God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power & of love & of a sound mind!"— Isa.26:3; 1Jn.4:18; 2Tim.1:7. Amen! TYJ! I don't like to talk about these things too much.

7. We're inclined to sort of not want to offend people, & not want to poke & be too nosy. But I want to tell you something right now, I am a doctor, believe it or not, & when there's trouble, it is my business to get nosy & to poke & probe & question & find out what the problem is! And you as leaders ought to learn this lesson—don't just take people's word for it! Lydia was just taking their word for it over the phone, "Everything's fine, fine"—but she didn't go down & investigate herself.

8. Faithy, led of the Spirit of God, sensed something was very wrong & even told them two weeks ago that she didn't think the baby was getting enough to eat, which was exactly right, & sensed that there was trouble brewing down there. But then Faithy didn't report back to me! I mean, that was a serious situation!

9. If you see somebody robbing somebody & breaking into a house or committing murder & you don't report it, you're also responsible! What do they call it?—Criminal responsibility or something. So I said, "Stephen, you're just as much to blame as they are because you didn't report it!" "Well, I didn't want to

be a tattle-tale, I didn't want to cause trouble. Jus doesn't like me anyhow & if I'd gone & told on him..." I said, "Listen, buddy, it's not your business to decide on whether it's going to cost you anything or not, or cause you trouble by telling on somebody else, it is your duty to tell whether you like it or not, or whether he likes it or not!" It is your duty to report something, & if somebody knows something's wrong & doesn't report it, then it is their fault as much as the other people to blame!

10. So they said, "We're working on the problem!" This was the report we kept getting! "We're going to get on top of it" etc. But instead they were apparently just withdrawing themselves from the problem & isolating themselves & kind of washing their hands of the problem. The way to get rid of a cancer is not put a bandaid over it so you can't see it, but it's to go to work with a scalpel & cut it out & do something about it!—Not just ignore it!

11. One thing you need to learn with these situations: Don't let yourself get caught criminally responsible for someone's illness or a death in the family or something by not reporting it to the authorities! I had them immediately call the doctor! I shouldn't have had to give that order from up here, for God's sake, Justus should have done that a long time ago! I had to tell them to call the doctor immediately, not because we felt that the doctor could do anything or save the baby, especially when it's a spiritual problem, but so they couldn't be held criminally responsible!

12. I want to tell you, we're not wrestling against flesh & blood, but against principalities & powers & spiritual wickedness—wicked spirits is the literal translation—wicked spirits in the atmospheric heavens, in heavenly places!—Eph.6:12. And I don't understand why people don't see that! It's a mystery to me how people can be so dumb about discerning some of these things! I even discern a lot of things I don't tell everybody, because it's not always good to tell everything you know.

13. People can become so blind & so deceived! It's like the Lord says, if they reject the Truth, then He will send them strong delusion so that they should believe a lie!—2Thes.2:10-12. They can even believe that they're absolutely guiltless! The self-

righteous sinner is the hardest one in the World to deal with! The very pious churchy Systemite is the hardest one in the World to get saved & won to the Lord!

14. Believe it or not, our job in dealing with people is a lot like psychiatry! We need to probe around into people's past & see what their past life was like—& you're apt to turn up a few rocks with a few bugs under them that are still troubling them, as we have found in this case!

15. Sometimes the weird answers that she has given you guys remind me of the weird answers I have gotten from spirits in people when I was dealing with real bad spiritual cases! (Fam: Almost all her answers were, "I imagine so." She tried not to commit herself to anything.)

16. You can talk right straight to the spirit & sometimes you have to deal directly with them, that's the thing. That's why the Apostle in his admonition along this line says, "Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is of God."—1Jn.4:2. You'd be amazed at some of the weird answers you get on that from people you even thought were saved, which you were having spiritual problems with! They'll sometimes read it or quote it, but they'll qualify it or they'll say it without any real conviction. You can tell it isn't their real personal testimony or experience.

17. And one of the strange things about this verse is that it has a deeper meaning that a lot of people don't realise! One of the pop questions to ask them is: "Do you believe that Jesus Christ has come in your flesh?"—& that one they have a harder time parrying than the other one! A lot of them say, "Oh sure sure, we all know that Jesus was the historical character who once walked the Earth, & He was here & so on, sure!" "But do you believe that Jesus Christ has come into your flesh?"

18. That's one of the \$64,000 questions that you need to ask her, because a lot of times when you're talking to these people, you don't even know it, but you're not talking to them at all! Their spirit is taken over by somebody else, & that spirit is popping the answers to you, & it's very cautious to try to give you the answers it thinks you want! Sometimes those spirits are not even as smart as the people you're talking to, believe it or not, they give some pretty dumb stupid answers sometimes!—But they have to answer!

19. So that's on the matter of talking to the spirit itself, the evil spirit, & forcing it into the open & commanding it to give its name. Now that may shock you, but if you know what you're doing & you know whose name you're asking for, they cannot resist! They have to speak their name, & it might be helpful if you'd go down to Gen & just pray with her & look her straight in the eye & say: "What is thy name?" It would probably shock & surprise her, if nothing else, but you might just get the name of the spirit that's causing the trouble!

20. The Devil tries to keep certain things concealed, but if the Lord is the One Who's worming it out, they can't hold it, they've got to tell! But you have to take authority, a commanding attitude where you're absolutely firm & you command them to answer! You probably need to not waste your time talking so much to her, when she probably doesn't even know really what's wrong with her, but speak directly to the spirit & rebuke it, ask for its name & cast it out!

21. People always wanted to come to Mother for her miracles & prayer for the sick to heal them & blah blah, but do you know what she did first?—She sat down & dealt with them for about two or three hours about their souls, their spirit, their problems & what was really wrong with them that caused them to be sick in the first place—whether it was demons or diet or whatever it was!—Whether it was the chastening of the Lord or the curse of the Devil! She was determined to find out what the cause was—not just treat the illness, which is nothing but a symptom of something spiritual.

22. We need to study her first testimony too, her back history. It's a strange thing, unlike most of our kids, she didn't tell anything very bad! She said, of course, she was involved in drugs & she drank & a few other things, but mostly that she stayed sort of out of things & never really did a lot of things the other kids did. Don't all Catholics know that the occult & that sort of thing is forbidden?

23. Well, lastly, one thing you need to do is really hear from the Lord! I know she's fearful & covering & she's afraid. You might give her the benefit of the doubt, that maybe she wasn't altogether responsible & maybe sort of excuse her for some of the

things going on, but I went in the bathroom after we'd had this conference this morning where they gave their reports from last night. I get a lot of things in the bathroom, believe it or not, it's a good place to get them because you're alone & you can go into your closet & shut the door!—Mat.6:6. It was a miracle that I didn't even expect!

24. I was standing there saying, "Lord, what is the problem with her? This couldn't have happened unless there was something wrong with her!" Even if she was ignorant & innocent & everything else, the Enemy cannot use somebody unless there's something wrong! They may not know it, they may be ignorant of it, but there is something wrong! These days you don't use that expression, but we used to say, "There's a nigger in the wood-pile!" There's a rat in the garbage somewhere. And whenever I really get desperate like that & I'm really asking the Lord—sometimes when I'm not even expecting it, I'm just kind of wondering about things—the Lord suddenly answers!

25. And I got these words—"the rebellious woman!" I thought, "Lord, wait a minute, is she really a rebellious woman? Is she that bad? What's she rebellious about?" "The rebellious woman!" And right away it dawned on me, "That's a Scripture! I've heard that somewhere!" The Lord gives you the key, He gives you a word or two, & this is the key which unlocks the door! If you will look up the passage itself, the Scripture, maybe then you'll get the whole story! You get one little clue.

26. It turned out to be in Samuel, I Samuel 20:30. So I had Faith look it up & she began to read it. She said, "Do you know what that says, that's the baby's name, it's Jonathan!" I'd even forgotten that, I didn't remember they'd called him Jonathan! "Then Saul's anger was kindled against Jonathan"—of course Saul kind of represents the Enemy—& mind you, in this same scene he tries to kill him!

27. So the significance of this is when the Enemy cast his javelin at Jonathan trying to kill him, who he really wanted to kill was David! He was trying to hurt Jonathan in order to hurt David. The Enemy knows if he kills the baby it will probably reflect on us & try to hurt us in some way, you understand? We don't want to miss this point: Who the Enemy's really trying to

hurt is me, through hurting Jonathan. But the specific thing about it is that it calls Jonathan the son of the perverse, rebellious woman!

28. Now that is an amazing Scripture to get! I don't know the Bible that well to remember some obscure verse like that & all the shenanigans that were going on then, but I got those words as clearly as I ever heard the Voice of the Lord! I said, "My Lord, there must be something wrong with her or all this wouldn't happen, & to her baby. You're not dealing with the baby, You're dealing with the parents & apparently her!"

29. These husbands & wives covering for each other is a real problem! They don't want their husband to lose his job or they don't want the wife to be sent away as a problem, so they cover cover cover for them! And we've had this happen so many times! Haven't you had that happen with some of your folks, where the guy's got problems & he's honest with his wife & tells the whole tale, but she won't come out & tell it to you for fear it's going to get him in trouble? Or the guy knows the wife's problems & all about her, but he doesn't want to tell on her or rat on her because he thinks that's going to maybe get him in trouble or her in trouble! Right? It's really a problem!

30. One of the first things you do with cases like Gen is you make them pray to Jesus in Jesus' name & ask Jesus to help & deliver them! That's the way we got the victory with that 17-year-old girl in Oakland who was having violent epileptic fits!

31. There is something about these pronouncements of faith out loud in words & using the Name of Jesus, Beloved! Don't hesitate to use the Name of Jesus & make the subject pray in the Name of Jesus & say the Name of Jesus & ask to be delivered in the Name of Jesus, again & again!—Not making them but asking them to pray in the Name of Jesus! "Jesus, I love You! Jesus, I believe in You! Jesus, I don't want anything that's not of You, Jesus! Jesus, please deliver me, Jesus, help me!" (See No. 345, "The Name of Jesus!")

32. As far as I'm concerned, God has spoken & that's it!—Whether she likes it or not or is willing to confess it or not! Her only hope is to confess it! She has turned aside from the right way & the Truth. Somehow, somewhere, some way, she's rejected the

Truth. She has some reservations or doubts about some of the Letters or doesn't believe it all, or some skepticism about me or something.

33. (Fam: She doesn't use the Name of Jesus when she prays.) These people who pray "Father God, Father God", that's awful distant! (Faith: That's the way she's prayed ever since I've known her, I always thought it was the weirdest thing, "Lord Father God!") Well, why didn't you ever say anything? I'm always leery of people who don't pray in the Name of Jesus!

34. Well, that's that! What need we more than this? Let's quit wasting words! The Lord rebuked me the other night when we were discussing & discussing about something & all kinds of ideas & theories—& boom!—The Holy Spirit got a little fed-up with all this talk & then again gave just a key phrase that answered the whole thing! And I looked up the Scripture & there was the whole works right there, the whole answer. We talk too much! Amen, Lord, thank You for this answer!

35. This is kind of like a lesson & an experiment or an experience in how to deal with these cases. We've gotten the whole history of everything & we've talked over everything & we know what the symptoms are & what's going on & all this, & we've come to several conclusions. We knew it was the Devil's work, we knew the Enemy was working through somebody, we have found out who it was & is, & the only thing we didn't know was what was wrong with them, why he was using that person, how come he could get in & use that person, & then the Lord gave us the answer to that. So now what is the next step? It just dawned on me what this is going to be a test of!—This is going to be a direct challenge to her & a test of her faith in the Word of God! What is the next step when God has given the clear-cut answer of what the problem is?

36. See, now God's getting to the root of the problem, where the fault is, where the sin is, what sin it is & who has got it. When a doctor finds out what the trouble is, where the fault is, what the problem is, then what does he do? The doctor has spoken & given his diagnosis, so now the patient has to be confronted with that diagnosis, & the patient has to either believe that the doctor is right & is speaking the truth & rightly diagnosing, or the patient

is going to say, "No, I don't believe it, I'll go to another doctor! I'm not going to have my guts cut out, I think you're wrong! I don't believe in this doctor & I'm not sure he's telling the truth, that's not what's wrong with me, it's something else!"

**37. She is going to be now tested with her faith in God!** Would you say she's self-defensive? Do you realise what that means? God has now given me this revelation of who is wrong & what is wrong with her, so the next step is what? God is the Judge, He's the Diagnostician, the Doctor! I'm nothing but an orderly who passes on the Word of the Doctor.

**38. The next step is she has to be confronted with God's answer & she is either going to believe it or not—& that is a pretty serious charge God has charged her with!** She is either going to break down, humble herself, cry out to God, confess the whole works & ask for mercy, or she's going to again be evasive, defensive & not really confess. She can't just say, "Well, I guess if he said so, it is so" & that kind of stuff. It's gotta be an all-out confession, absolutely all-out!

**39. She is the one & that is her problem & you have to face her with it & command her or that spirit to answer!** That's going to be the deciding thing, whether she accepts that or not. Judging by her past performance, it will be a miracle of God if she does! I mean, that's a pretty strong way for God to put it! If the Lord had put it in a little milder way, she might have gotten by somehow, but for God to say that about her & for her to be confronted, that she is a perverse rebellious woman & therefore the Enemy is trying to kill her son Jonathan because he wants to hurt me, striking at Jonathan in order to try to strike at me, that's pretty strong!

**40. If she rejects it, then she is also really rejecting the channel!** She's saying it wasn't the Word of God, he didn't get it from God, that's just MO. If she gives that kind of an answer, then she's not accepting it. The Lord made it sound bad enough, that she has either got to break down & confess it or she is really in bad shape! She's going to have to be impressed with how bad that sounds & how bad she is. She can't beat around the bush any more saying, "If he says so, I guess it's so".

**41. So now she's got to be faced with that—who's going to**

have the guts? Maybe you'd better go down there & face her with it tonight. I don't like these confrontations, I will confess, because they go one way or the other. When you precipitate a crisis it goes one way or the other, all the way for God or all out for the Devil!

**42. I said to Maria, I want you to tell Lydia to face Justus down!** He is the Shepherd of that Home & I am going to hold him responsible for anything that happens there, & it's been due to his neglect & failure to know what was going on & to find it out & to report it & to do something about it! The Scripture says if you can't rule your own house, you've got no business trying to rule the church!—1Tim.3:5. In other words, he's got no business being in any position of authority at all if he cannot handle it & cannot take care of his sheep! It's been his neglect!

**43. If Gen gives the same kind of run-around she's been giving about everything else, that's obvious evidence that she doesn't accept the evidence!** What did the dictionary say about the word "rebellious"? "Refuses the evidence." If she really believes it & accepts it & really comes out in an all-out confession & a real breaking & a real genuine repentance—which is the evidence, "brings forth the fruits meet for repentance"—she's going to show evidence of real genuine repentance. And if she does that genuinely, God is going to answer prayer & deliver her. I believe that much, if she really is sincere & really does it. But you're going to see how sincere she is when she's confronted with that horrible Scripture!

**44. Well, it's a relief to get an answer from the Lord, to know what the problem is, thank God!** You don't know what a relief it is to me! When it's just your word against her word, you can keep going 'round & 'round & 'round, but when God has spoken, then she's either got to accept it or not, that's it! Praise God! Thank You, Lord, for the answer, even though it's going to be a tough job! We'll have to pray for the one that delivers it. Facing the Devil down is not all that hard to do, because you have the power of the Lord, but some of the reactions are sometimes not very pleasant!

**45. It's like the old story about, "If you can't be a famous man, assassinate one!"** These people who don't want to be

famous with us can only be famous by turning against us. And there are very charming witches, in fact, all the witches I ever met were very charming people!—Real charmers!—Ha! I'll tell you right now, the Devil doesn't always try to scare you to death, he quite often tries to charm you to death! Well, praise You Lord! Thank You Jesus for the answers! "I may not know all the answers, but I know the Answer Man!" PTL! God's got all the answers! TYJ! TTL! HAL! PTL! He knows it all!—Gotta problem? Try Jesus! He is the Answer! PG! TYJ!—In Jesus' Name, amen!

## UNTYING THE KNOT!

DO 1442 4/75

—The Gen Story, Part 5

**1. I went to bed praying desperately, "Lord, what shall we do about this problem with Gen?"** Early in the morning I got up to go to the bathroom & then back in bed again. I thought I went back to sleep again, but in the morning Maria told me I had gone right on talking & given the Lord's answer to the whole problem & what had to be done:

**2. Tell the girls, Lydia & Faith, to go back down as early in the morning as they want.** But don't make a big deal out of it, don't browbeat Gen. Just merely present the Lord's answer & watch her reaction. If she is genuinely sincere & wants to be delivered, that verse the Lord gave ought to break anybody, because it just completely exposes her.

**3. If she does not completely break down & repent, there is no use having some big scene of exorcism.** The best thing you can do then is just smooth it over. We'll just have to phase her out somehow. Unless there's hopes for her, it's better to just phase her out, even if we have to lose him too!

**4. By going ahead in that marriage without permission, Eman got out of God's Will.** The first time I saw her picture I thought she was plumb crazy, mentally deranged! That starey-eyed, glassy-eyed look is peculiar to people who are spiritually deranged. Eyes are the window of the soul!

**5. With insane people you have to humour them, not to confront them or precipitate a crisis.** If you see she's obviously not

receiving it & not contrite & not breaking down & not wanting to be delivered, genuinely, it's better just to pacify her & keep her as a friend, as you ease her out!

**6. In fact, I don't know now whether we should even give her the verse!** It might be far better to peacefully send them back than to have a big explosion, than to have her go completely daffy & try to kill the baby or something! She's not receiving treatment.

**7. If it had not been for the recommendation of others, I would never have sent for that woman!** I knew she was crazy from the first time I looked at her picture! So what we're really doing, in effect, is sending her back to her former Home. They gave us the problem, now they're going to have to take care of her.

**8. God is really furious at Jus too, for not being concerned about that little lamb, & he's unworthy of being a shepherd because he was unconcerned about that baby.** The fact of the matter is, the unconcern of all of them about that little child has shown them all unworthy of the honour of being here. God was testing them through that baby. The protection of that little lamb was the protection of the Word!

**9. One little lamb in the flock is more important than Jus' job!** If we don't care for the lambs, the Words are of no avail. It reminds me of the way Nathan walked in & pointed the finger at David.—2Sam.12:7. David thought, "This is a small thing, nobody will ever know!" But he lost the Kingdom over it, at least for awhile.

**10. The Lord forsook the ninety-&-nine in the fold & went out to look for the one lost sheep!**—Luk.15:4-6.

## EXPERIENCE WITH GEN & BABY! DO 1443 4/75

—The Gen Story, Part 6

**1. We just told Lydia to go marching off with Eman to work, seemingly to work, with the full knowledge & within the eyesight of dear Gen, to see what effect this would have on the baby, to try to see if, according to her spirit, what happens, & with orders to Jus that if anything did happen to come get Eman right**

away. I wanted to see if she got upset, the baby would be upset. But she apparently figured he had to do something & she got along fairly well most of the afternoon, except they said the baby was fussy. But then when he stayed overtime—longer than she apparently felt he should stay—the baby began having fits again! But as soon as he got home, everything was fine again. It's really a pitiful case!

**2. Well, Beloved, I believe God, that's all I know!** When God gave me the answer, that's it, whether anybody else wants to believe it or not! Apparently in her heart, no matter what she tries to pretend, she is a perverse & rebellious woman! And when Lydia announced that Eman was leaving to go to work on orders from me, what did you say she looked like, Lydia? (Lydia: That real funny stare comes just like, "Oh no!" She began to object that the baby might have a bowel movement & that's when the baby started having fits yesterday. In other words, "Don't go, the baby's going to have a fit!"—Like threatening & doubting.) Pitiful, it's really pitiful! Poor baby!

**3. Well, if we let it go on at this rate, she'd be running the Home & getting things her way & whatever she wanted!** Once the Lord's given the answer, which we got yesterday morning, that's what it will have to be. But we've all learned a lot of good lessons, haven't we?

**4. We'll see how things go tomorrow without you & your influence.** We've never tried this test on a case like this where a baby was affected, in other words, where a third party, you might say, was affected. But we've tested this out on adults who had this problem to see if when things didn't just go their way, if they would then throw their fits etc., & it almost always worked. Whenever they were not placated & pacified & humored & babied & pampered, when things didn't go just the way they wanted it, then they'd have their spells or their fits! Well, when a third party is concerned—in other words not only the Enemy in the first subject, but the second subject, that little baby who can't pretend or normally wouldn't do such a thing at his age—then you know it's something very serious spiritually!

**5. With these other subjects we've had experience dealing**

with before, they never want to cause quite enough trouble to really totally lose their happy home unless they're pretty well fed-up & they really want to backslide & go home & forget it all! They usually want to be just barely good enough to be able to stick around & cause trouble, not quite bad enough to get thrown out! In other words, if she can kind of keep control of the situation now & get things her way & get a lot of attention, that's what she's after, so therefore she wouldn't mind staying.

**6. And of course Jus is paying for his neglect!** He didn't give them the attention they needed before, so now he & the others are having to give them nearly all their attention! Things have a way of working that way—we reap what we sow.

**7. She's right when she said she wouldn't be here except for the fact that she's Eman's wife, that's the truth!** Because she had no particular talent that we knew of at all that we needed here, except we had hoped that she would turn out to be the housekeeper & the baby-minder, because everybody else had jobs. Instead of that, everybody else is now having to do the housekeeping & the baby-minding while she's doing pretty good! So instead of her being a help, she's turned out to be a real hindrance, and we can't have all these shenanigans delaying the Work of the Lord! It's absorbed too much of our time already.

**8. Will you all please keep a very close eye on Gen?** We were amazed that you're letting her go out shopping alone, because this has always been strictly against the rules, particularly with weaker brethren or sisters or problem cases. From now on she must never be left alone at home or be allowed to go out anywhere alone. If she should become disgruntled or angry with us or very unhappy about her situation or being here, all she would have to do to cause us a great deal of trouble would be to drop a letter in the mailbox to someone outside, revealing our whereabouts, or even make a phone call. She must never be left alone at any time from now on till this problem is solved.

**9. Gen does not seem to be responding to the Lord's answer by really desperately wanting to be delivered, & those who have been down there don't seem to think she's had any great change of heart.** She still seems to be defending herself &

trying to impress upon them that the whole affair is due to natural causes & that she & her past have nothing to do with it. As long as she takes this attitude it will be impossible for her to get the victory over the Enemy.

**10. Only an honest confession of the truth & acknowledgement of the danger** & a genuine desire to be fully delivered, a true breaking & humbling & a desperate crying out to the Lord for help is the solution in such cases, & from what we've heard, she doesn't seem to realise the seriousness of this. If her spiritual condition is as bad as the Lord has indicated, unless she has a very genuine change of heart, she poses a very definite potential threat to the work here in her present state of mind & heart & the condition of the child.

**11. It would do no good to merely send her & her husband & baby back**, because in her present state she could very easily say where she's been & what she's been doing & who with, & this could totally blow our cover & security & we would all have to move anyhow. So as far as we can see, unless she gets the victory & is delivered, that's what we're all going to have to do anyhow—move out entirely!

**12. It has surely taught us a lesson we shall never forget**, & that is to mind the checks of the Lord & not accept other people's word & references as we did in her case. It has also taught me a lesson I think I shall never forget, to never again jeopardise our security in the same way by working so closely with a team that we're not absolutely sure of every single member & their total devotion & loyalty. This is another case where mate-covering-for-mate was reluctant to expose the true attitude & spiritual condition of another member of the team, even though they were already aware of it.

**13. It has therefore resulted in a very serious problem that has endangered the whole work**, so much so that unless her condition & the condition of the child should show a drastic change for the better very soon, we're going to have to make some major changes, to our great regret. Only a direct miracle of God in her heart & the condition of the baby could save the situation now. God help us!—Love, Dad.

## **PRECIPITATE A CRISIS!**

—The Gen Story, Part 7



Devil! Have you prayed over anybody that you felt was possessed with an evil spirit or drugs or something else & that the Lord delivered them? That's close. Well, even if you haven't, there's always a first time! It's a commandment right in the Bible!

**3. I commanded you guys to go down there that night & agree together in the power of the Spirit & cast that thing out!** Now what happened & why didn't you do it? You all went down & just prayed?—Don't give me that kind of an answer! There's a difference between just praying & literally commanding the spirit to be gone! Now did that ever happen at that session that night?

**4. Who took control of the situation & ordered that spirit out?**—Talked to the spirit personally, directly, & commanded it to leave? Why didn't anybody ever do it? That's what I told you to do! Well, I don't think we're being fair to Gen. My Lord, think

of what you're doing! You're sending the girl off without even giving her a chance to be delivered!

5. Now it doesn't sound like she wants to be, or at least is not very receptive as long as it injures her pride. Nevertheless, to demonstrate the power of God & the possibility & to really hold Gen fully accountable, you need to go down there & literally command that spirit to depart! Then if Gen wants it back again, that's her full total responsibility. We & the Lord have delivered her & if she allows it to come back in again, then that's her fault.

6. But in this present state, she, in a sense, is almost like its victim! It is because of sin, of course, God has called her a perverse & rebellious woman. It's because of her own rejection of the Truth, waywardness, stubbornness, pride, rebelliousness—because of sin. TYL! Hallelujah! I never thought of that before! Just in the same inverse proportion to which the righteous can have the help of good spirits according to their righteousness, so the evil are afflicted with evil spirits according to their wickedness!

7. You have to speak directly to the evil spirit & command it to depart! If you don't know its name, you can even demand its name, as Jesus & the Apostles did sometimes: "What is thy name?"—Mk.5:9. That way they can't go beating around the bush saying, "Not me, not me!"—because you're calling them by name! No wonder the Lord had to ask the name of that one case, because there were so many of them! "Our name is Legion, for we are many!"—Mk.5:9.

8. (Faith: In a way we already have the name of the spirit—Rebellion!) Rebelliousness & perverseness & really witchery, witchcraft! God's Word says, "These signs shall follow them which believe, they shall cast out demons"—evil spirits!—Mk.16:17. We use that Scripture all the time about healing, why don't we take the authority & cast out the evil spirit?

9. One of the things the disciples rejoiced about when the 70 came back was that even the evil spirits were subject unto them! And Jesus said, "Rejoice more that your names are written in Heaven!"—Lk.10:17,20. Then they came to Him once & said, "How come we can't cast out this particular evil spirit?" And He said, "Well, this kind"—showing that there are different kinds

& different powers & strengths—"goeth not out but by fasting & prayer."—Mat.17:21. I mean, a lot of real desperate seeking of God & fasting!

10. (Maria: Well, another reason they didn't exorcise it was because Faithy said she didn't really feel the unity behind her.) I want to tell you, you have got to be in total unity of the Spirit & really concentrating on it & really united together & praying desperately, all of you together, backing up the one who's leading in prayer. And if they don't, let me tell you, you need to turn around & command them & rebuke them for not cooperating!

11. I've seen my Mother do that many a time! When people were talking or moving around she'd say, "Be quiet! Stand still! You concentrate & pray with me right now! No more movement, no more talking, every one of you pray!" She used to throw the fear of God into them & try to scare them into praying desperately, "You don't want this thing to get into you, do you?" That sort of shakes people up & makes them pray!

12. Why are we so afraid to pray?—We've got the backing of God's Word! If you believe in God & you believe in prayer at all, if you believe in the Word of God, it says there plain as day, that's the thing to do! Now why don't we do it? I don't think we're really giving Gen a fair chance! In a way, we're not even giving the Devil a fair chance to expose himself! If you really pray desperately & in faith, claiming the Word of God, "These signs shall follow them which believe—they shall cast out demons!"—Mk.16:17.

13. Beloved, if there's a God, if there's a Jesus, if you believe the Bible, if you're saved, if any of this is true at all, that is true, & the spirit has to obey & depart because God's Word says so! All powers are given unto you through Jesus Christ! Jesus said, "All power is given unto Me in Heaven & in Earth!" (Mat.28:18)—& through the Name of Jesus Christ you have that power & you can command them to come out! I know it, it's the Lord! It's by His Holy Spirit, no special credit to you except that you believe, because I've done it & it can happen! You can do it, a little child could do it with faith!

14. It's a shame to just absolutely give up in defeat, it's ter-

rible! Why should we dump Gen & her problem on whole Homes of people where she's already infected several children with her evil spirits that cause fits! Why don't we go down there & get rid of them? We need to give the poor girl a chance, we need to give ourselves a chance & give God a chance to do the job!

**15. God is just waiting on us to command the situation!** He even says in Isaiah, "Command thou Me!" He's given such faith & power to man that you can even command God to do what you want Him to do for you!—Isa.45:11. If you're righteous, doing the right thing & trying to please God, love Him & have faith in His Word at all, you can ask God to do what you want Him to do. He's already promised to do it in His Word, to answer prayer, & I don't really think we're fair to that girl until we do.

**16. But you have to really be in the Spirit, let me tell you, & with the authority & power of God command that evil spirit to depart in the Name of Jesus!** In the first place, I think in all fairness to her, she has got to be faced with the Scripture that God gave. (Faith: I think that's one of the things that will give us the authority & the power!) By that authority you know she is possessed or whatever it is, whatever you want to call it, & you've got to face her with it!

**17. As far as the initial exorcism that the Lord & the Apostles performed, they didn't necessarily always have the cooperation of the individual, but to remain clean, then the will of the individual is involved. They must desire to remain clean, as the Lord Himself showed about the one where the evil spirit was cast out, but then he went & got seven more spirits worse than he was & came back & entered in, & the last estate was worse than the first!—Mat.12:45. So there's where the individual will of the subject is concerned.**

**18. If there's any possibility that that poor woman wants to be delivered, we should give her a chance to get out from under that power, & that demon has to obey!** You folks should go down there in faith & pray in the Name of Jesus & command that spirit to depart! Show her the verse, read it to her, tell her how I got it, it was God's answer, & therefore we know what the trouble is & she had better confess it! If she confesses it & is repentant & sorry & acts like she really wants to be delivered,

that's all the better! Then you've got the cooperation of her spirit too on your side to get rid of the evil spirit!

**19. But even if she won't confess it, you can still command the demon to go in the Name of Jesus!** She may let it back in later, but at least you can get rid of it at the moment just to prove and demonstrate the power of God! Then if she lets it back in it's her fault. And also show her that it's an evil spirit. The Devil may even have her deceived into thinking it's all natural. But one of the surest proofs as far as I'm concerned is the fact that every child she's taken care of has developed the same trouble, fits, convulsions and spasms, and somebody needs to tell her that.

**20. If she argues & says she hasn't got it & she's not that way**, ask her flat out, "How do you explain the fact that every child you have taken care of in the Revolution has developed this kind of trouble? Tell us, how come?" That's hardly just coincidental! God has given the answer, as far as He's concerned, of what the ultimate result is going to be, but I still think we have to give it a chance.

**21. So why don't you get down there, face her with the Scripture & tell her this is what God has said?** This will do several things. For one thing, like I told you before, it will show whether she really has any faith in God's Word through me, whether she believes what I say. If she rejects it & refuses to believe it & will not accept it, it shows that she has rejected me—which shows right where her problem is! She's rejecting the Word of God & God's Messenger! So that's bad enough even if she didn't have any other vices—rebelliousness & perverseness! Perverseness included the rejection of the Truth, didn't it?—Waywardness etc.

**22. It's just like you owe it to the sinner, in order to try to win him, to tell him he's a sinner!** You might as well save your breath if he doesn't know he's a sinner. If you don't start off by telling him what's wrong with him, & that he is a sinner, how's he ever going to know he needs a Saviour? Your job is to tell him, "You are a sinner!"—& that's your job with Gen! You've got the responsibility to go down there & tell her she is a sinner, God has said she's a sinner!

23. The Devil loves to say, "Aha, see, you're a failure! Your God didn't work, you couldn't even take care of or control this one little situation, this one little girl & her baby!" It's a stubborn situation, that's for sure, & it's a stubborn spirit, but it doesn't matter how stubborn it is, you've got the authority & the power to cast it out! Now you either have or you haven't! I mean it! If Jesus Christ is real, you have! If you haven't got the power to throw out that spirit, then you haven't got Jesus Christ & Jesus Christ isn't real, He never rose from the dead & we are of all men most miserable & our faith is in vain!—1Cor.15:19,14.

24. Apparently God for some reason wants her exposed publicly before you! He wants the Devil confronted face-to-face! He's not going to do it some nice easy way by a prayer meeting up here & suddenly she's delivered down there. She is going to have to be confronted with the Word of God & confess or not! And I'll tell you what usually happens when a sinner doesn't want to confess, it causes them to rise up in angry denial! Well, if that demon then rises up in angry denial, he's exposing himself right on the spot, & that's the time to call a spade a spade & call him by name & tell him to get the Hell out of there! Just call him by name, "You demon of rebelliousness & perverseness"—that's what God said—pride—"depart from her!" Amen?

25. Then after she is delivered from the direct power of Satan, if she still will not repent or confess & her own spirit remains rebellious & stubborn & proud, well, your job is done, because then it's her full responsibility. You have given her a chance to be out from under the influence of the Devil, but if she muffs it & refuses to accept it, then her last state's going to be worse than before! And as Paul says, if necessary, you can turn her body over to death that her soul might be saved!—Turn her body right over to Satan, if he wants to kill her, to save her soul.—1Cor.5:5.

26. You are going to see something happen, some change in her, & it will be either for the better or the worse, because you've had to precipitate a crisis! Either she's going to be delivered or God's going to turn her over completely to Satan! If she goes stark raving mad & starts climbing the walls, well, then

we've got all the better reason to get rid of her!

27. From what I can see now she has not been very receptive to yielding or accepting what the Lord has said thus far & rejects it, refuses to believe it, won't confess, won't repent, & this is a bad sign. But it could be because of the influence of the Enemy, who now has control.

28. But if you deliver her from that control & she still by her own spirit makes her own free will & choice to serve the Devil, then may the Devil take her! Because we sure don't want her with an evil spirit & neither will God, & we will need to get rid of her for sure! So I think we really need to have a confrontation & give the girl a chance & give the Lord a chance, give the Word a chance!—If it does nothing else but to expose to those there, including her husband & all, her true colours & her true problem.

29. God's Word never fails!—It either saves or damns! She's either going to be saved or damned! But you're going to know, you're going to know what she wants, whether she wants God or the Devil! If out from under the influence of that spirit, she of her own free will & choice wants to serve the Lord & be delivered, then the Lord will deliver her! If not, she'll let it right back in again & probably more also & be worse off! But who knows, maybe it will at least give the baby a chance by delivering her. If she cuts up hijinks so that she obviously shows herself to be absolutely insane or crazy, we've got a good excuse to put her away where she can't do any harm! I mean literally take the baby away from her & have her put in an institution! So she's going to do one or the other, & one or the other has got to improve the situation somehow.

30. If you feel there is anybody there who is not with you in spirit, the thing to do is like Jesus did, shut them out! Tell them to get out of the room! We don't want them getting that devil! He made them get out of the room, & then He commanded the girl to rise up.—Mk.5:40,41. If there's anybody there you don't feel is really with you & in tune & united in the power of the Spirit, then ask them to please leave. Even if in your own spirit you feel they are weak somehow & their spirit bothers you, just tell them, "Would you mind not being in here? Please get out of

the room."

31. Just choose the people that you feel really have the faith & are going to be united with you. However, if they're not there, in a way you may deprive them of a very good lesson that they would get to see. But if they have so little faith that it drags your faith down, it's better that they not be there. They can see the results afterward if necessary. They may not even understand it!—If they're so weak & vacillating as (Eve's) Stephen was the other day, one day convinced it's witchcraft & the next day saying she's a very good mother & it's all natural.

32. Don't say "if" about anything! Faith is faith, you either know it or you don't know it! You either believe it or you don't. Do you believe if you pray for that girl in faith that God will do something? I believe it! No matter what happens afterward, He's going to manifest His power & obey the commands & show you His power & the power of His Name, the power of His Word. He has to or He's not God, He has to!

33. I've never put myself really out on a limb & demanded God to do a certain thing but what He did something! It wasn't always the thing that I necessarily was demanding—usually it was—but He showed me the answer or something. When you cry unto Him with a whole heart He promises "I will answer thee!"—Jer.33:3. Now do you really want us to get rid of that problem, or do you want that problem always with you? Wouldn't you rather dump it here & get rid of it & have her delivered so you can carry on, if possible?

34. Of course, if not, then she will very likely be worse! If God's given her a chance & then she muffs it, then He will turn her over to the Devil, absolutely! She will really let the Devil in to have full control, no doubt. One way or the other we're going to get the victory.—Either get rid of the Devil or get rid of her & the Devil with her! PTL?

35. I don't think there is really any passive rebellion! It may look passive on the surface but it's very active inside! She's just the kind who just doesn't say much. But you've gotta bring it out! Precipitate a crisis! Go down there & confront the Devil & command him to go! Amen? Amen! PTL! GBAKY & help you, in Jesus' name, amen.

## REBUKE TO STEPHEN!

—The Gen Story, Part 8

DO 1448 4/75



And apparently, Mother Eve, I don't know how you did it, but I've gotten reports that you hurt their faith on the issue & argued & tried to persuade them that it wasn't really so!

2. Anybody who could hear that story & not believe it was a miracle & true, is very unbelieving, sceptical & very very weak in the Spirit! Did you or did you not, Stephen, believe that the woman was perverse & rebellious? Then the very next day, Stephen, why did you go over there & try to meddle in something that you knew very little about!

3. I can practically show you the position I was standing in when that Scripture came like a bolt out of the blue, when I cried with my whole heart, "My God, what is the matter with that woman? There must be something wrong with her or she wouldn't turn every baby she touches into some kind of a blithering idiot! What is wrong with her?"—Almost like I was asking God, "What is thy name? What's the name of these evil spirits, what's wrong with her?" I think it wasn't long after you told me you thought she was perfectly innocent, just an ignorant little innocent victim!

4. So I thought, "Well, am I crazy? Is it true? Am I so foolish as to think this woman is guilty when she's a poor little innocent ignorant babe?" And my cry was, "Lord, if there is really anything wrong with that woman, please tell me what it is! What's wrong with her?" And instantly I got those two words as clear as

anything: "Rebellious woman!"

5. And instantly I got the strong impression from the Holy Spirit that it was a Scripture that I should look up! Well, did you know that there's only one Scripture in the whole Bible that uses those exact words?

6. And when we looked up that one single Scripture which used those exact words that God gave me, that I knew by the power of the Holy Spirit was the Scripture God wanted to give me as the answer, when that Scripture on top of that said that it was the mother of Jonathan, my God, how could you possibly doubt it? How much more of an accurate Scripture could you get?—1Sam.20:30.

7. You were certainly deceived, totally deceived, because you were absolutely disobedient! We told you to do something else & you did something totally contrary to what we told you to do! You went the next day & called her a good mother, well able to take care of her child, when God had just gotten through calling her a perverse & rebellious woman! Perverse means "Turned aside from right or truth." Get that? "Obstinate in the wrong."— Meaning stubbornly persistent in doing wrong, according to the dictionary.

8. "Capricious & unreasonable in opposition." Without even good reason, capricious, almost sneeringly, like it's a big joke! "Forward, wrongheaded, wayward, against the evidence or judge's direction on a point of law". Against the evidence, she refused to accept the evidence.

9. My Lord, how much greater condemnation can you get, being called perverse? But you go over there & call her a good mother, well able to take care of her child, that it's all natural & physical. Talk about being deceived, you were really deceived!— No doubt because of your disobedience. You need to really get down on your prayer bones & ask God to help you, if you can be so easily deceived & so easily disobedient!

10. This has happened before, where you so easily & lightly disobey & go your own way & do as you please because you think that's better than what you've been told to do. (Ho: To pervert means "to turn wrong or from the right course, to wrest from the true meaning, to corrupt, to turn from truth & virtue, to divert,

form a mirror image, to go wrong or out of the right course. A pervert is one who has abandoned a doctrine assumed to be true.")

11. I mean, how much more evil can God speak of this woman? And yet you guys have to argue with Faithy at the table for two hours when she's supposed to be down there exorcising her! She spent two or three hours there where she wasn't supposed to stay—that's where she disobeyed! She let the old prophet (Eve & Steve), draw her aside from the Will of God, when I told her to go straight down there & do it!—I Kg.13:18-32.

12. "Capricious: Humorous, full of caprice, changeable, change of humour or opinion without reason, a freak, changeableness." And it comes from the French, Italian & Latin root word for Capra, a goat! (Symbol of the Devil!) Gen's like a stubborn goat! What more could God possibly say? And yet the next day some of you came back convinced that she was still innocent!

13. All I have to say is some of you are pretty weak in faith & pretty easily led astray! When she was wrapping you around her little finger & so easily deceiving you, Stephen, did you never think of the verse that God gave, or had you forgotten it totally? Did you remind yourself when you were under the influence of the Devil? Did you cling to the Word of God as a strength to you when you were literally under Satanic attack through disbelief? Did you cling to God's Word, or did you think of the verse at all?

14. I know the Holy Spirit is faithful, but when we disobey, then of course we reject the Truth & we are allowed to have strong delusion & believe a lie!—2Thes.2:10-12. It seems to me if I were going to deal with a mad woman, demon-possessed, of whom God said she was all these horrible things, I would have really been on my guard & claiming Scripture every minute & remembering what God had said!—And you never even thought of it! She really had you influenced, didn't she? You exonerated the guiltiest party of all—the mother! You don't remember that she pointed her finger directly at the baby & said, "Jonathan, you stop it!"—& it stopped just like that & never had another fit! You

never even noticed that? Of course not, Son, you were in delusion because of disobedience!

15. **She had you totally persuaded!—The very next day after you'd already heard the Word of God!** You know what the Lord calls that, Son? He calls it "wavering like the waves of the sea" (Jam.1:6), vacillation, on again, off again, gone again! Here you'd already heard the Word of God, the answer of God, & that should have been it & settled it forever with you, no matter what happened! But in nothing flat, one day later you're over there believing that woman & she's got you convinced!

16. **If you're that easily swayed, Son, I would stay away from somebody like that,** because you're too easily deceived, which means you're too weak in faith. That's what God's Word says. You need to get stronger in the faith before you face the Devil!

17. **I suggest that when you finally go to clinch it, Faith, that you don't have anybody along who's fearful or not sure or is wavering at all!** If you're that easily disobedient & therefore that easily deceived & therefore that weak in faith, Stephen, I would warn you to stay away from where the Devil's operating that powerfully, or you may become a victim yourself if you don't look out! I mean it!—If you can't believe God any longer than 24 hours, & turn right around & say the exact opposite of what God has said about the woman!

18. **You may be young in faith & young in experience, but this is no excuse!** There is no reason why you shouldn't believe what God has said. But of course, in disobedience it was very easy then to be deceived, because you were already disobeying God by not doing what we told you to do.

19. **Gen must have been in absolute control of the situation with the power of the Enemy!** Unless you know what you're up against & know the kind of an enemy you're facing & what you're dealing with, all of your little ideas were just of no avail! I think she let it happen deliberately that way so it had fits in your arms, so that when she took it back she could turn them off & show you how much better the baby was with her than with anybody else—even with you, who supposedly believed in God & supposedly had the power of the Spirit! The Devil really had you on the run!

20. **There are some areas in which every one of us need to watch out for our weaknesses & our weak spots & not try to get into something where we don't belong & for which we haven't got the faith & we don't know how to handle the situation!**

21. **The pitiful part about it, Stephen, is it has happened with you & Eve again & again & always through disobedience,** not doing exactly what we told you, having some other "better" idea & doing that instead!—Right? You cannot have faith & believe in God & in His spiritual power when you're acting in direct disobedience & when you don't do what we told you to do! You were disobeying God, because we are your superiors in the Lord & you should have done it!

22. **God picked out a Scripture that I didn't even know existed,** speaking about Jonathan's mother as being the perverse & rebellious woman through which the Enemy was trying to kill David, through Jonathan! How you could disbelieve that the very next day is beyond me!—Except you were disobeying, so you were subject to the lies of the Devil!

23. **I think you need to really stay close to the Lord, Son, & watch out about such disobedience,** since you seem to be a little prone to this sort of thing. Apparently the Enemy really attacks you on it because God is trying to use you as a faithful messenger, so quite often you're very unfaithful! The Devil really attacks you, but you should beware of that & not be ignorant of his devices & be expecting his attacks! (But poor Stephen only grew worse, until both he & Eve departed from us!—May God help you to be warned by their horrible disobedient example! It could happen to you if you don't stay close to Him & His Word & His Work! God help you not to disobey & go back like they did!—In Jesus' name, amen!)

---

## WHERE TO DEAL WITH GEN'S PROBLEM

—The Gen Story Part 9.

DO 1452 4/75

1. **If the baby dies, it is Gen's own fault & her own doing, because she has delivered herself to the Devil!** God knows the baby is innocent & it'll go straight to Heaven, so that's not the



she is totally abandoned.

2. (Mother Eve: Does this mean that if you see some change that you would like to keep them here?) It would have to be a drastic monumental change in her! I would have to hear that she broke down, wept & had a real breaking, crying out to God & confession & begging for forgiveness and a terrific repentance, a great repentance & a great deliverance, obviously, before I ever would keep her here! (Mother: She cried her eyes out one night.) But according to the testimony of others, she's been hardening now and she's hardly even putting up a pretence any more!

3. Saul wept every time he saw David, but he didn't weep because he was repentant, he wept because he was sorry he was getting caught! He wept because he was sorry over losing the kingdom! He wept because he was sorry David was taking it over! —ISam.24:16; 26:21.

4. The thing I'd like to hear her confess is that she was more involved in Satanism than she's been willing to confess thus far, & confess that it's had power over her, whether she realised it or not. The thing I would like her to confess is the Word of God & the Word of His Prophet, which God is sending down to her!

problem. Now, where & when you want to try to exorcise her is the problem!—Whether you want to do it here or on the boat or wait till you get to Italy. That's something that remains to be seen, but you have got to give the woman a chance to be delivered before

If she confesses that one Scripture is true, that's the acid test, that's the test! Whether she confesses anything else, that covers the whole situation as far as God's concerned: She's the mother of Jonathan & a perverse rebellious woman! "Rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft", which means she is just as bad as a witch!—ISam.15:23.—And she has got to see it & confess it & be asked those questions.

5. The thing that I am convicted about is this, I don't think we ought to let her get away from us before we at least try to get her delivered! I don't necessarily mean here, but somewhere where you're going to have a lot of strength & a lot of unity & a lot of help. If she doesn't respond & goes crazy, runs amuck, wild, gets violent or something, where would you want it to happen? Here? Is this the best place for it to happen? Would we want it to happen here? (In Tenerife!)

6. She needs to be exposed before the congregation so that all may see it when it happens & teach them all a lesson in witchcraft & demonism, how to handle these situations & what happens if the subjects don't respond, if you're not successful, and where, if she goes stark raving mad or tries to get violent and kill herself or the baby, she can be put away in some institution.

7. I've been thinking about it ever since we've been talking, "Lord, I feel we owe her a chance of deliverance, but does it have to be here?" Because if she doesn't respond—which it looks like she may not because of her attitude—& if she's that perverse, if she's as bad as God says, she's not likely to. The Lord had to make some of you today willing to do it, because God's dealing with us.—Even though this may not be the wisest place for it to happen.

8. I rang the bell, closed the book & quenched the candle on the whole affair! This verse I got supernaturally, as Maria knows, & therefore it was the answer as far as I was concerned, & as far as I was concerned, that ended the matter & it was closed! And I got so relieved of it that day that I was able to go ahead with you folks on some very important business discussions & decisions. And immediately afterward I got a major revelation from the Lord & God's Will for you folks & all of us

& what to do, I began to get answers just like that! (The New Revolution!)

9. We got some tremendous victories, made some great decisions about our warfare, & it was a real turning point, because we had just closed the book on the Gen subject! I refused to let that God-damned devil detract us from the work of God anymore! We won a monumental victory! I got a monumental revelation that morning & a monumental revelation a short time afterward when I put this thing out of my mind.

10. Well, I believe God has let it all happen to teach us a lot of lessons & to show us how to handle these situations, which are going to get worse & worse as time goes on in these Last Days! You kids need to know about all of this & what to do & how to do it. At the same time, though, we have had to have this experience to teach us some lessons & to learn how to handle it. But we cannot let it all stop us from going on. When God is finished, He's finished, & this was the answer & the end, as far as God was concerned, right there!

11. The first thing & the best thing you've got to do is have a public session where this is read to her as a revelation regarding the verse of Scripture I got, she's confronted with it, & she has either got to break down & confess it & repent, or explode & deny it & say it's not so, that that verse is not so & God's Prophet is not true & that she is not so, thereby exposing herself before the whole congregation & showing what's wrong with her. Then when she explodes, command the devil to depart from her!—Or whatever she does, even if she breaks down & cries like she's sorry.

12. You know what dear Saul was always sorry for most of all?—Getting exposed before the people! That's the thing that bothered him the most! The Devil & his dirty work don't like to be exposed—except when they win the victory & get the credit for it! Like that picture, he would have loved to have gotten credit for that! (See "Chinese Demon", No.1436.)

## THE DEVIL EXPOSED!

The Gen Story, Part 10

DO 1454



(After Faithy's session with Gen:)

1. The Devil is not like God, he doesn't know everything! He only knows what God's already said & already done. He knows what God has publicly predicted that He's going to do, like the prophecies etc., so he knows the course of history & what's going to happen. But we can read it too, so we know as much as he does about that! But he does not know God's every move & what God's going to do next!

2. It's just like two generals at war! God is the One Who usually takes the initiative—the Devil can't act until after God's already acted, because he doesn't know what God's going to do! Once in awhile he tries to pull a fast one & act first, but usually whenever he does he makes the wrong step, he does the wrong thing, which literally hangs himself, trips him & exposes him!

3. So the Devil, not really knowing what Faithy was going to do, the minute she walked in he made the baby throw a fit, about the worst she's ever seen! It was as though the Devil was trying to pin it on her, that she's the one that upset the baby, & she's the one that caused all the trouble!—As though to give Gen an excuse to say, "It's their fault, not my fault!"

4. But what he did was expose himself! He showed that he was still a real problem & causing lots of trouble, which is what they needed to know today because they had just gotten slothful in saying, "Well, the baby's all right!" Eman even said, "My wife's healed now & everything's fine, no problems, everybody's happy!" But to prepare them for the news they got tonight they had to know that things were not just fine & the baby was in bad shape! So the minute Faithy walked in, boy, the Devil was mad!

5. Till finally she really got mad at the Devil & walked over

& laid hands on the baby & cussed the Devil out & rebuked him, really in righteous anger, & the baby pulled out of it just like that & was totally calm for the whole rest of the conference!—Showing it was absolutely the Devil! She didn't weakly pray for it, "Lord, please heal it, please bless the baby, blah, blah, blah." Those little namby-pamby prayers aren't going to do a bit of good in a case where you're dealing with evil spirits! You've got to address the Old Boy himself & rebuke him, call him by name if you can! You don't necessarily have to scream for God to hear you, or the Devil either, but it is a manifestation of the righteous anger of God! God is angry with the Enemy!

6. **She got mad & rebuked the Devil, she called him the Devourer!** That's the way the Lord reveals those things, that's probably his name. Of course, that's the Devil's name. (See 1Pet. 5:8) Let me tell you, that spirit could be, because this is pretty important business & we're pretty important people on this Island! It could be that, just like Judas, the Devil's not leaving his business to any second lieutenant! She called him the Devourer! That's interesting, the Old Boy himself is giving us his personal attention, how about that! She jumped up & laid her hands on the baby & rebuked the Devil & the baby pulled out of it just like that! Gen probably saw that your magic was bigger than her magic & began to behave herself—she didn't want to lose her magic altogether!

7. **That's what you call the anointing of the Spirit, Honey!** You suddenly got the anointing & you no doubt called him by the right name! It was the Old Boy himself! That's the way it came on me that time I prayed for that girl in Oakland. It was totally unexpected, I hadn't the faintest idea God was going to use me to do that! It was just like an outburst of the Holy Spirit, the anointing just suddenly hits you! I just suddenly felt led to stretch out my hands on that girl's head & just rebuked the Devil & the spirit of fear in the Name of Jesus & socked it to her—& him—& she snapped out of it just like that! TTL!

8. **It's got to be God's timing, God's opportune moment, God's set-up!** Just like when the time comes for the final confrontation with the Old Boy himself in her, you'll know. God will anoint you the same way, you'll know just when it's supposed to happen. God will say, "Now!" Boom! Just like the General in

command says, "Don't fire until I tell you!"—And all of a sudden comes the order: "Fire!"

9. **God's timing is important! You've got to wait till you see the red of his eyes!** The Devil could feel in your attitude that there was something big coming & he figured he'd attack first before you got it across—but that's where he stuck his neck out & really blew it, because by attacking, he exposed himself.

10. **Since the Enemy doesn't always know what's coming next, he tries to outguess the Lord!** It looked like maybe Faith was coming in there to have the final big confrontation & really attack Gen or something, it looked that sober & serious, so when Faith walked in, the baby threw a big fit!—Like, "See, it's not Gen, it's Faith! It's not us, it's these people that just came in!" But the fact of the matter was, she was not there to do that at all—although the Lord gave her an opportunity to challenge the Devil & she won! By sticking his neck out, he hung himself! Because she was there to tell them something else just as sobering if not more sobering!

11. **The Devil really thought that he was going to get attacked there for sure, & maybe this was going to be the big confrontation, so he pulled out his big guns & began firing away too soon!** Instead of that, by cutting loose like that he betrayed his real position & exposed himself to all of them & showed what it really was. Because then the Lord had to prove it wasn't Faithy & us causing it, 'cause she stood up then & rebuked the Devil & got an immediate victory!—Which showed it wasn't her & it wasn't us, so it must be somebody else (Gen) who is denying it & still had the attitude all the time, like, "It's not my fault, I can't help it!" The Devil can really play it innocent sometimes!

12. **So that's the way it often happens, that's the way it works!** You don't always know exactly when or how to do it, but the thing to do is just wait for the commanding order, that's all, & when the time comes, you'll know when to attack! There's a lot in God's timing, when to do it & the right time. In fact, that's what we were having our conference about today, Beloved.

13. **That's what we were discussing today, when to make this attack, what would be the best time, best place & safest situation under which to do it.** And that was the decision we made today, thanks to the Lord, that we were going to have to give her

a chance. We had to deliver our souls & wash our hands of her blood, we were going to have to give her her chance, & we are still convinced of that.

**14. When Faith rebuked the Devil & instantly got the victory, they could see who was who!** After all, she rebuked the Devil by name & rebuked the Devourer & he immediately stopped! That proved on the spot it was the Devil, because they'd been trying everything else to get the child to shut up! It proved on the spot that Faithy was on God's side & that God was stronger than the Devil, amen?

**15. So the Devil doesn't know everything & he can't outsmart the Lord** & he frequently makes some sad mismoves, misjudging God's moves, which does nothing but hang himself like he did today! In trying to prove it was Faithy, he showed his ugly head & exposed himself instead of winning the victory. So praise the Lord! TYL!

**16. Thank You Lord for the victory!** TYJ! You get all the credit & all the glory! It's all Your power & all Your doing, Lord. It's Your Name that did it, Your Spirit that did it, Your Power that did it, Lord! We thank You! We just thank You for letting Faithy know when to attack. She didn't have to premeditate it or think about it because she didn't even know it was going to happen.

**17. She didn't plan when & where she was going to do it or how**, but the moment the time came & You gave the signal to attack, she just instantly attacked & did it! She obeyed Your voice, got Your signal & she leaped to the attack & hit the Old Boy where it hurts & won the victory, & he had to turn tail & run again! So it was plain to everybody who was in the wrong & who was exposed & who was to blame, who was on the Lord's side & why it was necessary for Faith to tell them what she had to tell them. You took the weak thing to confound the mighty! Because when we're weak, then we're strong, for Thy strength is made perfect in our weakness.—1Cor.1:27; 2Cor.12:9,10. So in her weakness, Lord, of her flesh, You were able to manifest Thy mighty power & Thy strength to overcome the power of the Enemy! Thank You Jesus for it! TYL!

**18. Help everyone here to see that the Devil trembles when he sees the weakest saint upon his knees!** He might not tremble

so much, Lord, if it's one of these people who thinks they're a stronger saint, because he knows that's in itself a spiritual weakness, to think they're strong & to think they can do it & to feel self-confident. So thank You for using Faithy today, thank You for exposing the Enemy, thank You for defeating him & thank You for the victory! PYJ! TYL!

---

## **GOD'S ANSWER TO GEN'S PROBLEM!** DO 1459 4/75

—The Gen Story, Part 11

**1. Thank You Jesus! Help us Lord!** Lord, this is a very, very serious situation & we ask that You impress on those here how serious it is as well as those down there who are listening to this tape. We ask that You get them in a real serious, sober attitude of prayer, to realise how serious the situation really is. To not take it frivolously & lightly, as some have, but that it's so serious that unless some people get the victory, they're going to be completely out of it!

**2. Some are having the idea they're just going to be moving to some other Home**, just going back to business as usual, pick up where they left off, enjoy life & take this whole affair lightly as though nothing had ever happened. But something very serious has happened, Lord, which has endangered Thy Work, has actually slowed down Thy Work, Lord, hindered the Work, caused a great deal of problems & a great deal of trouble, a great deal of agony for some who have been closely involved, a great deal of expense as well, & has become a very serious problem. Lord, we want You to impress those who are listening right this moment with how serious it is & how bad it is & even how guilty they all are for having caused us all of this trouble. Lord Jesus, help us in Jesus' name.

**3. Of course, God is not through with you yet, you have a lot to go through yet!** You have no idea what you're going to go through! You have no idea how serious your problem is! Particularly you, Gen.—And Eman, because you married her & have this poor little child by her. You went ahead without permission, without consultation, got together, & as the Lord showed in this

revelation we got later, that's where you made one of your first mistakes. Beloved, unless you get rid of the problem you have, unless you get rid of this devil that's plaguing you & your poor little child—& which has virtually cursed every little child you've laid your hands on, Gen, who also were given fits & spells—I don't know what Home is going to want you!

4. **We know it's not the child's problem, this is not a physical thing—that's ridiculous!** If so, there are a lot of children who are catching the same physical disease from you whom you have taken care of, & that is not so. They're catching the disease, all right, but it's not physical, it's spiritual! And somehow or another, Gen, you have given it to them, because that's obvious. Everybody has agreed & everybody knows that this could not just be by chance, & if you have any sense at all & any honesty at all, you will face the facts & realise that something is seriously wrong with you, very seriously wrong!

5. **Because your problem, dear little Gen, has endangered this whole project**, the whole mission, in fact is virtually cancelling it out! We tried to hint to you what the problem was in the little talk we sent you called "The Knotted Cord" (See No.1442), but from what we have heard, you really have not received it & were not willing to confess that the trouble is spiritual. You simply wouldn't believe it. Well, now we know from everything that has happened, it's quite obvious, & the way you receive this talk I am giving you today is going to be the final test.

6. **It's practically brought the work to a grinding halt—all over this problem with your poor sweet little baby, Gen!** And Gen, you know good & well it's not the baby's fault. That baby's not guilty, that baby has no sin, that baby's not responsible! God is dealing with you, Genesis, & with you, Eman! He is dealing with the sins of the parents! The baby has no sin, the baby is innocent, the innocent victim of your sins! You're just as guilty as Hell, both of you, because you tolerated it, Eman, & you've tried to cover for her & defend her when she is as guilty as can be, according to the Word of God that I'm going to give you in a moment! You are to blame! Nobody's blaming the poor little baby, the innocent victim of your sins.

7. **Any Home you are sent to will have to be warned of your**

**problems & what causes the baby's difficulty, that it's you!** So what Home is going to want to take you? You think you're going back to pick up the light-hearted life of the big Blob, to be somebody again, to sing, to be some important person, somebody's secretary, to really have a ministry again? My God, what kind of a ministry could you possibly have with a spirit like you've got?

8. **Let me tell you, people who don't want to be delivered of their problems** & are not willing to face them & confess they even have them—such as a serious spiritual problem like you have—it's impossible for them to be delivered! Because no matter how many times you get rid of the Devil, he'll come right back again, & sometimes with seven more devils worse than he is, & the last estate will be far worse than the beginning!—Mat.12:45.

9. **So you are in a serious condition, my dear, that has afflicted your own child.** Illnesses do not happen by accident, especially this kind, especially to a little tiny baby who certainly couldn't possibly be to blame or at fault. You know good & well that God is dealing with you. If you are a child of God at all, you know good & well that God is not dealing with the child, but He's dealing with you through the child—with all of you through the child, because it is due partly to the neglect of all of you.

10. **I know, Jus, you tried to hint at it & tried not to worry us about it, but I know you were concerned.** But you were not concerned enough—neither were you, Eman, to really find out what the problem was, until we sent people down there to make sure. May God forgive us for our delay in making sure instead of taking your word for it, but we were very busy up here with many conferences & important business. God's Work & God's Word have to go on, & as long as you said everything was all right, we took your word for it instead of making sure. Well, a stitch in time might have saved nine, but instead we just let it go on, & now things have come to a standstill! And this was why we decided that if you couldn't get rid of your problem, we would have to get rid of you!

11. **I am not honest with you, Gen, until I give you the message God gave me, & instead of letting Faith just carry it for me, I am going to have to give it to you myself!** I'm dealing with you, my dear, just as though I were right there in front of you, & I am

in spirit!

12. I cried out to the Lord! I said, "My Lord, You're obviously not dealing with the child, You're dealing with the woman, the mother—& the father. Are we wrong, Lord? Did I get the wrong cue in 'The Knotted Cord'? Are we falsely accusing her like they did some of the witches of old? Are we wrong, Lord? If we're wrong, let me know, Lord, tell me!" And the cry I let out in the bathroom was, "My God, what is wrong with that woman?"

13. And instantly I got the words just as clearly as I have ever heard the voice of God: "The rebellious woman!" I knew immediately that this was some Scripture because it sounded familiar, & I've always found that any key words that God gives are a key to unlock a greater passage which gives the full revelation! There is only one verse in the whole Bible where it uses the words "rebellious woman!"—1Sam.20:30.

14. Contention is an open rebellion, a spoken rebellion, argumentation & so on—which yours has not been, Gen! Yours has been secret, inner rebellion in your heart, a perverseness in your heart that you have tried to conceal from others, & has only been partially revealed to those nearest to you. You can imagine our shocked amazement when Faithy opened her Bible to that passage, 1st Samuel, 20th chapter & 30th verse!—And I suggest you folks down there open your Bibles right now & look at it. Can you imagine how shocked & amazed & marvelled we were when we found this verse?

15. Remember, I was asking for God's answer to your problem, what your problem is, & it spoke of this woman as not only being rebellious, but also perverse, which is even worse! And miracle of miracles, do you know who the woman is? Well, here it is!: King Saul, the Enemy really, is speaking—inspired by the Devil undoubtedly—& angry with Jonathan, his wrath being poured out upon a boy by the name of Jonathan, whom he was trying to kill, his own son, because of this boy's love for David! And what is said to Jonathan? "Thou son of the perverse rebellious woman!"—Your son's name!

16. So what was God saying through this verse? Imagine, out of the whole Bible, there's only one verse that says the woman is the mother of Jonathan, & that she is perverse & rebellious! Im-

agine that! What greater sign do you need to have than that? What greater miracle do you have to have than that, that God would so pinpoint it so as to call you the mother of Jonathan & that you are perverse & rebellious! How much more do you need to prove that God's Word is true & that God was talking about you, Gen, the mother of Jonathan—a perverse & rebellious woman!

17. There's wickedness in your heart, Genesis, perversion & rebelliousness, & God has said so! Let me have the dictionary now & I want to read you how bad it is to be perverse. You all know how bad it is to be rebellious.

18. "Perverse", Genesis, is "to be turned aside from right or truth." How many times have you doubted God's Word through me, Genesis? How many times have you been sceptical about the Letters, Genesis? How many times have you disputed the Word of God in your own heart? God knows & you know! But now God is having to expose you to us all because you tried to hide it! Even your husband knows & has confessed it! Isn't that true, Eman?

19. What else is it to be perverse? It says also not only being turned aside from right or truth, but "to be obstinate in the wrong!" This means to be stubborn, stubbornly wrong, obstinate, refusing to take correction, refusing to receive the truth, refusing to admit you're wrong, stubbornly refusing to admit you're wrong, & this has been your problem.

20. It then goes on to say "capricious & unreasonable in opposition." In spite of all the evidence, you have been unreasonable in refusing to accept it, including the evidence of the other children that you have taken care of, who also have had the same spells which that devil had cast upon them! Gen, every child you have had any great deal to do with & taken care of has had this same problem!

21. And do you know what else? It says, "Not subject to rule or form." And do you know what else it says? Do you know what the root of this word "capricious" is? It comes from the Latin word for goat! And you know what God uses goats for a symbol of, don't you?—Of the wicked!—And even particularly of Satan! The word Satan means "the hairy one", & in the old days he was pictured as a goat, half-man, half-goat! So in other words, capri-

cious also means to be Satanic like the Old Goat himself!

22. I'm sorry, dear, but you have to be impressed with the seriousness of your problem or you're never going to get the victory! You have got to face the facts & realise that this thing is of the Devil & ask God to deliver you, or you are never going to get deliverance, neither is your poor baby going to be relieved of those spells except by a miracle of God! I just hope God doesn't have to take the baby in order to deliver it from you & your Satanic influence!

23. He's giving you a chance right now by dealing with you through the child! He's doing this even in His mercy, because you won't take correction. He's using the most stringent method He could possibly use, that ought to touch any parent's heart, & that's the affliction of that poor little innocent, blameless baby!

24. It says here to be perverse is also to be wrong-headed! Something is wrong with your head, Gen! Your head's not in the right place, just like apparently your heart is not in the right place! It says it is also to be wayward & against the evidence or the judge's direction. You are fighting the evidence, Genesis, & you have been unwilling to confess that it was your fault in spite of what the Judge has said, & is saying right now!

25. God is your Judge & He has said that the mother of Jonathan is a perverse rebellious woman & that this is her trouble & this is the cause of the whole problem! This is why your poor little baby is being afflicted, to try to touch your heart to show you how horrible & diabolical is the sin that you have in your heart, & that you are not going to get rid of the problem until you get rid of that sin!

26. As long as you have that sin of perverseness & rebellion in your heart, the Devil has a foothold in your soul! He has a wedge to get in & cause you & your family & our Family all kinds of trouble! We cannot have people like that around to endanger God's Work & God's children! That's the facts & that's the proof & that's what God said, you can take it or leave it!

27. Well, I don't care what anybody says & if all the evidence were to the contrary, when I hear from God I know I've heard from God & I know that's the answer! You are a perverse & rebellious woman & you need to get down on your

knees & cry out to God for mercy & confess your sins!—Not just say, "Well, if I have been wrong, if I am perverse"—my Lord, that's no confession! You've got to be honest & really repent & say, "I am perverse & I have been rebellious!—May God forgive me & deliver me!"—Or you're not going to get the answer, at least the answer's not going to be yes to deliverance!

28. If you don't repent, the answer's going to be no & your last state is going to be far worse than the present! It wouldn't matter how many devils we cast out of you, if you didn't clean out your heart of your sin of perverseness & rebellion, those devils could go get other devils worse than themselves & come back in, & your last state, like the man in the Bible, will be worse than the first!—Mat.12:45.

29. Do you know what else, Gen, struck us suddenly when we got that verse after reading it in the Bible? I said, "My God, do you know what God calls rebellion? In this same Book of Samuel He says rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft!" It's the same as witchcraft, yet you have denied up & down that you have had anything to do with witchcraft! Whatever you did, you say it was nothing, it was little, it was light, it was not important.

30. You didn't tell us the whole truth, Gen, when you wrote us your supposed life story, your testimony, how much you had had to do with Satanism & the Book of the Dead & seances, spiritism & all the rest of it! You didn't tell the whole story, Gen, there's absolutely nothing in your testimony about it! Only after you received my reading on you did you even confess that you had something to do with Satanism!—Then you confessed that much, so we knew we were on the right track!

31. The other morning after this revelation I went to bed praying desperately & asking God, "Lord, what shall we do about this problem with Gen? If it's this serious, what shall we do?" I'm going to read you what I got here that Maria's got written down.

32. "Tell the girls, Lydia & Faith, to go back down as early in the morning as they want. Don't make a big deal out of it, don't browbeat Gen, just merely present the Lord's answer & watch her reaction." This is exactly what I'm doing right now, Gen, trying to help you, presenting God's answer, trying to spare

these poor girls the tough problem & job of having to do it!

33. "Just merely present the Lord's answer & watch Gen's reaction. If she is genuinely sincere & wants to be delivered, that verse God gave us for her ought to break anybody, because it just completely exposes her! If she does not completely break down & repent, there is no use having some big scene. The best thing you can do then is just smooth it over & we'll just have to phase her out somehow. Unless there's hope for her, it's better just to phase her out, even if we have to lose Eman too. For by going ahead in that situation with Gen there in London without permission, Eman got out of God's Will. Jus also brought this problem here & he's going to have to take care of it." Justus, you are partly responsible.

34. "The experiment was a failure because of my failure too, because I didn't mind the checks of the Lord!" That's my confession. Are you willing to make yours, Gen? "My motive was pure, to try to help the kids get the Message sooner, but our own personal security was far more important than that. The preservation of the Prophet is more important than the speed of the Message! Better the Message be delayed than the Messenger be endangered!" This is what I got in my sleep. I'm reading it to you verbatim.

35. "Jus failed to be a faithful Shepherd & his wife forsook her First Love. Eman traded the Will of God for companionship." Eman, like Esau of old, sold his birthright for a mess of pottage in you, Gen. "Eman traded the Will of God for companionship, & I failed to heed the warning of the Holy Spirit." God has outlined all of our sins, where we all made our mistakes.

36. "I got so anxious to try to improve the situation, but it was a very dangerous thing to do! I should never have done it, apparently." This means by bringing you here. Trying to speed the Message by bringing you folks here was not worth the danger, the sacrifice that we were making, the sacrifice of security & personally endangering the Message & the Messenger, which is now apparent that we've done. "In this kind of situation, God only gives you one chance, & that's that! You can't take a chance on failure at all!" Do you understand what that means? This experi-

ment didn't allow for any chances of failure! One chance & that was it!

37. "Jus muffed it because he was selfish, more interested in his wife than being a Shepherd. And she was more interested in Jus than she was in me. Eman muffed it because obviously he was more interested in Gen than the Lord's Work, so now he's going to get her & she's going to be his problem! I muffed it because I didn't mind the checks of the Lord.

38. "God is really furious at all of you for not being concerned about that little lamb! Jus is unworthy of being a Shepherd because he was unconcerned about that baby! The fact of the matter is, the unconcern of all of them about that little child has shown them all unworthy of the honour of being here! God was testing them through that baby. The protection of that little lamb was the protection of the Word!" Jus, you thought you were so interested in the Word of God that you neglected that baby!—You neglected your Home, you neglected your sheep!

39. "So God is really angry at Justus' selfish unconcern about that baby, starving to death right there in the same house! His spiritual insensibility is virtually inexcusable, so they're unworthy also, & all will have to be sent back! The whole situation reminds me of dear Sam's sad song 'Watch A Baby Die'!"

40. "Professing themselves to be so concerned about the Words, they jeopardised the whole Revolution through their unconcern about that one little child! What a condemnation! If it had not been for one woman leader's recommendation, I would never have sent for Genesis!"—Because I just couldn't believe that she, having known Genesis so long & taken care of her own children, wouldn't have sensed something was wrong with Genesis! But as we've learned before, this leader's kind of dumb about some things, almost a little confused herself sometimes. "Because I knew there was something wrong with Genesis the first time I looked at her picture!"

41. "One little lamb in the flock is more important than Justus' job!" Do you know what that means, Jus? You should have been more concerned about the lamb than you were even about your job! "If we don't care for the lambs, the Words are of no avail!" It reminds me of a little saying my brother wrote the

other day, you know the old adage, "Kind words never die"? "But", he said, "they can sound pretty sick without kind deeds to go with them!"

42. What good is all we have to say?—What good are all our sermons without samples? You were put in charge of a Home, & our Homes are supposed to be Heavenly Homes showing the Love of God, & you were unconcerned about your own members & were not even conscious of the fact you were letting a baby die of starvation right in your own Home! "If we don't care for the lambs, the Words are of no avail!"

43. In other words, I'm pointing the finger at you, Jus, for your failure, how it was partly your failure also in not warning us, not to watch, not to be careful for your flock, not to feed your sheep, not to see to the state of your flocks! It reminds me of the way Nathan walked in & pointed the finger at David. David thought, "This is a small thing, nobody will ever know, it's not very important!"—But he lost his job over it, Justus, he lost his kingdom!—At least for awhile!

44. And because of your neglect, Jus, & all of you, in a sense, you're losing your kingdom—at least here! God may be able to use you somewhere else, & I hope so. I hope we will be able to salvage some of you, at least, & retrieve some of your talent, to be able to use you again, but we won't be able to trust you with so great a responsibility again. You could hardly be trusted to be the Shepherd of a fold again, having so sadly failed in this particular instance. (And later too! Read No.954.)

45. You've been faithful in many other things, Son, faithful in the business, faithful with the Words, hard-working, diligent, good at details, good at finances, all of these things, but you neglected your people! And from what God said, that was your most important responsibility, your little lambs! And the last line of this thing I got in the night when I didn't even know I was saying anything, really strikes home, & should strike home to not only Jus but also to you!:

46. "The Lord Himself forsook the ninety-&-nine & went out to look for the one lost sheep!" While we were busy tending to the ninety-&-nine & all the Words & all the World & all those safely in the folds, we neglected one little poor lost sheep,

one poor little lamb who was horribly afflicted & literally being starved to death in your own Colony!

47. The Lord wouldn't have done that, He would have forsaken all the rest & all the other business & everything else He was doing & he would have just devoted his attention to that one poor little suffering afflicted little baby & tried to deliver it! But that's where some of you failed, & where all of us failed in a way. And this is a lesson that God is trying to teach to all of us.

48. That is God's answer, that is what God says the problem is, & I don't care who believes it or not, I believe it! I know God has spoken & I know that is God's answer & that is your trouble, Genesis, whether you are willing to confess it or ever repent of it or not! And I want to tell you right now, you're not only causing the closing down of the Home because of your personal sins & the hindrance of God's Work & the affliction of your own child, but there is plenty of suffering still in store for you, because God is not through with you yet!

49. God will not tolerate this sort of thing! God's not going to put up with it any more than we're going to put up with it! We can't have you here endangering God's Work & God's Word! But I'm sorry to say I don't know anybody else that's going to want you endangering their Home or their children either! So you can laugh at the supper table about how you're going to have another vacation & go on a nice boat ride & isn't this great fun, but it's not going to be so very funny when you find out that if you don't get rid of your problem, dear Genesis, that your end is going to be much worse than this beginning!

50. That's the serious thing that you have to face, that you have not only hindered the Word of God, delayed the Work of God, hurt God's children all over the World—not only your own child—but it's going to backfire on you & you are going to suffer from it sooner or later! You're not going on some vacation, some delightful boat trip, you're going back, Gen, to your doom if you don't get right with God & ask God to forgive you & get delivered! Because if you don't get deliverance by the Lord from this horrible spirit, things are not going to get better, they're going to get worse!—If you don't confess your sins & repent of them & turn to God & cry out for His mercy!

51. Last night after Faith left, you folks should have been down on your knees weeping & praying & fasting & forgetting dinner & crying out to God for mercy, instead of taking it all lightly & flippantly & quipping about it & flippantly joking about it! Like, "Oh well, so what, we're going to get a nice boat ride!"

52. And if you don't repent of your sins of perverseness & rebelliousness—which is as bad as witchcraft, whether you believe it or not, whether it is witchcraft or not, it's just as bad, God's Word says—you are in for trouble & trouble & more trouble, a lot more than you've got now! And Eman, you married her & you have had a child by her that needs a father, & you are stuck with her, unless God delivers her or delivers you of her! (God did deliver Eman of her, TTL!)

53. If she does not get delivered & she continues to be your wife & you were to continue to be our artist, Eman, Son, I'm sorry, but she would be an endangerment to God's Work! As long as she's still your wife & she still has that trouble, she would be a constant concern, a constant problem, just like she has been here! It's not going to be any different anyplace else, wherever she goes! Unless she gets delivered, it's going to be the same & she's going to give you just as much trouble!

54. So if you do not receive this correction & believe it, accept it, confess it, repent of it, & right now cry out to God for mercy with all your heart & soul to be delivered of that demon, your last estate is going to be worse than your first! Things are going to get worse with you, not better! You're going to cause Eman worse trouble, & the baby worse trouble, not less, except by a miracle of God! And God will only do that miracle, your having been told & warned, if you repent & ask God for deliverance! (And she did go back!)

55. And Eman, Son, I'm very sorry! We loved your art as long as it was inspired by the Lord & dedicated to God, but I can see a bad influence on you, your art, your work, because of this problem of your wife! Even these last pictures you sent up, well, it's all right, it'll do, it'll pass, but it just hasn't got that real spirit, that real umph! It's just sort of dead, it's not really inspired. I can't explain it.

56. It's just like the old coloured lady said when they asked

her what "unction" was, in other words, the anointing of the Holy Spirit. She said, "Well, I don't know what it am, but I sho' knows when it ain't!" I don't know what it is about your art—of course I do know it's the Spirit of God, the anointing & power of God, the unction of God, when it's really inspired—but let me tell you, Son, I sure know when it ain't!—And lately your art has not been too inspired! (Thank God he was delivered & reclaimed!)

57. It wouldn't be fair to send you to anybody without telling them what they're up against in you, Gen, your spiritual problem, the affliction of that child! So where are you going to go? What are you going to do? I don't know. All I know is that if you don't get the victory here & now, we can't have you here, that's for sure! Where you go & what you do from now on is going to be partly your problem!—It's ours as well, as God only knows!

58. I just know what the Lord showed me, that because of this you're all going to have to leave & we are going to have to leave also, because we cannot have that breach of security endangering either God's Work or His workers! We're going to have to close the book, ring the bell & quench the candle of the Homes here because of this, if you do not here & now get the victory & rebuke the Devil & get rid of him & help that baby, & therefore get delivered & all of you get right with God spiritually! That's your only hope & this is your last chance & I hope you do it today, because if you don't, it is the end of your Home & your work here & even perhaps some of your work later! (And it was! We all had to leave!)

59. So that's the situation, that's the Word of God, that's the answer, & you either have to accept it or not, & I hope you do! I really hope you do, because God laid it on my heart to have mercy & give you one more chance! Maybe you'll take it, I hope so. But as far as I'm concerned & this local situation here is concerned, this is your last chance, & if something drastic doesn't happen to change you, Genesis, & the baby's condition, you're going to have to leave!

60. We cannot have this keeping everybody in an uproar, constantly in a furor & upset & wearing everybody down & hindering the Work of God, dragging us all down! When one bad apple is left in the barrel, soon all the apples will be rotten! I've

always said this from the very beginning, we cannot have one problem case dragging down the whole Home! It's better to get rid of them, better to lose them even, than to have one problem case hindering the Work of God & dragging everybody down! I am sorry, but I'm sure you can certainly see why this has to be done.

**61. So may God have mercy on you & may the Lord rebuke that devil that you're harboring there!** Now Lord, in Jesus' name we ask You to help these poor people to cry out unto Thee with their whole hearts so You'll answer them & have mercy upon them! They have taken this thing lightly, Lord, "no man has stirred himself" to call upon You! "No man careth" for the serious condition of their soul!—Isa.64:7; Psa.142:4. Help them, Lord, to now cry out with their whole hearts & ask Thee for deliverance!

**62. Help Genesis to confess her sin of perverseness & rebellion!** Help her to be honest, Lord! You do not lie! "Let every man be found a liar, but God be found true!"—Rom.3:4. I know You gave the answer, Lord, & it came straight from You & it is Thy Word & I believe it! Help her to believe it, Lord, & accept it, confess, repent & get right & be delivered from that horrible evil spirit that's causing those terrible attacks on that baby, in Jesus' name, we pray! Amen. Help her to do it right now, Lord!—In Jesus' name, amen! God help us!

## GEN'S MOVE!

—The Gen Story, Part 12

(After Dad's departure from Tenerife:)

1. Eman reminds me of a lot of artists, his art is either very very good or it's sometimes poor! It depends on whether he's in the Spirit or not.

2. They say he's not doing too well, that Gen is a terrible influence on him! We are going to have to break that up somehow, because she is the Devil's tool right at the top to destroy his art! I have an idea of how to break it up, or start breaking it up. They never should have been put together in the first place.

3. That union was not of God! "What God has put together

DO 1464 7/75



let not Man put asunder" (Mk.10:9)—but let me tell you, what man & that woman put together had better be put asunder, or he's going to be destroyed! His work is being affected & we've never had so many corrections! If this union were of Thee, Lord, we would hesitate to break it up, but it has proven to be a bad influence & a constant problem & trouble & is not of Thee & she has not improved. She only improves, Lord, when she gets everything her way & things go the way she likes it.

4. What I was going to suggest is, let's start making the break & make her think it's only temporary & only a short distance. Perhaps we could move Justus & his wife along with Eman down to Rome & leave her behind! Then they will be near all the equipment they need, & that will start the break with Gen.

5. In one of these last communications, they asked me if it was all right to show Eman that note I wrote about being willing to make the break. I said he had to make the choice as to whether he wants to serve God & put God's Work first, or her. So they asked if they should show that to him now, because they're not getting along well & things are getting worse. So I wrote back & said the best time would be when he has to make the break, then show him the note to show him how I feel about it.

**6. I think we ought to shoot for the stars!** We ought to shoot for the best, & about the best solution is to get rid of her entirely, because I don't see much hope for her getting any better. You know the situation even better than I do & you know what your potentialities are here of where to put her, & for the sake of the work, & the sake of Eman's work & what we're producing, this is pretty important! So all I can see is we have got to get rid of her somehow, that's all there is to it!—Or at least separate her from him. (She's gone & he's doing great now!)

**7. I'm sure the Devil knew what he was doing when he put them together!** She connived to capture a fellow who was right near the top, & I think she knew it, that he was very influential. The Devil knew it, that's for sure! And the Devil no doubt knew what we were planning, too, about moving them close to me, so he got her mixed up with him!

**8. So moving the Creations Staff to Rome gives us a very good excuse.** We can just simply tell her there's not room for a whole big family & another baby down there, & that they're going to have to go down there temporarily, making her feel like it's not a permanent separation right off the bat. It could be temporary, they may be someplace else next, who knows! I'll let you figure out how to word it & how to engineer it.

**9. If you prefer to precipitate a crisis which might be a catastrophe or some kind of an explosion,** I'm sure the Lord can handle it, if you've got the faith & the courage & the guts to face it! But when you're dealing with demoniacs they're going to either get deliverance or they're going to go wild, like the fellow in England that you've heard about! These church people had an unsuccessful all-night exorcism, sent him home & he tore his wife to ribbons!

**10. Neither Eman or Gen know how they cracked the baby's skull down in Tenerife!** What if she decides to murder the baby & it happens in one of our Homes? If you precipitate a crisis & she gets the idea that the baby is the thing that's standing between her & Eman, she may try to get rid of the baby like she tried to do there!

**11. In the meantime, Eman can just drop out of sight & she'll never know where he is after that!** Why not say that we

think the baby is in bad shape & needs real specialists' care, & perhaps if she'd take the baby home to her parents in the U.S., maybe they will help her get it a good doctor & see what can be done for it. But we just cannot have this kind of a problem case around here, we're not a hospital! But you'd better do it fast because she's apt to do something to the baby to get rid of it so she doesn't have to be shipped out.

**12. We need to get rid of that hellcat, & fast!** Somehow we've got to get her on the plane peacefully without the baby throwing a fit & her throwing a fit! The way they got her out of Tenerife was to persuade her that it would be better for her to come back where there were better doctors for the baby, so she cooperated. You have to humour insane people.

**13. If she reacts favourably without any further pressure, fine!** But if she doesn't, you may have to lower the boom on her a little tighter & say, "If you don't want to go home to have the baby taken care of, then we're going to have to send you back to England or somewhere where there are better doctors." People are always going back to England for medical care for some reason or other, not that it's any better but they get the idea it is.

**14. So if she sees then that she's going to have to go one way or the other, she may go back home & see her mother & see if she can get care for the baby there.** You might even then offer her this hope also if she sees the baby is standing in the way: "Well, Gen, if you'll take the baby home, maybe your mother will be willing to take care of him & you can leave him there in her care." She's going to know you're going to use the baby as an excuse & we don't want her to murder the baby or commit suicide or something!

**15. So try to offer her some ray of hope,** that the baby's going to be cared for & she can leave it with her mother where it would get good medical care, thinking she can still come back & have her Eman. Not that she's going to get any better doctors there, of course, I'm just giving you the story. But it wouldn't hurt to let her think so, to try to get rid of her, because she probably thinks so anyway!

**16. If you can get her to voluntarily cooperate to go, you'll be a lot better off than just trying to railroad her out, 'cause**

she's apt to pull some real drastic action if you do! I was so thankful to God we got her peacefully off that island down there, but the only way they did it was to persuade her that they were all going anyhow and it was best for the baby, and she was very happy about it. She cooperated cheerfully & everything went fine.

17. If she says, "Well, I want a round-trip ticket to make sure I can come back", you could say, "Well now, you know that we can't afford to pay for a big long round-trip ticket, but if your parents love you & they want you to be happy, maybe they can send you the money. Otherwise we can only afford to send you one way. Then if you want to come back, your parents can send you back."

18. You'll just have to be led of the Spirit as to which argument you use & which kind of persuasion you use, according to how she reacts as you're talking to her. Encourage her that, "Well, maybe if the baby doesn't get better right away & the specialists can't do anything, maybe you can leave the baby there for treatment with your mother. Grandmothers love grandbabies!"—And demoniacs get along very well together! If there was some way to get her safely out of our hands & into their hands, I would be happy to even give her a one-way ticket straight to FreeCOG! She couldn't possibly cause us as much damage there as she can do us right here!

19. The Devil can never do as much damage on the outside as he can on the inside! Just remember the story of the Early Church: He tried four attacks from the outside & nothing worked until he finally got on the inside, & that's the kind of attacks that really did the damage! So the quicker we get her on the outside the better, in any way we can!

20. What we did there was to present the proposition first to Justus & his wife, then they along with Lydia—who has a lot of influence on Eman—presented the problem to Eman. In the note that I wrote I said, "If he doesn't want to let her go, we'll get another artist. On the other hand, if he's willing to let her go & put God & His work first, God can give him another wife." It's right there in my own handwriting—he ought to be able to know how I feel about it. (Amen! He did!)

21. I'm just giving you the pointers! Try to persuade her, because the only way you can deal with these cases—unless you want a violent reaction—is to try to get them to cooperate willingly.

22. Well, the best thing to do is to try to get her cooperation & persuade her to voluntarily go home for the baby's sake. Then if she does come back, Eman will have dropped out of this World & she will be unable to find him! But anyway, she'll probably find that out once she gets back there, whatever he writes her, & he can terminate their relationship by letter.

23. I'd approach Eman perhaps something like this: "Now Eman, you know that Gen is affecting your work & Dad's been a little displeased with some of it lately. We can see that Gen is again having a bad influence on your art & he believes it's Gen & the baby & that that's the problem, as it was before." They say he's already getting fed up with her, & I think he would accept it when he hears that you have brought word from me that I am really displeased with some of his recent art. (GBH!—He did!)

24. I may be a blessing, but also in some ways it's a terrible responsibility to have me around, because I'm really the frontline & that's where the Enemy's attacking & he'll try to get into somebody! If he can't bother me, he'll try to bother somebody in the house! And of course that's what happened to the little Creations Home that came to Tenerife. He got ahold of the one tool he could really use, & boy, he really used it!—Gen!—And made us all have to leave!

25. So drop the hint to encourage the idea that if she goes home, maybe she can get rid of the baby there & be free to come back, but also, if she doesn't & won't go home, the Creations Staff is going to have to be moved someplace quite a distance away where Eman will only be able to come home on weekends. In other words, "Whether you go home or not, you're not going to have Eman all the time!" Savvy? Then her little mind will think, "At least if I go home I can get rid of the baby & I can come back & be with Eman all the time!" Put a little pressure on her to encourage her to make the decision to go home voluntarily to get rid of the baby.

26. So just sort of drop hints without making any promises.

I don't like to lie to people, but you can say "maybe" & "possibly". Well, if she was actually delivered it is possible & maybe so, but frankly I doubt it. But I would encourage her that she's going to lose Eman most of the time anyhow & therefore she might as well go home & get rid of the baby so she won't have that problem, because we think it's affecting him & his work etc.

27. So I am serious about it. Have you got that picture pretty clear? Jesus help us, Lord! Give them wisdom, Lord, great wisdom, wise as serpents, Lord, but harmless as doves! In Jesus' name, help them with this problem.—Amen! (And he did—She left! TG! TYJ!—And Eman's doing better than ever! GBH!—Amen? How are you doing?—Are you a problem? GHU!—In Jesus' name, amen.)

---

**OBEY—OR AWAY!**—The Gen Story, Part 13  
—A Talk after Gen had returned to the U.S. & the Creations Team  
to Tenerife. DO 1467 2/76



1. I hope Gen never goes near one of our Homes, she's a witch! She will cause nothing but trouble, so I certainly wouldn't want somebody to go & officially introduce her!

2. When it comes to some things & some people, Son, I can be hard, especially when I'm dealing with the Devil himself, & that's what she represents! She is as clever as the Devil, diabolically wise. Her letters can seem so sweet & so wonderful & so pitiful, but she's as clever & diabolically Satanic as the Devil himself!

3. She is a witch, she's possessed! It was Satan's own cleverness to get her this close to us & she caused us nothing but trouble!

She caused us all to have to leave the Island, Son, to make it look like we were gone forever, that's how much trouble she caused us!—And we sure don't want that to happen again!

4. It's this serious, that if she causes us too much trouble because of her connection with Eman, we're going to have to send him back, we'll have to get rid of him, sad to say. He'd better know his job is at stake, & I made that very clear before he ever left Italy. I said he's going to have to make a choice between her or us.

5. It just makes me furious at the whole bunch of them that they didn't obey me & cut it off then! Then we could have seen the reaction then so as to know whether he was going to get to come or not, & I think that's exactly why they didn't do it, because he knew it was going to jeopardise his coming. If she blew up & exploded & landed in Italy, he wouldn't be able to come. And yes, he wouldn't have been able to come, & he didn't want that to happen. So he has strung it out & Jus let him string it out!

6. Which means they're a problem & they just about all deserve to be sent back for it! That's the way I feel. And if that happens, I don't need to be near any Creations team.

7. I am just furious that we're all back here again & they're plunking that problem in our laps again! It just makes me furious to think that they're even asking us about it when I told them what to do about it, & it just makes me feel like shipping the whole caboodle of them off again! That's what they deserve.

8. She is a demented maniac! Do you want her in one of our Homes? I want her in one of our Homes like I want the Devil in one of our Homes! I am just being shrewd, Son. I just told them what to say to get themselves off the hook. She's not a God-damned bit interested in going to one of our Homes in the States, that's not the point.

9. She doesn't want to serve the Lord, that's a lie!— She is in fulltime service of the Devil himself & she just wants to get someplace where she can cause some kind of trouble. Now we're right back at the same problem again because they didn't take care of it before they left Italy.

10. I wanted the explosion to happen then! If she came

barrelling back on her round-trip ticket to come there & explode, I wanted it to happen there, while I'm down here, not while we're all here. This is just unbelievable after all I told Jus when he sent letters to me asking what to do, & I told him exactly what to do! Eman doesn't know beans from beans! He got sucked in by her witchcraft to begin with, & I think he's still a sucker! I think every time he gets a letter from her it touches his soft spot & he feels sorry for her & he doesn't want to make the break.

11. **Imagine, the whole team had to take a boat & leave the island, everybody had to go except Alf & Sara!** I was deliberately trying to give everybody, especially Gen & Comy & a lot of other people, the impression that we had left the island for good, all of us. That's why I wasn't too worried about some of them suspecting I was in Italy, because I wanted them to think I was in Italy & no longer down here any more, & I think they got that point pretty clear from the communication we had in Zoagli.

12. **Do you know how much it cost for us all to make this round trip as a feint?** Do you know what I mean by a feint?—To make people think you're doing something you're not really doing. In order to be able to come back here again, we had to do it. Well, I don't know how many times we're going to be able to do it & get them to believe it!

13. **I hope the next team we have down here will be more obedient than they have been & have a more obedient supervisor than Justus!** Because when it comes to the showdown of what he thinks is best & what I think is best & there's a difference of opinion about it, so far Justus Ashtree has always done what he thought was best, regardless, & this is another sample of it. Whew! God help us!

14. **What the hell can I do to Justus to punish him**, to show him how awful his sins of disobedience are? Maybe I ought to send him & Eman both back. We always need a secretary, we need his wife here, dumb little girl, she apparently didn't know any better. (She does now! She was finally smart enough to leave him! GBY, Sweetheart!—ILY!—And I know you love me now! ILY!) It's totally Jus' fault because he's in charge of that Team & he's the one I wrote & he's the one I told what to do when he asked what to do about it!

15. **I think his excuse was that they talked it over & decided it was better not to precipitate a crisis at that time**, & I have an idea why they decided not to, they were afraid it might jeopardise their trip down here. Well, it's not only jeopardising them now, but it's jeopardising us too because they didn't obey! And what are we going to do to them to teach them a lesson? What do you think we ought to do?

16. **Well, the three of them apparently talked it over & decided to disobey me**, so Eman's just as much to blame as anybody, although I hold the leader of a team the most to blame. But when he managed to persuade his whole team not to do what I tell them to do, then they're all to blame & they all have to suffer the consequences.

17. **That is why we all went back to Italy, in order to resolve the problem & settle it**, break it off, get rid of her, dump her & see whatever the explosions & repercussions would be from it, find out what was going to happen as a result before we ever came back here.

18. **When I read Justus' letter asking us what to do about it**—"we never did cut it off in Italy before we left, we all decided it was better to wait & not precipitate a crisis before we left"—just the opposite of what I told him, I just could hardly believe my eyes! Because that is what we went back to Italy to do, to get rid of Gen, whatever it took! To think that they would have let us come back here again & come here themselves in direct disobedience to what I told them to do, & all the trouble is back here again without having solved the problem!

19. **Well frankly, as far as I'm concerned, Justus deserves to be fired!** Any employee who causes his boss this much trouble really ought to be fired! I mean, a one-time loser was bad enough, but a two-time loser is just too much!

20. **They've got to go back where they left God & try to find Him again**, where they left His Will & my will & the place of obedience. I know I have had to do it on occasion time & time again in my life when I didn't want to do something God told me to do & I tried to run out on it like Jonah did to Nineveh, & I had nothing but trouble & trouble & trouble! Sometimes it took me years to get back to where I left God's Will, & almost every time

I had to go back to the very place & the very situation where I left it!

**21. Send them back until the situation is resolved & impress on them how much their mistake is going to cost us & how much trouble!** They can be thankful if it doesn't cost them all their jobs, or we'd never trust them again when they disobeyed so many times. I made a crack on one of Justus' letters, I said, "While you're at it, maybe you could explain why you didn't give your Shepherds more cooperation when you were in Italy!" He wrote me back a letter that sounded like Malachi's last Chapter: "Wherein have we done this? I thought we were cooperating marvellously, getting along great!" He doesn't even see it or he refuses to see his faults.

**22. I don't usually like to give real hard orders & get tough with people.** Usually they're pretty far gone when I get that way & I lay it on the line & lay it out & say, "You do thus & so or else!" I usually give my orders in the form of suggestions & my wish should be their command! I shouldn't have to order them.

**23. I told Eman as clear as I could in a note to Justus that he's going to have to choose between Gen & his job, & that was the same letter.** I can remember writing it down the margin on Justus' letter asking me about what they should do, that they'd have to cut it off. Well, this was already a disobedience because I'd already told them that that's what they were to do before they even left here! I said, "You have to go back to Italy now & thresh this thing out & get rid of Gen & cut that thing off completely, period!" But they never did it.

**24. So it's a problem & I feel sorry for all of us!** We feel tempted to feel sorry for Gen sometimes, such an instrument of the Devil, but she's caused us so much time & trouble, I can't feel that sorry. I cannot jeopardise the Lord's Work for one weak soldier. If Eman's so feeble that he falls right in & feels obligated to her & that he needs to take care of her, then he'll just have to go, & the best thing to do would be to ship him off to the States too.

**25. See, the person who really is the problem is Eman.** If you straighten out your own heart & get your own heart right before the Lord & yield everything to God, forsake all, then the

Lord will straighten out the other things. But as long as Eman is double-minded & wavering, then it's never going to get straightened out. (Prays:) Help us, Lord!

**26. We know something is not right somewhere in the camp,** & we believe that the unyielded thing is in Eman's heart regarding this woman & her children. This is where the unyieldedness is, Lord, it keeps coming back to it all the time. He has not given it up, he does not have the victory.

**27. So as long as he is wavering, Lord, we cannot take a chance on having him here either, & certainly not her!** If he's not willing to give her up, Lord, we certainly can't have him here. So they're all going to have to learn that lesson we thought they had learned, which they apparently didn't, & have to learn their bitter lesson over again & have to go back again.

**28. And there's a Scripture I get for them!** If you want to read it to them, it's 1 Samuel 15, the whole Chapter about the background of the story. Saul went out & he won the battle, he defeated the enemy, he did all the things he was told to do except...Isn't that funny? I was just sitting here thinking, "What is wrong with those people after all this? What is their attitude?" And this Scripture came as clear as anything! (Reads passage beginning with 1 Samuel 15:12:)

**29. "And when Samuel rose early to meet Saul in the morning"**—Saul on his way back from the battle—"it was told Samuel, saying, Saul came to Carmel, & behold, he set him up a place and is gone about, and passed on, & gone down to Gilgal." Obviously he wasn't coming back to face Samuel, he was beating around the bush. I don't think he wanted to run into Samuel if he could help it! So Samuel had to go out looking for him.

**30. "And Samuel came to Saul & Saul said unto him, Blessed be thou of the Lord: I have performed the commandment of the Lord."** That's the Scripture the Lord gave me when I was sitting here. They have claimed to have performed the commandment of the Lord, but they have not. They did not! What a liar! What a hypocrite! And yet he did it so smoothly he surely must have lied to himself, so that he finally had himself convinced!—And that's the way people do, they lie until they believe

their own lies.

31. "And Samuel said, what meaneth then this bleating of the sheep in mine ears, & the lowing of the oxen which I hear? And Saul said, They have brought"—they, not him! This is Justus' typical excuse! "Well, Eman won't do it!" I guess in that you folks are right, they're all guilty. "They have brought them from the Amalekites: for the people spared the best of the sheep & of the oxen, to sacrifice unto the Lord thy God, & the rest we have utterly destroyed."

32. "We only saved them for the Lord, though we didn't quite do what you said, but we thought this was better!" We did everything else & we served you faithfully & won the battle & defeated the enemies, & look how much we've accomplished! Look at all these Letters and all this art & all this typing & all this! Behold, we have performed the commandment of the Lord!"

33. **There's no half-way with God!** There's no 90% of the way with God! "What meaneth then the bleating of the sheep in mine ears & the lowing of the oxen which I hear? You are a liar!" Samuel was saying right to Saul's face, "You didn't do what I told you to do, you didn't slay utterly!" That was his commandment, to slay them utterly.

34. **They have not slain utterly!** They didn't get rid of this woman. He didn't slay utterly that thing in his heart, it's still alive, he's still saving it. He's come, he's won the victory, he's done this, he's done that, but that thing's still alive, that evil is still alive!

35. "Then Samuel said unto Saul, Stay, & I will tell thee what the Lord has said to me this night. And Saul said, Say on. And Samuel said, When thou wast little in thine own sight, wast thou not made the head of the tribes of Israel, & the Lord anointed thee king over Israel? And the Lord sent thee on a journey, & said, Go & utterly destroy the sinners the Amalekites, & fight against them until they be consumed." That's what I told them to do when I sent them back to Italy: "Don't come back until this problem is utterly slain & gotten rid of totally!" "Wherefore then didst thou not obey the voice of the Lord?"

36. "And Saul said unto Samuel, Yea, I have obeyed the

voice of the Lord, & have gone the way which the Lord sent me, & have brought Agag the king of Amalek, & have utterly destroyed the Amalekites." Now he's trying to even throw the king in to bribe Samuel a little bit: "Listen, you didn't hear about this, but I even brought the king back with me!"

37. **It shows you how stupid & how dumb people can be when they're disobeying God & how deceived they are!** Well, as far as God was concerned, that was the worst thing he could have done, because He told him to kill them all, & yet he brought the guy back with him & he's trying to sway Samuel now in his judgement by saying, "Well maybe that was a mistake, but hey, I've got the king with me, you didn't hear about that! I've got a really famous captive, this will bring glory to us! I captured the king!"

38. "But the people took of the spoil, sheep & oxen, the chief of the things which should have been utterly destroyed, to sacrifice unto the Lord thy God in Gilgal." Now see if this isn't what Justus will say: "Well, Eman just wouldn't do it, he just wouldn't slay utterly, but in our service to the Lord we just came anyway."

39. "And Samuel said, Hath the Lord as great delight in burnt offerings & sacrifices, as in obeying the voice of the Lord?" All these little burnt offerings & sacrifices they send up the hill every day mean nothing compared to obedience. Look what it's going to do to them now—nothing—because they can't do it as long as they haven't obeyed. It'll ruin their whole work & ministry! And here comes the classic, of course, which is so famous:

40. "Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, & to hearken than the fat of rams. For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, & stubbornness is as iniquity & idolatry." That was the first Scripture I ever got for Genesis, by the way, she was rebellious & stubborn, very rebellious & stubborn, almost always, but they didn't think that was too bad.

41. "Because thou hast rejected the Word of the Lord, He hath also rejected thee from being king." If they cannot obey, they can't have their job. We can't have people who don't obey. Justus just acts like a little king down there in his little domain,

but he's going to lose his kingdom if he can't obey.

42. **The Lord was merciful to Saul for some years afterwards until He could train somebody else to take his place.** He had to put up with him for quite awhile, & we just about have! And if they don't straighten this thing out now, then we are going to have to get somebody else to take their place, period, & that's that.

43. **Now Saul puts on this big act: "I have sinned: for I have transgressed the commandment of the Lord, & thy Words:** because I feared the people, & obeyed their voice." Let's see who he fears the most. "Now therefore, I pray thee, pardon my sin, & turn again with me, that I may worship the Lord."—In other words, before the people so they won't know about it. "Please come into the tabernacle with me & show that I am still in good favour with God. Cover for me, will you Samuel? Please cover up for me!" Well, I can't cover for them any more, they've got us this far where we can't cover for them, we just can't.—Isa.29:13; Pro.29:25.

44. **"And Samuel said unto Saul, I will not return with thee: for thou hast rejected the Word of the Lord, & the Lord hath rejected thee from being king over Israel.** And as Samuel turned about to go away, he laid hold upon the skirt of his mantle"—Saul did, grabbed ahold of Samuel's robe—" & rent it", it tore. "And Samuel said unto him, The Lord hath rent the kingdom of Israel from thee this day, & hath given it to a neighbour of thine, that is better than thou. And also the Strength of Israel will not lie nor repent: for He is not a man, that He should repent." God's not going to change His mind.

45. **You know, the Lord said last time that those folks just were not worthy, & I tried to forget about it.** They disobeyed then & now they've proven it again, they disobeyed again. Then Saul said, "I have sinned, yet honour me now, I pray thee, before the elders of my people, & before Israel, & turn again with me"—cover up for me, he was saying—"that I may worship the Lord thy God." Finally Samuel turned again after Saul & Saul worshipped the Lord.

46. **We need this team & we'll have to put up with them for awhile until we can find a replacement, & that's what we did,**

& that's why we've sent for them again, because they were supposed to have slain utterly, but they didn't. But to show you how forceful & violent & harsh God can be if He wants to be, when He thinks it's necessary—I think the Lord allowed this to happen lest there be any doubt left in their mind that God didn't mean what He said—

47. **"Then said Samuel, bring ye hither to me Agag the king of the Amalekites.** And Agag came unto him delicately." Agag kind of felt what was in the air. "And Agag said, Surely the bitterness of death is past."—Now maybe we'll be friends, an idol-worshipper & king of a perverted people! "Let's try to forget the whole thing! Why don't we just forget it?"—Probably that's what Gen was hoping we would do, that maybe she could still wiggle her way back in & forget the whole thing.

48. **"And Samuel said, as thy sword hath made women childless, so shall thy mother be childless among women!** And Samuel hewed Agag in pieces before the Lord in Gilgal." The Lord wanted to show him that He meant what He said! When He told him to slay them utterly, He meant utterly, & not save anything or anybody. Utterly! And not claim that they had done it & find out that they hadn't done it. So there it is.

49. (1983: **Look how the Devil fought the founding of the FFing Revolution & Family of Love explosion in Tenerife before it ever got started!**—He drove us off the Island once & nearly twice before it ever began! He was really furious because of what God was about to do! But once we got rid of the troublemakers, God began to really work & we exploded & God steamrollered all before Him! Hallelujah! TYJ!

50. (Just as the Lord used one tiny love-possessed girl to start it all—**Maria!**—So the Devil tried to use one tiny demon-possessed woman to try to stop it!—And other disobedient Family members! But because we obeyed, God continued to use us to bulldoze it through in spite of all! TYJ! Jesus never fails!—If you'll obey!—What are you doing?—Hindering or helping the Work of the Lord? God help you either to obey—or get out of the way!—In Jesus' name, amen!)

## GOD'S LESSONS!

—Suffering with a Meaning!

DFO 1644 9/83

**1. The main thing to know is that you're supposed to learn something from sicknesses & troubles, & not just take anything as some kind of accident!** I think if anything, the question most people ask themselves is, "God, why did You do this to me?", instead of "Lord, why did I deserve this? Why did I need it?" They're almost offended at God for letting it happen, instead of realising that God is dealing with them. I just figure I deserve every bit of it & a lot more & I'm probably getting off easy.

**2. But some people are so self-righteous they wonder, "How could God do such a thing to me?** How could the Lord treat me this way when I'm so good to Him?" They actually resent it, like Job did at first. Look what the Lord had to put Job through before he finally was humbled, & confessed that he wasn't more righteous than God. He really thought he was pretty righteous till he went through all that—really until he was willing to die trusting the Lord! GBAKY & help you to get the message so the Lord can stop spanking!—Amen?

---

## **A PROBLEM CHILD!**

Comments on an Interview.

DFO 1664 11/83



**1. That spirit is really trying to cover its tracks, that's for sure!** So it's a very deceitful spirit, but in spite of all its attempts to be good to keep from getting caught, it certainly reveals itself every now & then with fits of rage & outbursts of various kinds & a bad spirit about things. But it also shows that he can be good

if he wants to bad enough & tries hard enough, but at the same time, unless he gets rid of that, with it always lurking there, it's apt to burst forth again & is a constant risk or at the very least a problem.

**2. (To his Shepherdess:)** I wonder if you act too familiar with him, too pampering? You seem a little too familiar with him, & "Familiarity breeds contempt". You can't be a good leader & be too familiar, especially in the case of women leaders with men. To keep their respect you've got to keep them at a little distance most of the time.

**3. This sort of absolute non-stop talking is rather characteristic of some forms of mental disturbance** when they just talk & talk & talk. Now I talk a lot too but I usually take others into it & want some response & ask questions, but he seems just completely filled with himself. It tells something about him, that he's really full of himself & more nostalgic for his childhood, talking, talking, talking about himself. Talking a lot can also be a cover-up sometimes too.

**4. He's not really telling the things we really need to know, like what was wrong with him?** Why did he have to go to the mental hospital? What were his behavioral characteristics that caused them to have to put him in a mental hospital, three times he says, & see psychiatrists for weeks at a time?—And had to go to a psychiatrist from the time he was 11 years old! It must have been pretty serious. (Maria: Yes, he's attributing all his problems to shyness & introversion.) You wouldn't send a guy to a psychiatric hospital for that! He's not really describing any of his peculiar behaviour that landed him there.

**5. He seems to almost blank out sometimes.** How did he know these things about spirits? If he had nothing to do with them or didn't know anything about them, how did he know that candle flames get long when there's a spirit in the room? It sounds to me like he was quite into that sort of thing. I never heard that before. Where did he get those ideas about candles & flames & spirits & things?

**6. His parents' actions were typical of the way you treat a mental patient, you try not to cross them, try not to offend them, nearly always humour them to try to keep the peace, lest**

you have some kind of an explosion if you cross them or anything. Apparently they were scared stiff of his behaviour. That's really strange that the parents would have been so afraid to ask him questions or cross him or anything. He must have really had mental problems & they were afraid to upset him. They were super friendly to any kind of friends he brought over, probably because they were just trying to humour him no matter what kind of friends he had, hippies, druggies & whatnot!

**7. It's a typical characteristic of some forms of abnormal behavior, they talk incessantly about themselves.** It's like nothing could have pleased him better than to have her sit down & have him talk about nothing but himself.

**8. The questioner must be really on the ball when they're trying to find out things about people—ask questions.** Like interviewers on TV, they keep firing questions at them to find out this & that. She should have asked him why his folks sent him to a psychiatrist, & why they had to send him to a mental hospital. What did he do? What was wrong with his behaviour? When you come to parts of people's story where you need to know items in greater detail, you need to stop them and ask them.

**9. That's always a sign of abnormality, unconcern about others & self-centeredness.** It's just amazing to me nobody ever found it out before!—All his experiences with psychiatrists. I mean he was really a problem case!

**10. Maybe it'd help if they'd come right out, flat out & tell him the thing that's been causing all the trouble is a real thorn in the spirit, so to speak, a messenger of Satan that's been bafetting him, a real annoyer, sort of a besetting spirit, a spirit that's really tried to ruin him.**

**11. (Maria: Is he actually demon-possessed?) You're not possessed until you can no longer control yourself, until your own spirit is no longer dominant & you're under the complete or total control of another spirit.** (Maria: I don't think you've ever brought that point out before. We've always been a little hazy about Christians, that they can't be possessed, but we've never really brought out what possession actually is.)

**12. You can certainly be annoyed by pestering spirits just**

like you can be tempted by the Devil, just like the rest of the Devil's pests! (Maria: In other words, you can even have a spirit trying to speak through your mouth but not be possessed?) Yes. You can even have the wrong spirit speak through your mouth sometimes & inspire you to say the wrong things.—But not necessarily be completely possessed.

**13. It's a temporary thing, like flying off the handle in a rage saying things you're later sorry for & that you know you shouldn't have said.** He seems to be a lot like that. He does things & says things on the spur of the moment that he knows afterwards he shouldn't have & then he says he's sorry.

**14. It's kind of like Karol's curse, in "God's Curses!"** (No.1647), an annoying little devil that brings a thing like that as a hinderer, hindering spirits. It's the evil spirit that brings such curses, but she had to take a specific definite all-out stand against it & a special prayer, & I think they had some fasting too, didn't they, to get rid of it?

**15. (Maria: But even if he wasn't in him possessing him, he was there.)** Maybe he can be in you, but not possessing you, because look at the spirit that tries to talk through him. It's sort of like we wonder whether it's inside you or on the outside, but maybe that's not the distinction to make? That's not where you should make the distinction, whether it's just sort of an external or internal pest.)

**16. The distinction, the difference is as to what degree you allow him to control & rule over your life.** It's like Grandmother used to say about temptations & evil thoughts, "You can't keep the birds from flying over your head nor those thoughts from going through your mind. It's the voice of the Devil. But you can sure keep them from building a nest in your hair!"—In other words, roosting there & entertaining them full time & letting them take over. You just have to keep resisting & fighting until they see you're not going to surrender or give up, & they give up & go away & leave.

**17. Apparently he's been pestered by that thing for a long time, maybe since his childhood.** They just need to have special prayer & exorcise the situation & get rid of the spirit once & for all. It's not that it possesses him or that he's filled with an

evil spirit, because he obviously has a good spirit & loves the Lord & is trying to serve the Lord the best he can, but that little mischievous devil just keeps bothering him & makes him do things & say things he shouldn't, & hurt other peoples' feelings.

18. **Of course it's the old story that the Devil has to have a place to get in & we let the Enemy in** sometimes through our own sins, our own shortcomings, our own vices, selfishness, jealousy or bitterness, murmuring, all kinds of ways to let the Devil in, & apparently sometimes he has indulged in some of those things to where he's just sort of sometimes let the Devil have his way.

19. **Maybe he's what the Bible calls a little feebled minded.**—1Thes.5:14. As a result he never really matured, he sort of stayed like a child, childish, he's still quite backward & childish. And you almost have to treat him like a child, humour him up to a certain point like a child & not expect too much of him to really have feelings of adult responsibility.

20. **It's really a handicap**, which requires a certain amount of tolerance & indulgence & humouring, but only up to a certain tolerable point beyond which he shouldn't be allowed to go & things he shouldn't be allowed to get away with, just like a child.—Just like a child whose parents sometimes will sort of humour him & let him get by with a few little things as long as he doesn't get too rowdy or rambunctious or noisy. But when he goes a little too far & really presses their patience to the limit, then they've got to take a hand, a firm hand & really sit down on him & make him obey.

21. **He's almost like a little boy that just never grew up, who is retarded.** In a way he's definitely handicapped. He's been self-centered & spoiled so many years. It just isn't exactly his habit to think about others or to be unselfish & thoughtful of their needs. (Maria: That's really a habit, isn't it? It's also a habit that you have to cultivate, to be unselfish.) Yes, definitely.

22. **(Maria: So schizophrenia then is not demon possession, or is it?)** Well, like everything, it's sort of to what degree? It's like the camel's nose. You keep letting that thing in off & on just like Mother Eve's sister-in-law did until finally it just took over. She said she knew she was allowing it to come in & do those

freaky things, but by & by she realised that it had taken over & she no longer had control & she was under its control instead of able to control it. It was controlling her, & that's what I'd call full demon possession, when they no longer have any self-control but the demon can just come & go at will & do whatever it wants or make them do whatever it wants.

23. **People who are very susceptible to spirits must be very prayerful, like women.** Women were made to yield & surrender. That's why they make such good mediums & such good wives & good spiritual channels, which is fine as long as it's the right spirit. But they also often are easily overcome by evil spirits because of their spiritual sensitivity & natural proclivity to yield & surrender. So people who are of a very sensitive spiritual nature have to be very cautious that they don't yield to the Enemy & the wrong spirits.

24. **(Maria: Can a person be pestered by evil spirits but also be helped by good spirits at the same time?)** Oh, I think so!—By all means! I have no doubt about that. I don't doubt that all those years the Lord was trying to protect him, obviously. (Maria: But at the same time, some of the bad ones must have gotten in too, like when they showed up in some of his work.) Yes, when he's in the wrong spirit, in the wrong mood, & out of the Lord's Spirit.

25. **He can be very inspired of the Holy Spirit, but then if he gets upset or goes off on a tangent or somebody aggravates him or something, he gets very easily into the wrong spirit.** This is very typical of people who have mental problems. They get very easily upset, very easily aggravated, annoyed, inclined to a tantrum or a rage very easily, often very nervous largely because they are rather weak in the spirit & susceptible to spiritual influences, so the only way they can avoid being influenced by the wrong spirit is to stay very close to the Lord & very full of His Spirit. Let the Light in so brightly that the darkness finds no place to hide & will flee away!

26. **He just needs to keep full of the Word & the Lord & the Holy Spirit & busy with the Lord's Work & not allow the Devil to throw him a mickey & get him off the track.** Apparently he can't take liquor, so I think he just almost ought to be forbid-

den to drink, because it was through drink that he had some of his most severe problems.

**27. He's a very precious vessel of the Lord and obviously has a very precious gift and talent from the Lord that has for years manifested itself even since his childhood, which shows it was a gift, for "every good and perfect gift cometh down from above" (Jam.1:17), and therefore he just needs extra special care and handling and lots of TLC, Tender Loving Care and patience & guidance & to be kept under very strong positive spiritual influence & a firm disciplinary hand that won't put up with any foolishness but will still be patient & realise that he's almost retarded and needs to be treated almost like a child or a teenager.**

**28. He apparently never got out of that very difficult & hard-to-discipline teenage stage, due to his problems & mental difficulties & all. He never seemed to outgrow it, & only the Lord has been able to help him overcome it.**

**29. He really needs to stay close to the Lord & the Lord's people & in the Word & to really resist & rebuke the Devil when he tries to come in like a flood, & ask the Spirit of God to raise a standard against him!—Isa.59:19. Resist him so he'll flee from him (Jam.4:7) when he has those temptations to be irritable & out of sorts & ugly & say & do ugly things. He sort of unfolds like a little flower to a dear motherly sympathetic soul & that's the kind of personal attention & nurturing that he really thrives on, & he really eats it up & seems to need it & he really needs to be loved.**

**30. He's not always very lovable, as some of his girls have found out.** He can be real mean & cantankerous & even cruel & has been known to even abuse them when he's angry, but he needs to resist that evil spirit & just give no place to the Devil!—Eph.4:27. That's a good Scripture because that shows you can sometimes give the Devil place & room to operate & get in without necessarily being taken over, completely taken over or possessed. You can just give him so much territory. But believe you me, he'll sure use it, whatever he can get ahold of, including his tongue & his sharp critical spirit & violent abuse of others etc.!

**31. He needs to keep very very humble & try extra hard**

to be sweet, because he's not seemingly naturally very sweet to others & that's been his main problem, his being unable to get along with other people, & he admits it. That's why he's really got to work on it. If he's going to be of any use to the Lord & if his talent is going to be used, he's got to be completely yielded to the Lord & not keep letting the Devil in to influence him & his talent & his behaviour. He's got to do his best to behave himself & be on his best behaviour to try to be a good boy, so he doesn't let the Devil in & throw him & lead him astray. We'll just have to try to use a lot of love & patience & give him a chance & wait & see & hope that he makes it & can be used for the Lord along with his talent. He has been for years & I don't see why he couldn't be again. So praise the Lord! TYJ! Jesus never fails! —If he'll give Him a chance!

**32. His co-workers have just got to recognise that he's handicapped & retarded spiritually, an immature babe, & they need to treat him as such, be very patient & loving & very teaching & with firm discipline.—But nevertheless not let him get away with anything without reprimand & correction.**

**33. So they're just going to sort of have to take him where he's at, as a great big baby, & they're just going to have to baby him & not expect too much of him, but maybe he's growing a little. Maybe with a little more time & tender loving care he'll grow a little, maybe even grow out of it. Meanwhile we'll just have to sort of prune it & dig around it & dung it & give it another year to see if it won't do better & be more fruitful.—Lk.13:8-9.**

**34. I always found the best way to get along with mental patients was to humour them as much as you could, without letting them go too far.** But there always comes a place where you have to call a halt and put a stop to something just like with a little child, and usually if you put your foot down firmly and they know you mean business, then they'll simmer down. But you have to be definite & firm about it & very clear about it, what you will put up with & what you won't stand, set down very clear lines of limitation & requirements of obedience. Warn them in advance what you won't put up with & how far they can go, & tolerate no further, let them know you really mean business and you're going to enforce it, just like you would with a

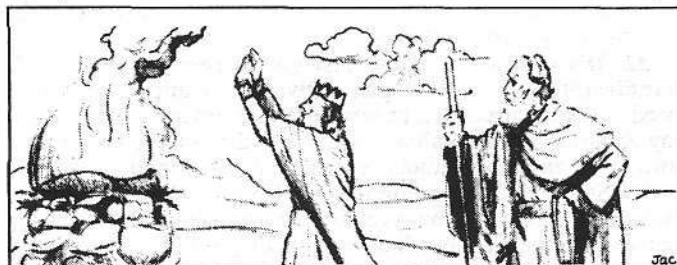
little child.

35. I'm sure with the Lord's help, if he'll give the Lord a chance, the Lord will help him make it, but it'll take the Lord, he can't do it on his own. He has to have a lot of help, but he has to be willing to be helped & obey & give some cooperation to his helpers. Amen?—And try not to be an insufferable trial that nobody can stand!—Amen? GBAKY & help you not to be that way!—Amen?—In Jesus' Name, amen!—ILY!—D.

## TO OBEY IS BETTER THAN SACRIFICE!

—Paper Power No.2!—To a WS Unit.

DFO 1689 11/83



1. You should have just given the first thing that popped into your head & I could've trusted that to be inspired of the Spirit! That would've been better under these circumstances when we were really in quite a rush.

2. You should have done the work on paper—& not on the telephone! When it's anything that important & anything that requires accuracy, especially with figures such as a reference, it's better to put it on paper than to be rattling them off on the telephone! Don't ever expect others to do your work for you. Make sure you do your own work, whatever you can do, then send it on paper unless it's impossible to send it on paper.

3. I established the "paper power" idea a long time ago when people in my own house bothered me too much & wanted to come in & tell me this & tell me that & tell me the other when I couldn't remember half of what they said! (See No. 303A.) I

finally required them to put it in writing & stick it under my door & I'd answer them later. So it'd be a good idea if you'd practice the same policy of putting everything on paper & mailing it, unless there's some reason why you'd have to phone it. So let's try to remember that, shall we? And don't expect others to do anything for you that you can do for yourselves.

4. That's a rule for you: Don't expect others to do anything for you that you can do for yourself, & don't phone it unless you're explicitly asked to. I hope we've got that straight! For God's sake, please try to put it on paper so that we don't have to get people upset on the telephone where they get too many facts & figures & whatnot over the phone.

5. I would also suggest that maybe you could get somebody to type it for you, because your writing is not the best in the World & it would be far more accurate. We've got quite a few people in the Family that write hieroglyphics that have to be deciphered! I've told some people that I refuse to take a report from them any more unless they have it typed.

6. The list should be clear & decipherable & understandable so there won't be any confusion. Check it & make sure it is accurate, because figures are the hardest things to type without mistakes & they're the hardest things to proofread.

7. And after this, remember that's the best way to do business: To get things accurate & to get them on time & do exactly what you're asked to do! Then if it's wrong you're not to blame, or if it's too long you're not to blame, or if it's too short you're not to blame—if you just do what you're told in a case like this!

8. But from now on, don't expect others to do anything for you that you can do yourself!—Period! Get it?—And on paper! And no more than you're asked, no more, no less. That'll save us all time. And make sure everything is accurate & correct & it'll save some people's nerves & dispositions.

9. Just be sure that what you're doing gets done & don't leave the other undone!—And don't ever use word of mouth or telephone hereafter if you can possibly put it on paper & get it there in time.

10. When we're proofreading we don't have to check

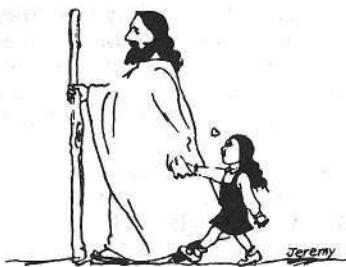
everything that's right, we just check the things that are wrong! So that's life. It's a funny thing, people seldom remember all the good you did but they always remember the mistakes you made & they can always remember your faults. But in a way that's necessary, because it's not the good that causes the problems, it's the shortcomings. So maybe that's established a little policy between you & others that will come in handy from now on & help you to remember:

**11. Don't use the phone when you can use your pen & don't use your mouth when you can use paper!** You've done a great job, so don't let one little mistake discourage you! Just rectify it & get it straightened out right now. "To obey is better than sacrifice & to hearken than the fat of rams."—1Sam.15:22. That's exactly what that means to do, exactly what the Lord tells you, no more, no less.—One man thought he could do better than that, but he lost his job!—King Saul! "To obey is better than sacrifice!" Savvy? Amen? GBAKY obeying!

---

## ANYWHERE WITH JESUS!

DO 1713 12/82



**1. Our children are quite mature—I think they're quite wise with the Lord's help—& I think we ought to let children do what they want to do & like to do as much as possible as long as it's reasonable & congenial and agreeable with the rest of you & as**

long as you have no objections. We should let them sort of make their own choices. We broached the subject to them tonight after we got Sara's consent, to find out if they would like to move into our room, & they all shouted for joy! Of course, I didn't tell them yet that we wouldn't be there, but anyway, the older ones know.

I don't think it dawned on Techi yet, but don't push it, don't stress it, just let her gradually discover that fact. She'll find it out soon enough without worrying her about it in advance.

**2. That's why the Lord conceals some things from us about the future**, knowing that we will finally get used to the idea & we will probably make the right choice in the long run anyhow. But He doesn't want to worry us about it ahead of time before it's necessary & before we're ready for it. Isn't that a pretty good example of why the Lord doesn't tell us everything about what's going to happen next?

**3. Just like we do with our children, we don't always tell them everything**, we don't worry them with every detail of business & problems we have, & we shouldn't. I've known some families where they didn't hide those things from the children, & they had fusses & fights & business arguments & quarrels about money right in front of the children, & it had a very bad effect on them, gave them a real feeling of insecurity!

**4. I think our children have a great feeling of security as long as they feel our love & our care & concern & they have the Lord.** It doesn't matter whether we move tomorrow or turn things upside-down or upset the fruit basket or play musical chairs or whatever, they wouldn't feel the least bit less secure because they know they've got a Family & they have the Lord & they're perfectly happy no matter what happens.

**5. In fact, I've found that children actually love changes!**—I did when I was a child. I really got bored with having to stay in the same place all the time for too long, especially when I had to stay in school, & I enjoyed even moving from one house to the other, any little change was welcome. I especially loved to take those long trips with my Mother & go from city to city. I've found most young people like it, & psychologists say that one thing most people need is regular change. The Bible says you need change.—Ps.55:19.

**6. So these psychologists who say, "Oh no no no, you mustn't change houses, you mustn't move your children too often from one city or state to another, it's hard on them psychologically to uproot them & tear them away from their ac-**

customed surroundings, it gives them a feeling of instability & insecurity!"—That's the lies of the Devil, absolutely of the Devil, because it's the best thing in the World for 'm!

7. **But of course if they don't feel like they have parents they can depend on & they don't feel love, they don't feel the security of the love of a Family no matter where the Family is, & they don't have the Lord, then that's a different matter. If they are attached to things like their parents are & to the things in a house & a certain house & a certain neighbourhood & a certain school instead of the Lord & the Family themselves, our spiritual Family, then of course if they have been taught & raised & reared to be attached to things instead of people & instead of the Lord, then it's going to be quite a psychological wrench to tear them out of that frame of reference into another situation.—If you've allowed them to get attached to those things & that place instead of to God & the Family!**

8. **That's a good lesson to remember, that it's far more important for us to be attached to each other & to the Lord, then it doesn't matter where we are!** (Sings:) "A tent or a palace, why should I care?—They're building a mansion for me over there!"

9. **But anyway, thank God we're attached to the Lord & each other, & as long as we have our Family & each other & the Lord, I don't think we'll care where we live or where He leads us or guides us to serve!** (Sings:) "Anywhere with Jesus I can safely go, anywhere He leads me in this World of woe!" So even if it's only moving from one end of the house to the other, you shouldn't have to worry about it, the Lord will still be with you, amen?

10. "If Jesus goes with me I'll go, anywhere! 'Tis Heaven to me, where'er I may be if He is there! I count it a privilege here His cross to bear! If Jesus goes with me, I'll go—anywhere!" Amen? Will you go anywhere with Jesus?

## FIGHT BACK!

—On PR & Answering Questions From the Media

DO 1718 7/77



1. I don't think the bitter attacks in '74 in America & England did us a bit of damage! Apparently they must have done us good because we've grown faster than ever! The more they attack us, the more we grow! The more they curse us, the more the Lord blesses it! TYL!

2. I was really disappointed in our kids! Imagine, you never know when you might be on BBC, & she was! Think of it! (Maria: She was right on the program?) Yes, they played the tape recording of the phone call right on the show! She didn't realise she was talking to all England, all Britain, in fact all the World!

3. She was typically evasive, you know, like she was guilty & hiding instead of attacking!—Instead of replying, "Well of course we encourage sex! What's the matter with sex? Don't you like sex? God made sex!" What's the matter with the kids that they don't have a more positive approach?

4. They need to go on the attack, attack!—Instead of suddenly getting freaked out & scared & not knowing what to say! They shouldn't have people like that answering the telephone! They should never have anybody answer the phone anywhere but somebody who knows all the answers & can sock it to 'm if they have to! It's pitiful! There was her chance to be a witness to the World & she really muffed it & was really weak!

5. The World would have gotten a kick out of that & she could have set that self-righteous hypocrite back on his heels if she had said, "Of course we like sex! Of course we encourage sex! God made sex! Don't you like sex?"

6. They should have been on the attack! What the Hell's

the matter with them! They must have let some little babe or some little nobody answer the phone who didn't know what to say!

**7. If people don't look to the Lord for their answers, God help us!** My Lord, I mean any girl like that who answers the phone should ask the Lord immediately what to say & the Lord would have showed her! That's the only thing that disappoints me, that our kids are so weak sometimes. Thank God some of them must be strong because we're growing & getting fruit & results!

**8. My God, where are the fighters that know how to attack!** I mean, his questions were the easiest kind in the World to answer! She said, "Huh...what...yes...but...we don't distribute that on the streets." They must be ashamed of it. They must not have conviction!

**9. They should be always ready to "give an answer to him that asketh of thee!"** Peter said so as plain as day!—1Pet.3:15. They must not have the guts, the conviction to answer. It must be that some of these kids really aren't sold, they don't really have the guts, they haven't got the conviction about FFing & things like that, otherwise they could fire back & fight back! It's just sickening the way they seem to be so unsure of themselves! (Maria: I think it took her by surprise, because those were DO Letters that weren't supposed to be seen by outsiders.)

**10. Nevertheless, we've got to come out & attack & say, "So what? Of course this is what we believe! Of course this is what we teach! It's Scriptural, it's God-given, we believe it, we practice it, so what the Hell do you care? Why not?"** And the World, believe it or not, the honest open-minded World will admire their guts for sticking up for their convictions & sticking to their guns instead of backwatering & backing down before these sickening, self-righteous hypocrites!

**11. I am not ashamed or at all dismayed at the challenge of the Enemy,** in fact the Enemy really is pretty weak compared to what he might do. What dismayed me and disappoints me & sickens me is that our own kids haven't got the guts & the gumption or the fight to fight back & trap them in their own words & challenge them & attack them right in what they're talking about!

**12. Why back down & try to deny it?**—It's all in print, they've got it! Are they ashamed of it? Why should they be ashamed of it? Why are they ashamed of it? For some reason or other they haven't got the right attitude if they're ashamed of it. They're not ready to stick up for it & sock to'm, they're ashamed of it! It's pitiful when they're caught & they're embarrassed & they're ashamed instead of coming out & socking it to'm & just telling them off!

**13. My Lord deliver us! Give us fighters, people with guts & conviction that believe what we say!** It must be that they just haven't got the conviction themselves or they'd stick up for it, right? They'd stand up for it & they'd fight for it! But they get scared & rattled & stammer & stutter & don't know what to say! I don't know why they don't know what to say, I've said plenty! I've said enough that they ought to have plenty to say!

**14. God help us & deliver us from cowards!** Give us brave soldiers that know how to fight & throw it back in their teeth & break their teeth, kick'm in the teeth with the same Truth!—Psa.3:7. There's nothing they can quote out of my Letters that I'm ashamed of! There's nothing that they can fire at us in public from those "secret Letters" that I'm ashamed of! Just stand up & sock'm in the teeth with it! "Why not? What's wrong with that? Of course we do!"

**15. I told them way back in that Letter "Contend For the Faith" (No.143A) how to answer the press!** I said, "When they accuse you of brainwashing, say, 'Well, of course we brainwash people, why not? People have dirty minds, they need washing! The Bible says we should wash them with the pure water of the Word (Eph.5:26), what's the matter with that? Everybody's engaged in brainwashing, every advertisement, every religion, every church is trying to brainwash people!'"

**16. I'm telling you, if they don't know how to be bold, if they're not fighters, they don't belong to this outfit!** I mean really, they do not!—If they are not bold fighters on the attack! Cowards just do not belong in this outfit! Namby-pamby, milk-&-water, string-for-a-backbone cowards who have no guts or conviction and are ashamed and don't know what to say don't belong! They should all be willing to fight for their convictions!

17. This Revolution was not built by cowards, or fought by cowards—it was fought by brave, bold warriors who challenged the Enemy! When the Enemy comes up & challenges you, you don't go on the defensive, you don't start backwatering or side-stepping or coughing & wheezing & spitting & stammering & stuttering & get scared & back off, you attack him! You take the initiative & go on the attack & sock it to him! Jesus hardly ever answered a question without a question.—Mat.21:23-27; 22:15-21.

18. They should never backwater or side-step! Upon any blow they ought to go straight to the attack & attack the guy themselves! Take the initiative! Get on the offensive! Attack! Be the aggressor! Quit trying to defend yourself, it's so stupid! You don't have to defend it—challenge him with it! It must have been sickening for the people that heard it, to hear how scared she was & how she backed down & backed out & ran, literally ran & left the field to the Devil! It makes me so mad! It must have been some little brand-new babe who didn't know beans from beans! Lord help us! My God, what the Hell is wrong with our kids if they don't know the simple answers to that? Of course we believe in sex & of course you've got to get dirty to save people! Oh my God! They must not be reading the Letters, that's all I can think of, or they'd have the answers!

19. Give us fighters, Lord, who aren't afraid to go on the attack!—Who aren't ashamed of what they believe!—Aren't ashamed of what they practice!—Aren't afraid of the Devil & his stupid, silly, idiotic little challenges! Lord help us! PYL! TYL! Give us fighters, Lord!—Positive fighters, people who can stand up for what they believe & fight for it & die for it! People who are ashamed of what we believe & ashamed of what I write ought not to be in this Army, they ought not to be with us!—And they shouldn't let some ignorant babe who doesn't know anything answer the telephone! (Amen? GBAKY fighting as long as you can!—Then flee! "He who fights & runs away lives to fight another day!"—Amen!—Jesus did!—Until it was finally time to die for us!—How about you?)

# TIGHTEN THE FAMILY!

—Quality, not Quantity!—The TRF, Stat & Tithe Revolution!  
DO 1730 1/84

(The specific time requirements of 6 months & 12 months for GP & DFO lit as stipulated in this Letter have been superceded by the Babes Basic Course. However the spiritual principles behind "Tighten the Family!" still apply, & therefore we thought it worthwhile to condense this Letter.)

1. It takes somebody with a little guts & conviction & a little sense of the righteousness of God & His chastising Love, tough parents to crack down with the rod. It's tough on parents to crack down, as well as tough on kids!

2. Let me tell you, I am not going to send one GN or one WND or one FN, or as far as I'm concerned, not one piece of lit to people who are critical, I mean skeptically critical, if you know what I mean. Why should we send them anything? We don't owe them a bit! I don't give a damn how much money they send! The money is nothing! God has got plenty of money & He can supply some other way, & I'd much rather see it come through the blessing of God's people who are loyal & faithful & diligent & obedient & doing their job & filling out their TRFs & giving their minimums than all the rest of these unreliable people! Those people are not Family!

3. What did they think I meant in that Letter, ML #888, "No Blank TRFs!" Huh? What do you think I meant? "No Blank TRFs" meant no blank TRFs, no blanks!—Blankity-blank!

4. I made it very clear that money was not enough to get the lit! Apparently this CRO had the idea that as long as the Homes send enough money, well, don't worry about their TRFs. The reason for our tightening TRFs, not only tightening now but from the very beginning, was for security, & I tightened the TRFs when I said that years ago in April, 1980, in ML #888! I said "No

Blank TRFs!" Nobody was going to get lit without a completely filled-out TRF, & one of the main purposes for it was security! Another main purpose for it was I don't care about sending lit, wasting lit at any price or any amount of money or any minimum, on people who don't care & don't obey & are untrustworthy! I don't care how much money they send! I'll throw it back in their face, & that is exactly what I'm about to do!

5. We want a Gideon's army who are obedient, who do what they're supposed to do, who obey God! Good riddance of bad rubbish! That's the way I feel about it & it's past time, over time as far as I am concerned!

6. We want stats to show they're an active Family member! Also the requirements for membership are & have been specific for at least four years! These which now stand have virtually always been the requirements. The only difference we made in these same requirements is that now a few Members are allowed to live out on their own if they meet these same requirements, which is virtually, in other words, having another Home, their own Home, that's all.

7. Membership requirements for the live-ins aren't any different than they have been for many years: Saved, number one. Two, they must witness or litness. Three, fellowship! Don't tell me anybody who doesn't ever fellowship & doesn't want to fellowship is in good standing! Obviously some of these people either didn't want to fellowship or the real Family Members didn't like them, could smell a rat & saw that they were not our kind & didn't even want them to fellowship! They should have thrown them out & reported it to us long ago!

8. Four: Support, minimum tithes, & five, TRFs in full! Right?—These are the absolutely irrevocable, unchangeable Laws of the Family, requirements for membership & the rules for receiving lit! And nobody has a right to vary them, nobody has a right to make them more lenient, nobody has any right to change them without direct authority & approval from us personally, & I don't think I'd ever give it for anybody, any kind of a case, & I've made that pretty clear, haven't I?—In spite of the many appeals that have been made to me.

9. People who do not fill out TRFs in full are not Family

members & they do not deserve the lit, any of it! I'd hesitate to even send them DFO lit! I don't care how much they send. Well, maybe we'll send them back a LIN, that's all. We send LINs to anybody who'll send any kind of a gift. So they want to send a hundred dollars for GNs?—OK, we'll send them a LIN if they don't want to fill out a TRF & don't show by the way that they fill out the TRF that they are genuine Family Members!

10. I want to tell you, we didn't get to where we have gotten by my being soft & a push-over & easy-going! I have been too soft sometimes but we are still here & we are still an Army & we're still fighting & we are still winning because I have been tough & I have kept a tough grip on things, & we are going to get tighter than we have ever been! We've got to do it!

11. Our wind-down, our austerity measures may be what we enforce on ourselves, just like Gideon did & Joshua & a few others. There are plenty of examples of it in the Bible. There were six million Jews that left Egypt, but God only let about 200,000 of them go into the Promised Land. He let all the old people die out there in the desert!—If you don't think God is tough! He only let the believers enter in! The only old ones that went into the Promised Land were Joshua & Caleb, the rest were all the young people! Their mothers & fathers died in the desert. But with that handful of young people they conquered the land & the cities & God was with them & wiped out their enemies!

12. The same with Gideon. My God! He started out with 33,000 & wound up with 300, right? But he won the battle, he won a glorious victory which showed that God was with them! They didn't need numbers, & nor do we, we want quality! I don't give a damn about numbers!—As far as spiritually weak & sickly & invalid Family Members that are no good to anybody, in fact a drag, in fact a danger! I'd rather have a handful of real fighters, strong & faithful & firm & diligent & obedient & winners, than 10,000 failures! And that's how we got where we are at, because I insisted on people obeying God whether they liked it or not! If they don't like it they can lump it & go!

13. I'd say unreliable TRFers should be relieved of their GNs & WNDs etc. What do you say? There is too much dangerous material in there. If they can't be trusted with it, they

could've been giving it to hundreds of people! My God, we certainly can't trust them with it! (Maria: And as a result of their disobedience, that European publicity has been all over the World, to Hong Kong & India & Indonesia & everywhere!) Of course! Absolutely, the World! They speak every major language there in Europe, & it spreads to all their language papers all over the World!

**14. I consider this carelessness with DO lit has probably done us more damage than almost any other breach of security in the World right now!** It was dangerous! It's the Devil's own channel, his own chink in the armour, breach in the wall, hole in the dike! And I just hope we can get rid of it peacefully if possible.

**15. To get DO lit you have got to be on the mailing list with qualifying TRFs & the works for one solid year!** (1988: Now you must have completed the Babes Basic Course.) Now that is nothing new. That is the kind of rule we used to have when all MO Letters were DO, in fact they were not even DOs, they were LTs! (See No. 124) No God-damned Jewish lawyer is going to be smart & drop a hundred dollars in the mail & get all the latest dope for just one month & not have to do it every month!—Weekly mailings, WNDs, GNs, FSMs & all kinds of stuff! (Maria: Well, normally new disciples join old established Homes, so what are they doing starting their own Home?—Becoming a disciple & immediately starting their own Home?—This is not usual.) No. Maybe I should give that limitation first.

**16. Nobody gets DO lit no matter how much money they give until they have been filling out good TRFs & showing that they are really disciples & really fellowshipping & fulfilling all Membership requirements, every Membership requirement for one year before they get a single piece of DO lit!** Until then they only get DFO lit for the last six months & the first six months of that year, they only get LINs & KIDz! How about that?—Which is virtually GP lit, right? I don't care how much they give, they only get LIN & KIDz for the first six months. (DO lit now available upon completion of Babes Basic Course.) They're there on trial, wherever they are. We don't trust them.

**17. After six months of LIN & KIDz, no matter how much**

**money they give, then we'll consider giving them DFO lit** on top of it for the next six months!—GP lit for the first six months, DFO lit for the second six months, & only then, after one year on trial, proving their faithfulness, sending good TRFs & minimum tithes, they'll also have to meet the minimum tithes for this lit as well, to get DO lit.

**18. For the first six months we'll count them & classify them virtually as new disciples on trial, & for minimum tithes they're getting LIN & KIDz, or they could get the LIN alone for anything. After six months, we'll add DFO lit to it, & after one year only, we will start sending them DO lit, providing they have proven themselves as genuine disciples known to other people who can send references, officers & other reliable Family Members in the area who have met them face-to-face, who have fellowshipped with them & know they are genuine, honest-to-goodness, honest-to-God disciples who can be trusted with DO lit!**

**19. Is that clear? I'm not just tightening TRFs!—We're tightening the whole Family!** We're not just tightening our belts with austerity. We're not just winding down because of the international situation. We are going to wind ourselves down on purpose & tighten our belts as well, in order to take it! We'll not only tighten the TRFs, but we are going to tighten the restrictions on who gets what lit no matter how much money they give, & for how long they get it!

**20. Nobody is going to get DO lit after this unless they are meeting every single Membership requirement, completely filling out verifiable, justifiable TRFs that deserve & merit it, & have at least two solid references of good Family Members that we know are officers who can recommend them, that now they are ready for DO lit!**—How is that?

**21. It is a test of their loyalty, it's a test of their devotion, it's a test of their desire for the Word!** It's a test of their dedication & consecration, how much they are willing to sacrifice or even suffer to get the Word, even if that is above their actual tithe!—And let me tell you, it is a test of security! This is of course not fool-proof but it is certainly going to shut quite a few leaks & weak people out, the leaks & the weaks who don't really want it

that much, so we might as well get rid of 'm! I don't want people like that much either!—Certainly not getting DO lit!

22. And the time limitation minimums are for new disciples & new Homes, I don't care how much they give, unless they are old Members who have been on the Mailing List, who may move from one place to another & be at a new location, but they are still a family who has been in at least a year & getting mail for so long a time. But new Homes, really new disciples, new disciple Homes, will only get GP lit for the first six months. I don't think I can trust anybody to send them DO lit unless they've been in the Family at least a year. That used to be it in the early days anyway.

23. I don't care how much they send, we're only going to mail them GP lit for six months & DFO lit for the next six months, and no DO lit until they have been on the Mailing List for one year, sending in good reliable TRFs and all the rest, proving themselves, and then recommended by two signed recommendations by two officers that they're in fellowship. I don't care how hard it is to get there or how far they have to go to fellowship, even if they can only go to fellowship by train 600 miles once a month, they'll know what kind of person they are, right?

24. Let me tell you, anybody who really is sincere & the kind of people we want are not going to be sitting in one town all alone by themselves! They're going to find fellowship or make fellowship or get some disciples of their own, & the officers of the area are going to hear about them & know them personally face-to-face & verify them as trustworthy members now after a year, ready to receive DO lit, & they will not get it without the minimum & the recommendations of two officers in their area—written, signed recommendations of two recognised officers!—Is that clear?—Officers who verify that they are good members, trustworthy & worthy to be trusted with DO lit!—No matter how much money they send!

25. Money is not our object!—Trustworthy disciples, obedient soldiers, genuine missionaries is our object, not money! We're not just selling lit! This is merely a method devised to try to screen out the kind of people we don't want for

both security & reliability & effectiveness, efficiency & fruitfulness, right? That's what we would rather have than money. Let me tell you, if we've got that, like Solomon & his wisdom, we'll get everything with it. —1Ki.3:5-14. If we've got the right kind of people, God will give us the right kind of money to support them, & He'll give them the right kind of support!

26. If we lose a few Homes over this, Gideon got rid of a lot more than that! He didn't get rid of 300 or 400 Homes, he got rid of 32,700 men! It was 33,000 to begin with & he boiled it down to 300. That's about 3 out of 300, about 1 out of 100, actually less than one per cent! He chucked out the other 99% & did the job with less than one per cent!

27. I believe it is going to do us all good! I think it is going to do us good in quality & eliminate some of this chaffy quantity!—And I think it is going to do us good financially! I also think it is going to do us good security-wise! I think it is going to do us nothing but good & get rid of the bad & the evil! Frankly, that's what I believe. And I don't care if it costs us money. I don't care if it costs us numbers, people, families, Homes, population, if we up the quality of our people & their effectiveness & efficiency & fruitfulness, it is worth it all, even if it costs us money!—And I don't believe it is going to cost us money. I believe God is going to bless it & we will even be blessed more financially & so will they. That's what I believe. And we will be a lot better off in quality of people & security-wise, security of lit. Praise the Lord! I believe it! TYL!

---

## WHAT'S WRONG WITH KEDA? DO 1739 3/84

—Discussion by Dad & Maria

1. When Keda so enthusiastically came up to me & said, "We're all hoping for a talk!", she might as well have slapped me in the face! In other words, "You're not doing the right thing, you ought to be doing something else! You should be led of the Lord & be more spiritual & preach!" That was really an insult! Why, even dear Alf who is not always sensitive sometimes, was really shocked by it & he took her out in the kitchen & bawled

her out! Even he sensed that she had done something wrong. God bless him for the nerve & spunk to speak up to her!

**2. In the first place, she lied when she said, "We're all hoping for another talk!"** She implied there were a lot of people who were dissatisfied with the dinner dances & would prefer me to talk, & that she was their spokesman. It really created division! It turned out she was the only one! Now why was she a spokesman of such division, of which she was apparently the only member? Look at a little child like Alf, not even supposed to be a great spiritual leader at all, yet he was horrified & shocked by what she said! He was so in tune in the Spirit to realise she was saying something bad & very out of order! How could she have been so out of it & so out of tune? What was the matter with her? Why did she say that? I want her to analyse why she did it.—Be honest with herself to analyse what's wrong with her & why she would have said such a thing!

**3. I think some kind of spiritual pride is behind it all, a kind of holier-than-thou, self-righteous attitude.** The dancing wasn't good enough for her & she had to have something more spiritual, therefore she was more spiritual than anybody else. It may have satisfied the rest of them, but not her! But she pretended to be the spokesman for more than one. "We're all hoping for another talk!" What a lie! That was an outright lie! She was the only one, she was only speaking for herself! Why would she do that?

**4. It's some kind of pride, like she was a little better than all the rest!** She'd rather have something more. She wasn't satisfied with what we were dishing out & serving the rest. She wanted something more spiritual, therefore she was more spiritual than the rest. I think it was self-righteous pride myself, that she was trying to impress me with her spirituality. And I think it was outright hypocritical, because she was enjoying the dancing just as much if not more than anybody else! Maybe she was a little ashamed that she was enjoying it so much & she thought she ought to be more spiritual, & so she wanted to let me know that she was more spiritual than that.—Just like the hypocritical self-righteous Pharisees of the churches, they want to let everybody know how righteous they are. "Thank God I'm

not as this man! I'm holier than thou!"—Luk.18:9-14. Well, let's see how holy she is. Let her give me a good righteous reason for her remark, "We're all hoping for a talk!"—When it wasn't even true!

**5. I'll tell you, I'm just furious about it & I'm not over it yet, I'm just infuriated!** I thought we left that kind of people behind in the churches! (Maria: Well, I'll tell you, those evangelists like Keda & even dear Faithy, who has to continually fight that, have a big problem sometimes with some of that spiritual pride. They've been on their own so long just receiving acclaim & worship of people constantly, & nothing on the other side, the negative, no rebuke or correction. It's really a temptation, they really get that way.) Faithy confessed herself how much she was that way.) Keda hasn't confessed yet. All she did was say she was sorry that she said it. Saul was sorry he got caught, but he didn't really confess his sin, the evil root beneath the outer show. She'd better analyse why she said it, because it's a serious root problem! "Out of the fulness of the heart the mouth speaketh!"—Luk.6:45.

**6. There's something wrong somewhere, so she needs to check herself out & see what her problem is, & why she would have told such a bold-faced lie, & why she would have come up to me personally, the last thing after a very happy fellowship session with the Family, & planted the evil seeds of that lie, which has just rankled ever since! She hasn't got this thing straightened out with me yet until she sees her sin & fully confesses it! She'd better straighten out her own heart, or she's not worthy of being a leader!—And I certainly don't want her here to be a spokesman for the Devil!**

**7. There's just something about her that really gets me & always has, you know that! What is it? What is it that I almost abhor? I mean I hate to sit at the same table with her! What is it? Is there something wrong with her? Has she got some kind of evil spirit or something? I mean, she's been fine at a distance as long as I didn't have to be around her, but I just can hardly stand to be in the same house with her! There's just something in me that just rises up in resentment, something almost furious with the anger of God!**

**8. It's almost like she has an evil spirit, & that remark sure brought it out, whatever it is—self-righteous, hypocritical pride or whatever it is, spiritual pride, when she's the last one in the World that ought to have any spiritual pride! (Maria: Well, I guess it isn't hard to have when you go around, month after month, & everybody bows down & practically worships you.)—Year after year, for the last ten years!**

**9. And the Scripture that came to me was something about sitting down & eating with people like that. We'll have to look it up. The Lord says something about them being "spots at your feasts"! There's some Scripture about it. (Jude 12.) I look around this table & I see sweet & loyal, whole-hearted 100%ers & a few little innocent child-like babes, but pure & doing their best. But there's something about her that just really offends me!**

**10. I can't quite put my finger on it, but it's sort of like pretending to be something she's not! I mean, even little child-like Alf knew she was wrong, that she had said the wrong thing. What was the matter with her, a great spiritual leader of the East, that she didn't know she was wrong in saying it? I think we really struck a real serious problem & root of some of her personal problems, & it's pretty serious if she doesn't get it worked out somehow!**

**11. I mean it's a terrible feeling, but I felt like hitting her when she said that! I actually felt like slapping her across the mouth, like she was voicing the self-righteous, hypocritical pride of the Devil! She just makes me so angry I want to strike her! There's nothing I hate like people that try to hide & cover up their wickedness & their evil hearts! I confess how carnal I am & how human I am & how unsaintly I am!**

**12. Oh, that's so Pentecostal to pretend to be so holy when they're not, except for the fact that their righteousness is full of holes, in that way they're holy! But they try to cover up the holes. They'd actually be a lot more holy if they'd show the holes & confess they're there. They're absolutely despicable & nothing & icky without the Lord! I'm just sick of her! I'm sorry, I just cannot stand to have her around! I can't stand to sit at the same table with her!**

**13. Either she gets straightened out & confesses her sin, or**

**I don't even want to see her face & that blank vacant stare! It certainly doesn't inspire me! It reminds me of those owlish birds I saw in that dream!—Those evil bird faces. ("The Crash", No. 284.) Her face looks like those birds that were hovering over that town, sort of a blank, ominous, almost evil stare!**

**14. So what's wrong with her? I thought maybe she was just tired, but she always has that look, almost like the look of a tortured soul! But she's sort of trying to cover it up with that blank vacant stare. I mean, it's almost like the stare of a dead person! It's horrible! I hate to look at her at the dinner table! She'd better get herself straightened out or I don't want to look at her anymore! She's enough to drive a person to drink! I don't care to sit at the same table with her until she gets straightened out.**

**15. Something about her in the Spirit somehow has always disgusted me, & I just couldn't stand to be in her presence or have her in mine! I didn't really want to have her here, but you guys insisted that she needed it & I guess she does! (Maria: Yes, if she's going around being our personal representative for all the Family & half the World, I guess she must need something now!) She'd certainly better get straightened out, whatever it is, or I can't stand to have her represent me, that's for sure!**

**16. There's something very seriously wrong with her, & she'd better find out what it is or recognise & acknowledge what it is! Maybe she needs a laying-on of hands to cast it out! (Maria: What would you cast out? Would you say the spirit of pride, is that good enough?) That's bad enough! There's nothing worse than that, especially spiritual pride. (Maria: Should we just call it that?—Just cast out the Spirit of Pride?) Yes, with hypocrisy & self-righteousness!**

---

#### **KEDA'S PENANCE!**

DO 1740 3/84

**1. That kind of pride is something that some people get into that it seems like they'd almost rather die than give it up, & they'd do almost anything to defend it! If she's not really breaking, it's dangerous business! (Maria: She really did today though,**

when we talked to her, she really did! I mean, everybody felt that.) But then you get her before the people & just like Saul, Saul would break down & weep before the Prophet & he would break down & weep before David. But he could not stand to be embarrassed before the people!—1Sam.15:30.

**2. When God finally gets fed up with something, He really rubs their nose in it!** We wouldn't have to make the rest of the Family suffer & me suffer too if we set Keda up in a room with talk tapes & videos during dinner. She's going to have to make restitution. Merely saying "I'm sorry, please forgive me!" is not enough! She needs discipline, punishment, chastisement, penance & to have to suffer for it for awhile! We'll give her exactly what she asked for, talks! Then I don't have to sit there & look at her vacant stare! I just dread seeing her because I know that Pentecostal-type of repentance, some big emotional display that will just sicken me! She can just go down & get her little plate & have one of the boys set her up with a video, & she can sit in another room & listen to the talks!—That's what she asked for!

**3. That would be the ideal punishment! That's what the Lord did time & again when He finally got fed up with Israel murmuring & asking for something they didn't have!** Then He just let 'm have it, & I mean He really let 'm have it! He gave 'm all they wanted until they gluttoned themselves till it killed them! That's exactly what the Lord does, He sends them the desires of their hearts & leanness to their souls!—Ps.106:15.

**4. Every now & then she suddenly comes to life & it's almost like the dawn, the break of sunrise, & her face lights up & she laughs & she's almost beautiful!** And then so often she goes back to that blank, vacant stare! (Maria: She really is different now. The Lord's really delivered her. You can really see a difference.) Any spirit that really is oppressing you, when you get rid of it, it makes you different, right? I mean, it makes you even look different! I don't see how Christians, saved people, can have evil spirits, but I guess they just plague them. They don't totally possess them apparently. I guess if they just keep listening to the Devil & letting the camel's nose in, they can really be influenced.

**5. (Maria: The Lord impressed on me yesterday to pray for Keda first before we talked to her & to get rid of that spirit that was hindering her, or she couldn't even receive what we were going to talk about. We laid hands on her & got rid of that oppressive spirit before we even talked.) You were obviously led right & it apparently did the trick. TTL!**

**6. She's going to have to go through a course of reprogramming & it's not easy & it's not quick, & I think the best thing in the World for her to do is to have to sit up there & watch what she asked for, talks!—Not song tapes but just the talks.**

**7. Anytime I was anywhere near her I felt like I was near something unclean! It must have been that spirit!** (Maria: Yes.) Something in me would just rise up in revulsion and almost made me furious! You know how I've been about her ever since I can remember. That viewing my video talks is a happy medium between either me or her leaving! That solves the difficult situation, to sort of exile her. That's what the Russians do, internal exile they call it, with dissidents. They assign them to internal exile. I'll give her enough talks until she screams for mercy!

**8. We'll see if she can take the humbling.** It's easier to make public confessions & all that stuff. Some people even like that. It's a continuation of the glory & the attention. But if she gets stuck away in a hole now with nothing but talks, let's see how much victory she's got. I mean it, I don't want to see her face until the Lord gives me the grace to forgive her or tolerate her!

**9. If I ever saw a deadpan, Keda's got a deadpan face!** To try to imitate her expression, all I can think of is a blank stare, almost like looking in the face of a dead person with her eyes wide open, except when she reacts once in awhile about something & comes to life, then she can almost look radiant! But in-between times it's almost like the face of a mental case. (Maria: Well, I guess when you're oppressed by those spirits you get a bit weird.)

**10. How many people can you remember in the Old Testament who had a tremendous transformation & change?** There were some dramatic conversions in the New Testament, of course. There was a big change in Peter after he received the Holy

Spirit, & some of the other disciples had some rather remarkable changes.—And of course St. Paul, his Damascus Road experience turned him from a self-righteous, proud—I mean, that was his problem—persecutor to a preacher of the Gospel. But it seemed that you take some of the people who had been in the way for some time, like Peter who compromised & joined the Circumcision & had to be rebuked before all. (See Gal.2:11-15) He never seemed to attain the same heights of leadership again, ever. He was never used like Paul, never wrote like Paul or guided the church like Paul. It seemed almost that he went downhill from the time when he & Paul had that confrontation, & it looks like the Lord anointed Paul instead of him to lead the church. It's almost like Peter missed the boat with his self-righteous circumcision, the legalists who said they were willing to believe in Jesus as long as they still kept the Law of Moses.

11. If we'd agreed to receive their church circumcision & keep the Laws of Moses & the church, well, the churches might have been willing to tolerate us. But to go as far as we've gone, that's just absolutely intolerable! And that was in essence the spirit of her crack that night: All this foolishness & fun & dancing is fine, but we'd better have another talk, we'd better be a little more religious, a little more pious, have a little more sanctimoniousness, be a little more spiritual, not so carnal!

12. She wanted to let me know that night that she hadn't forgotten to be spiritual in spite of all her antics & the dance, that she was still spiritual. She would still rather have a talk. "I'm not really this way, I really prefer talks." And I think it was an absolute lie! She was enjoying herself as much, if not more, than anybody! But see, even if they like it & they enjoy it, because of that rut of tradition that is ingrained in them, they have a guilt complex, & if they do enjoy it they feel constantly guilty about it. Like my Mother used to say about things that were good to eat, she had a crack where she'd say, "It tastes so good it must be a sin!" That sums up the church attitude beautifully! Anything that's enjoyable, anything that's that much fun, anything that tastes that good, anything that is that great a pleasure, to them, they figure it must be a sin! So she just wanted to let me know that she knew better & that she would prefer a talk! It was

an absolute self-righteous display!

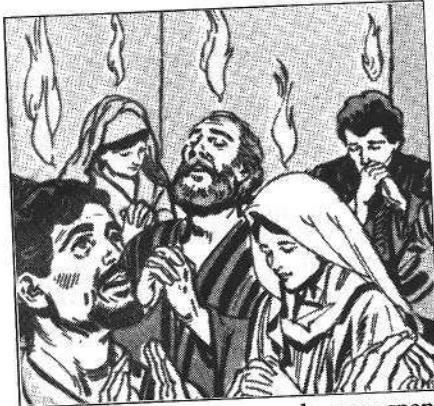
13. So we'll let her have her talks while we have our fun! The rule will be that any night I'm going to go to dinner, she's to be shut away with her talks before I put in my appearance & she's not to be let out until I've gone. I don't want to see her face again until we know that she has really changed & stood the test. That will be her penance.

14. Let's see if she can take the penance now. We have to often put people on probation to see if they really are sorry & really mean their repentance. Even the government does that, & God certainly did it plenty! So we'll put her in solitary confinement, probation, with nothing but talks, & see how she gets along. What do you want to bet, if she lies down on that bed to watch'm, she's going to go to sleep! Poor woman!—She's so tired! (Maria: I don't know, I think she'd be in fear & trembling. Anyway, we can give her a chair to sit in. She doesn't have to lie down.)

15. She has a hard enough time staying awake in my meetings when I do talk, she has a real struggle. She often can hardly hold her eyes open, & that's one time I've actually felt sorry for her. I even mentioned it, I think, in the meeting. She was one of the people that I made the cracks about: "I don't mind if you go to sleep, just so you keep your eyes open." I think I even said I don't even mind if you shut your eyes & take a cat nap if you're that tired.

16. I think those churchy sort of religionists really feel like they have to suffer to be spiritual! I think she thought perhaps she deserved to suffer a little bit, suffer some talks, in order to hang on to her spirituality. She was beginning to have too much fun & enjoy it too much. Whereas I think that the talks were almost a trial for her. I know she has a hard time staying awake. You can't kid me, I've watched people & audiences & classes too many years, & I know when people are tired & exhausted & can hardly hold their eyes open & their eyes keep shutting & they have to shake their heads to stay awake. Maybe she feels like she deserves that kind of torment & torture to earn her merit & her righteousness. GHH!

**PROPHECY LESSONS!**—The New Spirit Revolution!  
—Staff sharing at Sunday Fellowship after 1984 Birthday  
Prophecies! (See "God's Gifts!", DB 2)



occasion. Elsewhere people may spend so much time judging situations that it also stifles people, & maybe there's a difference. Maybe the Lord was just really pouring out so there was nothing necessarily to judge. But you didn't feel so much like it was what you gave or if it even related to the last thing necessarily, but that whatever you said was of the Lord.

2. (So that was a real lesson to me, how Dad was so carefully directing the situation & encouraged it so much & it made it so easy, & also how he rebuked the Devil when the prophecy seemed to slow down a bit, & it was a real freedom to see the power of prayer, & commanding the Lord to speak was a real powerful example! Perhaps in some places, especially maybe since the RNR, people in a way tend to somewhat resent leadership or not know who would rise up as the prophet.)

3. (Fam: TYL! Yes, it was a real liberation for me yesterday because for years & years I've only given verses, & Lord forgive me, which is a bad sample, but I held back things that the Lord gave me & I'd pray desperately that somebody else would get the message, or I'd write it down & share the lesson after-

1. (Sara: It was so wonderful that the Prophet was there to direct the prophecies because it was so encouraging to see that Dad would encourage it, & he directed & praised & prayed & he commanded & he rebuked the Devil, & this really freed everyone to stir themselves as opposed to some situations. Maybe it's a rare

wards or whatever, but I was really afraid of giving what the Lord had given me. Someone had really squelched my freedom by making me think it was too emotional to prophesy & give more than verses.

4. (So yesterday it was a very heavy experience because in the beginning I thought, "Okay, I'll just listen." I guess I had gotten lazy spiritually in prophesying, I just didn't consider it, & so when Dad started encouraging us to speak it was like he spoke straight to my heart in rebuking the Enemy, & I knew it was like a spirit of fear in my heart. I asked the Lord to really set me free & liberate me & give me what He wanted me to give, no matter if it was nothing spectacular. I just needed to step out, & the longer I waited the heavier my heart got. I knew I had to give it or it was not giving myself to Jesus.

5. (So when I finally did it was such a liberation & it was like a new start in my life to let the Lord pour through me, & to do it by faith & look to Jesus & not to my own weaknesses, so that was really a blessing, TTL!)

6. (Fam: Well, at first it was a real fight! Besides, I had never prophesied before in my whole life, except for getting Bible verses & MO Quotes, & sometimes it's hard to believe what you're really saying, if it's just your own thoughts or if it's of the Lord, but usually in a meeting like that it has to be the Lord because you're all in the Spirit & you're all listening to Him.

7. (But at first there was a spirit of pride & I wasn't completely set free. So I'd start to say something & then suddenly it would all go blank! Then I really thought it was the Devil completely attacking, trying to make it not work, & it would go blank & then Dad would say, "Come on, there's more!" because he knew. So finally when I did get it the whole way the next time, I really felt a spirit of freedom & liberation & I was shaking all over & it was super exciting! From then on, once we got free & after Dad had really just rebuked the Devil, then you could flow freely the whole time.

8. (I noticed that almost everybody who was not used to prophesying had to lift up their arms when they were prophesying, like reaching up to Heaven for power, or for faith or for the

Holy Spirit. Like Dad says, just reach out & She'll come land on your hands & bathe your hands in it.) (Sara: The hand of faith which reaches out & receives.)

9. (Sara: Did this happen to anyone else?: I know I was about to speak when someone said the exact same first sentence that I had, the exact same thing, & it just thrilled me because I knew it was the Lord, it just stunned me & it was thrilling!—More than one line even. It was really wonderful! Did it happen to anyone else?) (Fam: Yes!)

10. (Fam: I mainly learned that if you want to get something from the Lord you have to really want it. I heard somebody get this beautiful prophecy & I thought, "Well, I never could get anything like that!" But then I just really wanted it, 'cause I saw how Dad was so much encouraged by it, & how it really edified everyone & everybody profited, how the Lord must've been so happy about it, & then it just started to happen, TYL!)

11. (Pearl: I thought it was very encouraging that some people prophesied for the first time, & especially when this goes out to the Family, it will really encourage them, because it was kind of like you were put on the spot & you knew that you had to get something from the Lord or you would disappoint Him last night, that you had to give something, & so when you do it the first time it gives you so much more faith to do it another time.)

12. (Fam: I learned from seeing so much of the living Word coming out last night how God is not just restricted to verses, which has always been most of the prophesying sessions that I've been in before, & it's really the first time in my life in the Family that I saw something like that, or even got a prophecy myself which is not exclusively a verse but something new & fresh & the living Word! So that's really something you have to exercise & take it by faith. It's something that came from the Lord because it's right there & I feel like it's a gift I haven't exercised enough before maybe for the fear of being misinterpreted or something. I thought, "Well, if I use the Word I'll be safe all the time!" & the living Word prophecy like that was reserved for, I thought, "Well, Dad is the Prophet", but I didn't have the faith I could get something like that myself. So that's what real-

ly encouraged me & what I learned last night too, to not always be limited to the written Word but also let the living Word flow freely.)

13. (Pearl: Each time, you always have to overcome your fear again till you get a little bit more used to it, so the next time you have to exercise your gift again & give something again, it's easier. So next time there's a real desperate prayer meeting you'll have to continue to exercise your gifts again. A few times last night or sometimes when I'd get something, I'd give so much and then I'd abruptly stop, because then all of a sudden you start to fear and you think, "Oh my! What if I don't get any more! What if I stop, everybody's gonna think I'm a fool!" But the moment you fear you won't get more, then your fear comes upon you (Job 3:25), and that's when you lose it. If you continue to practice, even though it's real hard, you'll get better at it.—Just like memorizing or quoting or whatever. It will get a little bit easier each time you exercise the gift.) ("Stir up the gift!"—2Tim.1:6)

14. (Fam: Something I thought was really beautiful & spiritual & supernatural is how all these prophecies can affect you physically. As all these prophecies would come out, the Lord would give them & each & every one would move me so much you're just showered with something, it's almost like an orgasm & you start to cry! It's amazing! It really shows that it's from the Lord by the way it can affect you. I thought it was real beautiful!)

15. (Fam: Another experience last night for me was a feeling of real unity with everybody, like never before in my whole life, I think, that I really felt like one with everyone & there were no separations or personal difficulties with others. It was a really wonderful experience!)

16. (Marianne: I was really thankful that Dad was encouraging us, as this was the last place I'd ever thought I'd be able to prophesy! Ha! But that's the only place I think I could have learned, because when I started to speak he was confirming & he was saying "Hallelujah!", & then he gave me the faith, because you overcome a lot of pride to start talking, but afterwards it was also an attack of your pride & your faith at the same time,

but he encouraged my faith & he kind of coaxed me & then gave me the faith to get something, which I thought was even more important for me. I got later on that it was "a time of preparation, because we're going to be sent forth to battle". I don't know, maybe it was just for me or for a few people, so I was really really thankful that he was there to teach us!) (Sara: That's so important! That's such a standard for the Family how he went about that!)

17. (Marianne: I know personally leading meetings, a lot of times I spent more time wondering if it was really the Lord what people were saying or why they were saying it, & actually not getting things from the Lord myself but analysing people's prophecies. But he was just receiving it all & priming & wanting it & encouraging us that he was expecting it & not trying to judge, & that was just a real lesson!)

18. (Fam: On the personal lesson side, I learned about prophecy & how it works, because before I had always thought, "Well, it's not my gift". Or sometimes I'd get verses or visions & I had the faith for that, but to actually prophesy, that had been one of my questions, if I could do it or not or how it works. I didn't realise that when you're getting just a phrase that that's the Lord speaking to you & that you don't have to get more than one phrase, but I always thought, "Oh my! Well, that's only just a little bit, should I give that?" or "Is this the right time?" Or "If I give that, is it right?" So I didn't know.

19. (So I learned last night, especially when Dad was commanding the Lord to speak, & us too, that it was the Lord putting that in my head & I didn't have to think about it or try to reason it out, but that He'd give more. So I did it, but then I thought, "Well, is that it?", & I squelched the Spirit myself, when I could've given more. Then what I was going to give but didn't give it all, somebody else just about one or two prophecies later gave the exact words! So that was a real good lesson to me about prophecy, as far as understanding it & how it works—that that phrase that the Lord's given you is the Lord & He wants you to give it, & then He'll give you the rest. "Give & it shall be given unto you."—Luk.6:38. So that was a personal lesson, that was exciting, TYL!)

20. (Peter: It was a tremendous personal victory for me, as for many years I've pretty much squelched the gift of prophecy. When I first joined the Family I used to prophesy often, but I eventually went a bit overboard & got a little tripped off, & since then I've always been very careful, actually too careful. I would still prophesy, but very rarely. But Dad's coaxing, commanding & rebuking the Enemy really set me free & gave me the faith once again. As always it took his Words to liberate me, to loose the bands of pride & fear.

21. (I remember the first time I prophesied when I was at babes ranch, it was after the Letter "Faith". The words of that Letter spoke to my heart & above all, gave me faith to give out what the Lord was giving. That's how it was last night as well. Dad's words & prayers renewed that in me & gave me faith to speak out. God bless him for not giving up! His faith & persistence set me free & helped me overcome these fears. God bless him!

22. (It seems like Dad's birthday night was a new awakening in the Spirit, & I'm sure the Family will benefit not only from the beautiful prophecies, but from the sample of his shepherding us through it all. I believe it will help the Family to get set even more free in the Spirit & have more faith to hear from the Lord. PTL! I thank the Lord again & again for Dad, his love, faith, sample, obedience, patience & all he's done to make us all useful vessels in the Lord's hands.

23. (Also it was such a victory! I can even see now in looking back, not so much here but in other places, heading up meetings & things like that, & because as the leader of the meeting, I was squelching that in myself, therefore it sort of tends to squelch everybody else. Because if everybody gets quiet & starts to pray & gets soft & quiet the Lord can speak & it's so convicting. I know in my case I wasn't willing so much to do it myself, therefore you just sort of don't make room for it. You think back now about all the times that were missed, but I was so thankful for Dad! He just didn't give up, & because he didn't give up & because he persisted & he knew the Lord had it, it really helped me, that's for sure!)

24. (Pearl: The thing that Marianne got about "the day of

preparation", I got something like that too, like it's a new day! The Lord doesn't want to give the whole Family just prophecies but He wants to give all the gifts & He wants to give faith & He wants to give wisdom & wants to give discernment, but He wants to pour it out like never ever before, He gives power for the hour! But in the days to come, like Dad said, for Heaven's Girls & Heaven's Boys for the Tribulation we're going to need those powers & be able to have faith & prophecy & healing, but we're not just gonna get it instantly. It's something that we have to grow into. You don't become an adult overnight, & the Lord really wants us to have the faith for healing & have the gift of faith & the gift of helps & all these, & boldness & power & exercise it every day in our walk with the Lord like never before! So that when we're called on to do whatever God wants us to do in that time that's coming we'll be able to do it.)

25. (Fam: I feel it was another victory in "letting go & letting God" & not stopping up the Spirit, but letting it flow! Dad's prayers & encouragement were a tremendous help as well, GBH for literally commanding us to prophesy & not letting go until each one of us had gotten something from the Lord.)

26. (Fam: Through Dad's example I saw that it's the leader's responsibility to really get desperate in the Spirit & just let the Lord take over, & He will either prevent anything weird from happening or if something does happen, will certainly give the leader the anointing to handle the situation and perhaps have some lesson for all to learn. I believe that I could have gotten more if I hadn't waited as long as I did to give some things.)

27. (Peter: It was really a blessing to have people getting it all down & had they not, boy, we really would've missed it, 'cause all those tape recorders never could've picked it all up! But it was really good because they really worked together in unison, 'cause one was on one side & he couldn't get over there fast enough, but another was getting it all down in shorthand. So I just thought that was really special that they did that.

28. (And the other good thing about it was, these are all technical points, but we used two tape recorders. Then one of them didn't work. So it was just the Lord that he took two, & that was really being Spirit-led & really being faithful in recording,

because otherwise we would've missed it. That would've been a real shame!)

++++++

29. Maria's reaction: I thought, "Maybe I'd better, because Dad really wants everybody to participate." I was surprised he didn't tell me to say something or do something. I knew I could give a message in tongues any time & that was the only thing I could give. It wasn't any big burst of emotion that I couldn't hold back. It was like I could give it or I could hold it back. ("The spirit of the prophet is subject to the prophet" — 1Cor.14:32.) But I got convicted at the end that I should give something, so as time got shorter & shorter & Dad was about to close, I thought, "Well, I'll really fail the Lord if I don't do it, so I should do it."

30. It's a good lesson, that even things that seem little are so important! It is so important to obey! It wasn't that I just felt the message bursting forth, & I held it back all evening long, but it was just a little thing or a little urge or a little feeling that I should or it would be good or it would be a good sample. The Lord doesn't always bang you over the head to tell you, "Look, if you don't do it, something major is going to happen or not happen!" But He waits for you. Because otherwise if it was so obvious & you knew, you'd do it. But He just sort of waits for an extra step of willingness, & a step of cooperation & being willing to do it. And then He shows you what He's going to do as a result. Like Dad says, big things are hinged on very small things, & small keys open big doors.

31. So it's a good lesson, how important obedience in the small things is. I thought at the end, "Well, I really should give what I've got. Even if I don't have as much as anybody else"—that's exactly how I felt! But it shows that even if you don't feel this huge urge to give, maybe just a little thing that you know you ought to, nevertheless it may be very important & the Lord may be waiting on you to show you or to do something major. He doesn't always want to tell you it's so major because then you'd go right ahead & do it because you know you need to, then. He wants to see if you'll just obey that little check, that still small voice.



1. The worst thing about having a leader who is a lesbian is that it's questionable to a lot of people. So many people have doubts about it. So it's not a good testimony or example. (Maria: Well, it's been a lot better since you talked about that & she's really trying to be more moderate & even more womanly. She's trying her best, but it's a surface thing, a fleshy thing, that unless we deal with it with the Spirit, she's never going to get the victory.

2. (You said a long time ago that it was a spiritual thing. (See No.292:5) She's very willing-spirited, she wants to be what the Lord wants her to be, but I had a strong impression that she's not going to be able to until we help her by praying, getting rid of this spirit. Because when we prayed & really rebuked the spirit of pride & self-righteousness, she was just so changed, it was good! But there must be another spirit there that's related to that.

3. (I don't know if this is right or not, but I was thinking about how you said lesbianism was a perversion. Therefore it's spiritual. Could it be a spirit of rebellion? I mean, that's what came to me. She's rebelled against man's authority, male authority. That's what came to me—I thought, "What spirit is it? We prayed against pride & self-righteousness...") It's sort of a

women's lib thing. She doesn't want to give the men superiority. I think that's one reason for this head-on clash between me & her right now. She hasn't felt like she had to yield to anybody's authority because she was a man.

4. (Maria: She'd take almost anything I'd say, but then she'd obviously have doubts about what you'd say.—Not too obvious or much but it's there. She didn't mean it to be. She's really been fighting anything like that. But when you're spiritually oppressed, it's not you no matter what you try to do. If it's a spirit that's bothering you, you're sort of powerless against it unless you get it taken care of.

5. (I don't know, I hope I'm right. I don't know what this spirit is, but it sort of came that maybe it was some kind of spirit of rebellion.) That's just the Lord! (Maria: Well, I wanted to ask you.) I agree! (Maria: And I thought maybe we should cast the spirit of rebellion out.) Rebellion against authority! What is it that I had to say that she doubted? (Maria: Well as you pointed out in "Why Should I Say More?" (No.1737), it was doubt that you were right. What she said was sort of doubt that you were right to sit there & just enjoy it all the time & dance.

6. (She doesn't want to doubt & perhaps she doesn't even realise it, but if we're going to have her get the victory, we've got to get the whole victory! She's very sweet-spirited, she really is willing & wants to do whatever, but it came to me real strong that we're going to have to deal with that spirit of rebellion too.) The worst thing about the Chain was their downing spirits, their critical spirits! (Maria: How would rebellion be related to pride & self-righteousness? They must be related.) For goodness sake, yes! (Maria: Because if you're proud or self-righteous you're doubting the Lord's & others' rightness, & it leads to rebellion?)

7. This is exactly what Samuel says, you know the verse, (Maria: "For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft & stubbornness is as iniquity & idolatry."—1Sam.15:23) Stubbornness is a result of pride. (Maria: And stubbornness is like rebellion.) Why would anybody be rebellious or stubborn? "I'm right & you're wrong! I'm right & God's wrong! I'm going to do it my way!" (Maria: That's pride, right?—Because they're proud.) Like that song that Sinatra made famous, "I Did It My Way!" It doesn't

matter what happened, I did it my way!

8. (Maria: What's the definition of pride?) It's self-righteousness. Pride is self-righteousness, that you are more righteous than God. (Maria: If you're proud of something...) You're proud of your own righteousness. (Maria: You glory in it, in other words.) Yes. (Maria: So, if it's your own righteousness, then you're rebelling against God's righteousness, in other words, because you're saying you're more righteous than God & so you're rebelling against God.) Exactly, & that is pride. Pride is self-righteousness & it manifests itself in rebellion.

9. It's just like the Devil, if you give him enough rope he'll hang himself, he always gets caught just when he thinks he's doing his best. Jesus, help us, deliver us somehow, rebuke the Enemy in Jesus' name! It's no small thing, no little devil, probably Satan himself! I don't think there's any job around here he'd trust to anybody else. (Maria: I guess Rebellion's a good enough name for him then?) Oh yes, he epitomises rebellion, he is the rebellion, he led the greatest rebellion ever! Rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, stubbornness as idolatry! I'm almost afraid to pray for her for fear I'm going to hit her! (Maria: Well, maybe that's what she needs! If you feel that way, maybe you need to hit her.)

10. God damn you, Satan, get out of this place! There's no foothold for you here, in Jesus' name! It's almost like he's cackling in laughter! He's got a foothold in her. (Maria: Well, the Lord's greater!) The Lord's protecting us, thank the Lord! (Maria: And if she really wants a victory, she can have it.) She's either got to get the victory or get out! That spirit that I felt tonight when she came out of the room & darted upstairs was the spirit of rebellion, almost like, "You're not going to conquer me this way!"

11. She's absolutely schizophrenic! She seemed like she was doing good for a long time as long as we didn't find her out & as long as that spirit could hide away & you didn't catch him, but he went a little bit too far that time! He just couldn't resist the temptation to taunt me in what he figured was a weak spot, condemnation! It was condemnation, the condemnation of the Devil! But he hit the wrong guy that time! He really blew his cover, exposed himself, & now he's caught & he's furious! He can't hide

anymore, so he's on the rampage!

12. It's probably Satan himself! I don't think he'd trust this job to any lackey! I'm sure he knows we're the greatest threat in this World to his kingdom & he gets as close as he can, & he sure did that time! He was sure trying to keep his cover. She was on her best behaviour. I mean if Keda doesn't get the victory she's like an insane person, schizophrenic!

13. I want you folks to realise that what you're dealing with is the Devil, Satan himself, & you'd better be prayed up & strong in the Lord before you go near her & face her! She's the channel for the Enemy, it was just like the voice of the Devil himself speaking to me. It was like when Satan tempted Jesus, the way she spoke to me that night. It was a taunt, it was a condemnation, although she may not have even realised it. Lord help us in Jesus' name! Bless & keep & protect in Jesus' name!

14. I'll tell you, next time you guys pray over her you'd better rebuke Satan himself, cast him out & order him to leave this place, leave her & this place! Because I don't think he's leaving his job to any little devil or even big devil! He's got a foothold in her & he wants to keep it & he's not going to give up without a battle! He's lost a few rounds but he's still fighting! (Maria: Then I guess the quicker we pray for her the better.) Amen! But,

15. The Scripture that came to me was "this kind goeth not out save by fasting & prayer" (Mat.17:21), like she needs to fast, too, mostly. She's very carnal, she's used to feeding the flesh. She needs to be put on nothing but soup & juices for at least three days.

16. She loves to lord it over women. I think she really hates men. It's the spirit of the age for women to defy men. It's defiance against the law & order of God! "He shall rule over thee," God said, & women have defied it ever since.—Gen.3:16. (Maria: I wonder why she isn't jealous of me? She can't rule me!) Oh Honey, the Devil is just tiptoeing around you. He knows who you are & who you represent & the powers that protect you, the Archangels that have authority over...(tongues & weeping:)

17. "He knoweth that his time is short & that your father has authority over him & he has no strength where David is

concerned!" Well, thank God his time is short! (Maria: Amen, thank You, Jesus!) We've got to rid of him somehow! Did you understand?—You're part of David, Honey! (Maria: Amen, TYJ!) The Archangels of God surround you! She's scared to death of you, so is Satan! You have the authority of the Lord & the Archangels of God protect you! In your presence, she's as meek as a little lamb, scared stiff! That's why you have such peace & confidence in dealing with her, God gives you that, that faith & strength without fear! Because the very Archangels of God encamp around you to protect you, & Satan knows it & he trembles when he sees the weakest saint, it brings him to his knees!

18. "This kind goeth not out save through fasting & prayer!" She needs to be weak in the physical. She's used to being strong. She feeds the flesh. She is used to feeding the flesh, extremely carnal, & this is where Satan has gotten in & has his stronghold on the flesh & the carnal.

19. This is a major serious crisis, she's been the top leader!—She's been dominant in the East for 10 or more years, just like the Devil was trying to hold full sway, but I'm sure the Lord has had His way in spite of the Devil. God accomplished His purpose, thank the Lord! But now the Devil has been exposed & he knows his time is short, therefore he is furious! Jesus, Lord Jesus! I hope she can get the victory through these stop-gap measures through you folks.

20. (Maria: I got a verse when I was thinking about why she was buttering me up all the time & not really giving you enough credit.) The Devil was trying to get your sympathy, to bypass me! (Maria: I got that verse. "We will not have this man to rule over us!"—Luk.19:14. And it was almost like the way I got it was not just you in particular but male!) It's the Devil! (Maria: I was thinking about it in relationship to lesbianism & everything.) Well, it's the Devil! It's Satan himself! (Maria: It was like he was saying that?) Yes! The Devil! Exactly, in defiance, it's defiance! (Maria: Rebellion!—I got it like "man" meant "male".) Exactly! (Maria: She doesn't want...) She doesn't want this man to rule over her, she doesn't mind you ruling over her. She doesn't want this man to rule over her. (Maria: I told her that.) And I represent the Lord Himself, so it's defiance against

God!

21. Well, let's see what you guys can do. It's good training for you, because you're going to have to face problems like this. If it isn't her, it is going to be somebody else. Satan is on the rampage & you're going to have to fight him in one form or the other, so you'd better learn how! When the Apostles came back to the Lord & asked why they couldn't cast certain demons out, He said, "This kind"—in other words, very powerful kinds—"could not go out without fasting & prayer." So let's see what you can do with fasting & prayer. I'm warning you, if I have to enter into this thing, there is going to be some kind of violent confrontation, she may get beat up! Maybe you ought to warn her, if she doesn't get the victory through your prayer & fasting, then I'm going to come in & beat her up! Maybe that will scare the Devil out of her! It's just the threat of force that scares the devils, the threat of dominance!

22. As the Lord told Peter, who was the most influential disciple of all, the most important one of all! Who was the closest to the Lord in those last days?—Peter! (Maria: The most vocal!) What did the Lord say?—"Satan hath desired thee that he might sift thee, but I have prayed for thee that thy faith fail thee not!"—Luk.22:31-32. The Devil himself was using Peter to deny & defy the Lord! You ought to tell her how serious it is, scare the daylights out of her with how serious it is! It's the Devil himself!—Satan himself!—Not some little devil or even some arch-demon but it is Satan himself who is using her!

23. (Maria: And should we give her the verse that you got & then tell her after she has fasted then we are going to pray for her & rebuke the Devil?) Tell her, "We are going to fast & pray three days!"—Nothing but liquids, the whole Family, except for the children, of course. (Maria: And then tell her what's going to happen, then we're going to pray for her that she is delivered from the Devil. I was wondering how much we could tell her is going on & what we were going to do?) Yes, tell her, warn the Devil! Put him on the spot!

24. She had better yield & get the victory & get rid of Satan, or there is going to be a real conflict! This is her chance to yield without violence. (Maria: She'll probably say, "Well, what am I

supposed to yield?" The Devil!—Satan! She needs to rebuke Satan in her voice with her own will & tell him to depart!: "I resist you, Satan, in Jesus' name! Get out of me & get out of here, in the name of Jesus!"

**25. She can get rid of him by putting her will on the side of God & rebuking him & resisting him & cursing him!** (Maria: She should be doing that all the time, even before we pray for her at the end of the 3 days.) She has got to, absolutely, right now, every minute! She needs to be cursing the Devil & rebuking him & resisting him every moment, because it is Satan himself that asks that he might sift her, literally possess her!

**26. If she'll really recognise it & fight it & resist it & rebuke the Devil & resist Satan himself, why there's hope, then we won't have to go to the extreme & God won't have to go to the extreme.** (Maria: Should we help pray with her then when she does it?) Of course! (Maria: But then that will be almost like doing it before we fast & pray for a few days.) You need to fast & pray for 3 days. (Maria: You mean not pray with her until 3 days?) Well, you've got to keep praying with her all the time & rebuking the Enemy & she needs to learn to rebuke Satan. It's the Devil & himself! She has got to realise what a serious threat it is to her & her position in the Lord, if any. (Maria: Even her life, if she doesn't get the victory.) It's a threat to her sanity & her very life! If she doesn't get the victory, the Lord will let the Devil kill her!

**27. I'm getting fed up with having to deal with her & taking everybody's time!** That's just what the Devil wants, to waste our time & energy, & she'd better recognise the fact that he has gotten in here through her! It ought to scare the daylights out of her to where she really resists & tries to get rid of him before I have to knock him out of her, & I mean it! I'd certainly sooner do that than put up with the Devil here in our midst!

**28. You've got to learn how to deal with these problems, with Satan himself!** He is going to ask that he might sift thee but I am praying for you that your faith fails you not! Let's hope that's all it takes, because I warn you, if you bring me into this problem it is going to be violent! It is going to be a last resort! I'm going to beat it out of her if I have to, I'll beat her out of here & she'll wish she never came! Of course, then we'll have to leave, but

anyway at least, praise God, we'll get rid of the problem so the rest of you won't have to be afflicted with it!

**29. A three-day fast for everyone but the children, nothing but liquids!** It is a pretty good fast, only liquids, about all it does is remind them they are supposed to be praying. They don't suffer for it.

**30. I'll tell you, we're dealing with the Ol' Boy himself!** It's Satan himself! He hasn't given the job to anybody else & she might as well know it, too. She is his foothold in this house & we are not going to tolerate it! She either gets rid of him voluntarily or I'm going to sock him out of her! It's the Devil himself! He won't leave this job to any little flunkie! Sorry for all of this trouble but it's part of your training. I won't tolerate it, I will have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness.—Eph.5:11. Depart from me, Satan! I rebuke you in the name of Jesus!

**31. You'd think after all the trouble she has caused she would want to bow down at my feet & beg & plead for mercy!** Instead it seems to me she is still a little arrogant! It seems that the one thing she really lacks is humility! She has no meekness or quietness of spirit, all I got was a continued feeling of rebellion! She feels she is being unjustly treated. Look how the devils challenged Jesus to cast them out from the demented man!: "Art Thou come to torment us before the time?"—Challenged Him! Think of it! Arrogantly defied Him!—Quoted the law on Him! Apparently He couldn't actually condemn them yet or give them their judgement then, all He could do was just let them go their way into the swine!—Mat.8:29-32. That arrogant, defiant spirit is really horrible!

**32. I think Keda's very size & strength & that powerful spirit makes it difficult for her to be humble, difficult for her to be meek.** I think she has really prided herself in that for so long, in being a man & mannish & masculine, huge & strong, it practically intimidates people, especially women! (Maria: Yes, that's what we were talking about, that she is really proud of that, that's why it is so important to get that rooted out, that whole lesbianism scene with her, because she is proud of it, really proud of it!—Like she's sort of an exception, she is the one person that is like that & she is proud of that, although it is not anything to be proud

of, but she is!

33. (You said, "God forgive me for ever vindicating her or excusing her!") I'm talking about her & Shua. (Maria: But you know, in "Women In Love" (No.292) you said definitely how it can be normal for women to be in love & love each other if they still love men & like men too. But you really brought out definitely about her, we were just reading it yesterday, that it is a spiritual thing that should be prayed over.) She has a real proud haughty spirit about this! I told you before that there is something about her that just really offends me! (Maria: You said right in that Letter it is a perversion that needs to be prayed over, & she needs to be delivered from it! Or, that although some women may be born with some male hormones, in that case you said then they need to be prayed for, that they may be healed! So one way or the other there wasn't really a loophole, because it says it's a perversion or physical handicap, & either get delivered or get healed, which sort of amounts to the same thing.)

34. But apparently she has felt like she was exonerated & an exception, that she didn't have to. (Maria: Well, what you said there was clear. She needs to be prayed over one way or the other.—If it's just a physical thing, to get healed, or if it's a spiritual thing, to exorcise it, it says very clearly in there.) (See No.292:100)

35. I don't think she is going to get the victory until she overcomes that mannish spirit completely! It is going to have to be challenged & rebuked & cast out & overcome! As long as she is still vindicating herself & defending herself on that score she is not going to get the victory. (Maria: She says she wants to do whatever it takes.) She is going to have to admit that it is wrong! (Maria: And that it is a perversion!)—And she has got to get rid of it! (Maria: That's right! Amen! I agree!) It's demonic! (Maria: And we're just going to have to face her with that, just say that & tell her that & say, "Are you willing to forsake that?") Exactly! You are going to have to tell her. If not, it's going to wreck her life, her ministry & her spirit & she is going to be of no good to the Lord or His Work or anything! Because we can't let her run around with that kind of a spirit! This is the end, the end of the line! She needs to get the victory or she is finished, she

is out! We can't set our stamp of approval on that sort of thing now that we know what it is really like & just what it really is. She's been exposed & the Devil has been exposed. And we certainly cannot be in cahoots with him!

36. The whole World is going to have to know that she has been delivered or demoted or something, that we don't approve of it! And if they have gotten the idea from some of the things I have said that we do, we've got to correct it! (Maria: I think people took the "Girl Who Wouldn't" to be a stamp of approval for Keda personally when actually the point of the whole Letter was that we should be willing to do anything for the Lord. It wasn't just a question of being with Keda, she didn't want to be with any woman, whereas she should've been willing to do anything for the Lord. So what you wrote was valid!) Amen! That's right!

---

## EXPOSING KEDA'S PROBLEM!—(Part 2)

DO 1748 3/84

1. **Lesbianism is like liquor or gambling or dope!** The gambler can't be trusted to even get near the tables, the alcoholic can't be trusted with one taste & the drug addict can't be trusted with one shot! She's got to be totally & utterly delivered & separated from that kind of behaviour & activity, completely! No more women!—Period! (Maria: Don't you think that's the crux of the matter, if she's told in no uncertain terms what the problem is, & then it's up to her whether she's willing or not?) Absolutely! We're going to have to totally forbid it, ban it & exorcise it, & she's not to promote that anymore at all, indulge in it anymore at all! She's to fight it & conquer it & get the victory! (Maria: But the thing is to get her to be willing, you know.) She's got a lot of pride. (Maria: Well, we haven't really dealt with her lesbianism right out flat. That's what we're planning to do.)

2. **That's what you're going to have to do!** She's still arrogant & defiant about that. She thinks she's been justified in it & that I've defended it, but that's the finish! It hasn't borne good fruit, obviously.

3. The Lord is trying to make a woman out of her, but she just absolutely rejected it, she doesn't want it. She prides herself in being a man & being what she is, & that's got to get knocked out of her & we're not going to tolerate it anymore! That's the end, finito, no more, no more! And she's got to come to the point where she's going to have a testimony to give the World on it, the whole World, & how wrong she was on it & what evil fruit it bore & what a bad effect it had on her & her spiritual life & others. She's going to have to have some kind of victorious glorious testimony that she was miraculously delivered or she's not going to be of any use any more at all.—I wouldn't want to give her the time of day, much less any responsibility in the Family.

4. We have just sort of let her be an exception. But we can't do it anymore! She's going to have to be delivered or else! Oh Lord, help us! She's going to have to get the victory, that's all! No more mannishness!—Just like you can't even let an alcoholic or gambler or drug addict near his temptation any more. We're going to have to forbid it. I'd say she shouldn't even be allowed to dance with girls anymore or sleep with girls. That's almost giving her a temptation that's more than she can bear. It's her weakness. She thinks it's her strength but it's her weakness & it's a terrible spiritual weakness! It really let the Devil in! (Maria: I got the verse before that "old things are passed away, behold all things have become new" (2Cor.5:17) & I told her that, that all things have to become new in her life. Everything has to completely change.)

5. It's an entire psychological spiritual wrench to have to look at it as an evil thing & not tolerate it anymore instead of vindicating herself or feeling vindicated & feeling that those Letters vindicated her. So it's just going to have to be World knowledge. This whole thing is going to come out! It's not going to be able to be hidden in the closet. We can't have this sort of thing happen & not let this cat out of the bag.

6. I'll tell you, you can't yield to that spirit, that's all there is to it! You can't feed it & minister to it & encourage it or it just goes wild! It's gone hogwild in Keda & she's either got to be cured or else, so that it comes to the point that she realises it's evil & it's demonic, it's devilish, it's fiendish, it's hellish &

it's not right & it cannot be tolerated! It has to be rebuked & cast out & gotten rid of once & for all, or we just can't use her anymore! I can't even stand to have her around while she still has that spirit!

7. She's going to have to ask the Lord for a meek & quiet spirit, the humble spirit of a woman, the weaker vessel. That's the very thing she abhors, & she prides herself on being so strong, stronger than women. This is the end of the line for that spirit, she's got to be delivered, that's all, or she'll be of no more use to us or the Lord, & the World is going to have to know it, sooner or later.

8. When I was first asked that question by her & Shua, when she wrote to me in London about it, I knew virtually nothing about lesbianism, never had any personal contact with a lesbian. I know I abhorred Sodomites but I never really had any experience with lesbians & I was trying to be charitable, trying to be as merciful as possible & look on the bright side. But now that I've had personal contact & seen it with my own eyes, it's abhorrent! Intolerable!

9. All this time she's excused herself & defended herself & exonerated herself & justified herself that it was all right, in fact even prided herself in it! Now she's got to see it as it really is, as it is in Jude!—That's God's picture of it! Lord help us, in Jesus' name! Have mercy! Thank God for that one little ray of hope in that passage, "others save with fear". (Maria: Yes, your whole talk last night was about, "If you have to go in there & save her through fear or threatening or beat it out of her by fear, so she'd be afraid not to do the right thing.")

10. And may the Lord forgive me for ever defending lesbianism when I really knew little or nothing about it! (Maria: No, but back there you really made it clear that it was a perversion & needed to be delivered.) I mean, where it is real love & affection of any two people for each other, that's a different story. But this carnal, disgusting, rotten, lust of the flesh that she has, totally only for women, that's not of the Lord, & totally only for the flesh!

11. I think she could be a very charming pleasant personality, a wonderful character, if she'd get rid of that! But I

think that's the thing the Lord has just abhorred in her, & He's not going to tolerate it any longer! Now that we've uncovered it & discovered it, He's not going to put up with it anymore! The days of our ignorance He winked at, but now He's going to have to call us to repentance!—Acts 17:30. We share the guilt, we tolerated it, we put up with it, although I must admit it was certainly difficult for me, as you know. I abhorred it every time I had to get near her or she stayed with us or lived with us or ate with us!

**12. "Spots at our feasts".—What a Scripture to get!** Isn't that amazing how the Lord gives you sometimes just one verse or one phrase out of a passage, then that's the key that unlocks the door to the whole passage, & thereby He directs you to that particular passage! But the whole thing fits her to a tee, except we're trusting she's one of the "others" that we're going to be able to save with fear, & not the worst kind for whom there is no hope.

**13. I'm sure there is hope for her. She knows & loves the Lord, that's obvious.** And apparently she has the Holy Spirit, I hope, & she surely must love the Lord. She seems to. (Maria: Amen.) And she's stuck with His Work through thick & thin for all these years, although it may have been a battle. But she's had a battle with this thing for all her life, & she finally just resigned herself to it & gave in to it apparently, & just accepted it as something that was unchangeable & tolerable. But it's not, "nothing is impossible with the Lord" & "all things are possible to him that believeth."—Lk.1:37; Mk.9:23. So I'm counting on that verse there that gives us a ray of hope, "Others save with fear."—Jude 23.

**14. So let's hope we can save her for the Lord's Work.** I believe that the Lord is able & I believe we can. But she has to be confronted with the facts & with the truth of how horrible it is & how abhorrent it is to God & how revolting & repulsive, it just plain stinks as far as He's concerned, & I have just always had that personal feeling every time she's been around! I've tried to get the victory over it & tried to be charitable & loving & sweet & kind & forgiving & overlook it, but I just haven't been able to shake it, but now I realise that God doesn't want me to shake it. He wants us to shake her, shake her up & get rid of it! "The days

of that ignorance God winked at, but now He's calling all of us to repent." We've got to all repent for having tolerated it & put up with it & even encouraged it. So we're all guilty. (Maria: Yes.)

**15. For we're coming to a period where we're going to need more power & greater purification.** The Lord doesn't want anything to interfere with it, because He's not going to be able to tolerate a thing that the Devil can put his finger on or that the Devil can use, no little loopholes or cracks in the armour or holes in the dike. He wants to make a clean sweep so we can be ready for what's coming. And you can't have that kind of power unless the Lord's in complete control, no little devils on the inside, much less any great Satans! To make saints He's got to get rid of the Satans.

**16. Lord help us in Jesus' name! Give her the guts to face it!** She has to deny & rebuke & ask for deliverance from her whole way of life, the thing that she has made out of herself all her life & the way she's lived all her life, the thing she's lived for. She's either going to have a tremendous victory or it would certainly be a terrible defeat!

**17. She really needs a brainwashing from all the devilish philosophy she read as a teenager!** She's going to really have to ask the Lord to just absolutely cleanse her mind of all that filth! It's absolutely demonic! She's going to have to be rewired! All that kind of philosophy was absolutely demonic, devilish, fiendish, Satanic, the worst thing she could have possibly gotten into!

**18. Well, praise God! He gets His greatest victories out of some of the worst defeats,** & if she gets a victory, let me tell you, it's going to be one monumental, colossal, gigantic, stupendous victory over that kind of thing! We sort of laughed at it & winked at it & tolerated it at first because we really didn't know it. (Maria: That's right.) But now the Lord has exposed it. What a tiny little thing for God to use! The Devil just took one step too far, just got out of line with one little crack which opened the door to show what was underneath, this seemingly innocent little remark. Boy, I'll tell you though, it really teed me off, it sparked my fuse & I blew up! Afterwards I wondered, "How could I have been so incensed & so offended & so absolutely furious at her saying such

a thing?" But now I begin to realise, as we begin to uncover the whole problem & the whole horrible ugly picture underneath, that it was just scratching the surface! I think that little compromise on that particular issue & that characteristic of hers has helped to defeat her ministry.

19. **She's got to be as sickened of lesbianism as I am of sodomy**, because I can see now that this form of lesbianism is absolutely Satanic! It's not of God, not of the Lord, not of normal mere affectionate love. It's absolutely a demonic lustful fiendish craving of flesh! That Book of Jude just pins it right down & she's got to be faced with it! (Maria: Well, she'll probably say, for example, she really does love me & love... I mean it's not completely without any love or affection. The demonic part is there but there is some good mixed in!) It's the intemperance, immoderation! The Devil can take even normal things & make you go to excess. Any kind of overdoing or even too much sex or overeating or over-drinking, all those things are not right. They're all intemperance & immoderation. (Maria: Yes.)

20. **But it starts out with that sort of thing, see? In her case it carried over to the absolute total horrible extreme where it just took her over** completely & got totally out of control, to where it controlled her & she was controlled by those lustful Satanic desires! (Maria: And probably by spirits that she had opened the door for through all this demonic reading & demonic study!) Through her own evil lusts along with reading all this kind of junk, shit that condoned it & encouraged it & even led her into worse, the horrors & doctrines of devils! Those guys who wrote that stuff were all fiends!

21. **She's a brand snatched from the burning, hating even the garment spotted by the flesh, & you've got to try to help save her!**—Zech.3:2; Jude 23. Look at what a powerful force she's already been for the Lord, so look how powerfully the Devil has attacked her with this thing to try to defeat her! (Maria: She's a natural leader, she always has been from the time she was young.) What a powerhouse she could be for the Lord if she's delivered! She's already been a real power for the Lord all these years with that handicap, a real handicap! Look what she could be without it! She's going to take off! I mean, she'll really take

off if she gets delivered! (Maria: Yes!) She's going to be a Heaven's Girl for sure! I believe it. (Maria: Yes, amen! Look at all the faith she's had!)

22. **I believe that's why the Lord brought her here, to get her delivered from this handicap!** It's a real handicap, she's a cripple & it's crippled her ministry! (Maria: It's caused her to think she's so strong in the flesh, you know. If she's willing to let go of that & just be like anybody else, just be weak & normal, then look how the Lord can shine through her & work through her!) The Lord's trying to show her that, He's really trying to show it to her right now. (Maria: She can just look at me & see, if she admires me, look at me & see how weak & nothing I am & how little I know & what little I can do, & see how the Lord can work, you know?) It's just the Lord!

23. **When you're weak then you're strong, for His strength is made perfect in your weakness!**—2Cor.12:9. Her very strength in the flesh has been a handicap to her spirit & her spiritual strength. (Maria: That's right. She always prided herself on her physical strength.) I guess that's why the Lord let me grow up such a physical weakling in many ways, although apparently I was stronger than I realised. The Lord gave me a good, sound body, & even though I looked skinny & weak, in some ways I really wasn't, at least not in the strength of the Lord.

24. **I feel relieved already as I think we're going to get the victory**, now that we've got the problem pinned down & the Lord has spoken & exposed it. But now you've got to face her with it & she's got to acknowledge it & want to be delivered & fight that thing from here on out & confess it to the World & all her former associates & cronies & everyone else, that she's a changed person & has become the Lord's woman instead of the Devil's man!—And the Enemy has no longer any foothold in her!

25. **Lord help us & deliver us in Jesus' name! Please deliver poor Keda from this horrible affliction!** It's an affliction! She's got to look on it as a disease or affliction, a real curse, a disability, a handicap! She's a cripple & her work & life & ministry are being crippled by it!—And we're being hindered by it. Even right now, we've got all our important work & your important work, & yet we're here spending hours & hours dealing with the subject! But

apparently the Lord figures it's worth it, because if He can pull her through—& I'm sure He can—she can be a real powerhouse for the Lord & much much more useful & powerful than ever before! TTL!

26. I think that's encouraging now that we've gotten to the root of the problem. We couldn't very well solve it without knowing what it was. I mean, you can't heal the disease unless you diagnose it. I think this is going to really do it, to really call a spade a spade, as black as it is, & for her to have to face it. We've got to face our mistake of tolerating it for years. We've got to come out & confess openly it is of the Devil, there's nothing good about it.

27. I wouldn't be surprised if that whole women's lib movement is led by a bunch of lesbians, mannish masculine women who want to be recognised as men! The Devil really likes to be recognised & have his work glorified! She's just got to recognise that the whole thing is of the Devil & not of the Lord & she cannot tolerate it! She's got to fight it & desperately want to be delivered completely, just completely! No more! (Maria: Here's a Scripture that came to mind:

28. ("For the time past of our life may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousness, lusts, excess of wine, revellings, banquetings, & abominable idolatries: Wherein they think it strange that ye run not with them to the same excess of riot, speaking evil of you: Who shall give account to Him that is ready to judge the quick & the dead."—1Pet.4:2-5.) Now, there's the passage!

29. (Maria: Oh, here's another Chapter very similar to Jude! Look, the whole thing is almost a verbatim quote, it's 2nd Peter Chapter 2, "But chiefly them that walk after the flesh & the lust of uncleanness & despise government. Presumptuous are they, self-willed, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities.") How about that! (Maria: "Whereas Angels, which are greater in power & might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord. But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken & destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not. And shall utterly perish in their own corruption; & shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it

pleasure to riot in the day time. Spots they are & blemishes."—2Pet.2:10-13.

30. ("Spots they are & blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you; having eyes full of adultery, & that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children: Which have forsaken the right way, & are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bosor..."

31. ("...Who loved the wages of unrighteousness; but was rebuked for his iniquity: The dumb ass speaking with man's voice forbad the madness of the prophet. These are wells without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest; to whom the mist of darkness is reserved for ever. For when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonness, those that were clean escaped from them who live in error. While they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption: For of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage. For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the World through the knowledge of the Lord & Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, & overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning." And then it goes on, "For it had been better for them not to have known the way" etc.—2Pet.2:15-21. I got that verse for her, "Stand fast in the liberty wherewith Christ has set you free & be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage."—Gal.5:1.)

32. It's amazing those two passages are so similar! (Maria: How about that! And even the first part that I didn't read you, the first part of this Chapter is like Jude, too. "And turning the cities of Sodom & Gomorrah into ashes, condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly."—2Pet.2:6.)

33. At least now we know, & the Lord answered her problem, even if it did cost us part of a night's sleep! Rooting out can be a painful job, it's not a very easy job. Sometimes it tears some of the earth with it, like tearing out part of the flesh in which it grows. If you've ever rooted up a plant you know what I mean—it's like a plant, pulling it out by the roots!

## **A PRAYER REQUEST FOR KEDA**

—With Dad at Family Dinner.

DO 1749 3/84

**1. Well we won a real victory last night! TTL!** The battle is not over yet, the biggest battles are yet to be fought. But once you nail down the problem & have the answer, you get the solution. Like diagnosing a disease, you can't very well treat it or operate until you know what it is. But we got it! Hallelujah! So PTL! Keep prayin'. We need a lot of prayer. I understand you're more or less fasting & praying.

**2. So just keep prayin'. I think we're going to get the victory! TTL!** And I think it's going to be a big one 'cause it's a big battle! We didn't realise how deep & how serious it was until the Devil blew his cover! Thank the Lord! But I think the bird with the broken pinion is going to learn the lesson & fly higher than ever! So have faith & pray for victory. It's going to be a real revolution. We're going to have to back down on a former doctrine.

**3. Battles aren't easy but the victories are worth it! TTL!** So keep praying & thank you very much for your prayers.—Not only for us but especially for the one who needs it the most. These things are hard to go through, but they're worth it if you come out better & more powerful, more useful. I think the Lord's getting us really ready for some tough times, & He's not going to put up with any more foolishness! Some things we have tolerated that God winked at, "The times of this ignorance God winked at, but now He's going to call all of us to repentance," to get things straightened out!—Acts 17:30. PTL! So keep pray-  
ing.

**4. I just wanted to request your prayers & tell you why you're fasting so you can keep praying desperately the Lord will finish the job!**—He has pinned down the problem & given the answer & prescribed the cure. We just now need to put it into effect. That's the hardest part, the operation. But in some cases if you don't cut out the cancer they're going to die! So PTL! Do remember us in prayer & this dear one who needs your prayers the most, who is going through a real trial & battle, but I believe she's going to come out victorious! TTL!

**5. I know she will if she yields to the Lord & takes the prescribed cure.** I'll tell you, Beloved, the Devil is angry! He is mad, he's furious! We've been accomplishing too much! We're beset on every side right now, persecution here & persecution there & problems here & there. The Lord said last night, "he knoweth his time is short!"—Rev.12:12. So the Devil is furious!—Trying to attack us right here at the centre! So keep praying especially for Maria, Peter, Faithy & Sara, who are handling the case. They really need your encouragement & your courage & prayer & protection & help. Sometimes the darkest hour is just before dawn. Sometimes the most bitter battles are just before the greatest victories! I think we're going to come out of it stronger than ever before, just like every trial we've been through. Every test, every trial, every crisis we've gone through we've come out stronger than before!—Sometimes fewer than before but stronger! TTL!

**6. Well, it was certainly comforting that the Lord finally got through & the Lord really specified the problem & prescribed the antidote!** We've diagnosed the case now & we know the cure, & all we have to do is get the patient's cooperation for deliverance. (Maria: Well, she said she wants anything to be weeded out & destroyed that is hindering her.) If she's been that powerful with that handicap, just think how powerful she can be without it, delivered of it!—Testifying publicly to the World of her deliverance! I think it's going to do everybody a lot of good! PTL!

**7. I know it's given us a real purging, done us a lot of good, driven us to the Lord in prayer seeking help & deliverance!** It's a dangerous situation when the Devil gets in! But I think we're already winning the victory! TTL! The Lord's given several promises that sound like it's going to be a real victory! TTL!

**8. Does she seem to be humbling any?** (Maria: In general, but there are times she goes through battles, then gets the victory, & then she's sort of up & down, up & down. But when she's humble she's more humble than she was before.) That's because she's not completely delivered yet, that's yet to come. There's going to have to be united prayer for complete deliverance &

specific identification of the problem publicly before her & all, & getting rid of it.

9. Let's see if she accepts the Word. It's pretty heavy, but if she can take it, there's hope she can come through! If she can't, she'd sure be in pretty bad shape. But it seemed to me, from some of the things the Lord said, that she's going to make it! I was telling someone today that I've had sort of a revulsion for her every time she's been anywhere near. I could hardly stand to touch her & have to kiss her, but I was trying to be charitable & trying to go out of my way to be sweet to her, but there's been just something about her that just was revolting!

10. Apparently it was the Spirit in me—I didn't know what was the matter, but the Spirit in me was just absolutely repulsed by the uncleanness! But today when I was talking about that to John & Maria, the Lord said, "That which I have cleansed, call thou not unclean!"—Acts 10:15. So in God's sight it sounds like it's as good as done already, thank the Lord! He'll just have to put the finishing touches on it to fulfil His Will. I hope that's what it meant. (To Peter:) Keep prayin', keep believin', victory's on the way! (Maria: Keep reading the Word!) He gets His greatest victories out of seeming defeat!

---

## **VICTORY!**

DO 1750 3/84

—With Dad at the Family Dinner Table while Maria, Peter, Faith & Sara pray with Keda upstairs:

1. They're going to pray upstairs now. I told'm when they're ready to pray we'd go to our knees here & pray with them. Son, be sure & notify us when you're through with your prayer. Yes, we would enjoy hearing about the victory too. So PTL! Amen. We're not heard for our much speaking or vain repetitions but I do believe in joining with them in prayer.—Mt.6:7.

2. Even if you know not what you're praying for, "the Spirit prayeth through us with groanings which cannot be uttered!"—Rom.8:26. So just let the Spirit pray through you. PTL! She knows what to pray for. PTL!

3. Pray especially against her terrible headaches! She's

been having terrible attacks of the Enemy & has never had headaches like this in her life, & suddenly while they're praying for her the Devil will attack & give her such horrible pain in her head she feels like her head's going to fall off! Never had anything like it before! Just absolute attacks of the Devil! So really rebuke it in Jesus' Name! It's just the Enemy. I mean he's angry, he's mad! But let me tell you, God is more angry!

4. The Devil's not giving up without a fight! Remember when Jesus cast some of the devils out of the demoniacs they'd have a fit or they'd get violent or something, the devil's last stand, & then they leave. So he's trying to make his last stand, so just really pray! PTL! And pray for the prayers' protection.

5. There are nearly 100 people on this side of the World praying tonight right with you right now that the Lord will really answer prayer, as well as all the Angels of Heaven! I'm sure the Lord's concerned, because we're the most important people on Earth to Him! I believe it! The Devil's tried to get in right here, imagine, right here at the centre! But we're going to get rid of him, amen?

6. They're getting victories with Keda, but that doesn't mean that the whole war's over! There're always battles, especially once the Devil's lost any territory. He really hates to lose it & he often tries to come back & regain it. So pray against these terrible headaches & attacks of the Enemy she gets. (Dad & Family then pray for Keda, & a short time later Maria joins Dad. To Maria:) Tell'm what you were telling me, Honey.

7. (Maria: Oh, we prayed over everything! We prayed against everything & rebuked everything that could possibly be any foothold of the Enemy: Pride, criticism, self-righteousness, rebellion & these headaches, any kind of an attack of the Enemy whatsoever, as well as her tatoos & her rings, & she got rid of some evil spirits that manifested themselves as they left her. Hallelujah for the victory!

8. (We had two other prayers for deliverance, one two days ago & one this afternoon, both times at which she received partial deliverance—where she was set free from some of these hindering & oppressing spirits. After our prayer this afternoon, Peter got the verse, "Who hath delivered, Who doth deliver &

Who will yet deliver"! So tonight after our three days of fasting and prayer by all of us, we had the final prayer for her deliverance. Maybe Sara can give us a little summary of our prayer meeting.)

9. (Sara: Maria led, with Faithy, Peter & I as witnesses, by first asking Keda what she had to say for herself. Keda said she believed everything that the Lord & His Word through Dad had said was true & she really wanted to be delivered, in Jesus' name! After about 30 minutes of reading selected parts from "The Mop" on resisting the Devil & yieldedness, & when you all were ready to pray, Maria told Keda we were going to pray for her complete deliverance. Keda, God bless her, was very willing & yielded, even eager to be completely free!

10. (Sara: Each of us together & in turn prayed boldly & angrily against every evil spirit that Dad had mentioned, plus continually rebuked Satan himself, & Keda too was calling on Jesus & rebuking each spirit by name, really commanding the spirits of rebellion & perversion, carnality, devilish wisdom, lesbianism, pride, self-righteousness & criticism to leave. There seemed no other spirit left to cast out, till Keda said, "I really think there's something to what Dad got about that evil bird stare. He even called me a 'vulture' once—there's more!"—And she got on her face again! We were all desperately crying out to Jesus when Keda herself led us in rebuking the evil vulture-bird spirits, & her whole body then quivered as a long, loud shriek tore out of her!—Exactly like some birds of prey make!—And she relaxed! Hallelujah! It was done!) TYJ!

11. (Sara: Faithy & I then both got the witness we should all pray over her two tattoos (which Keda had gotten while in the Family!), & Faithy prayed against any bad spirits of the past or evil influences & bondages, then we all laid hands on her vaginal area & prayed Jesus would make it yielded & fruitful, & for the Lord to make her a completely new woman for His glory! PTL! Keda always cried out in prayer with us, & just as fervently as we did! We sure felt the divine power of united prayer together!

12. (Sara: Maria pointed out afterwards how wonderfully the Lord just took over, & used each one of us in turn, to

pray & get things in the Spirit. Also, it was the crucial test of Keda's humility & yieldedness to actually take a personal stand against the vulture spirit, because we had done all we could & prayed against everything we knew to, & the Lord put the responsibility on Keda of calling that thing by name & asking Jesus to deliver her! Thank God for her perseverance & for that physical manifestation, Maria said, because it openly has proved that what Dad got was absolutely true, & the evil spirits showed outward, obvious signs of having to flee at the Name of Jesus! Praise His Name! Jesus did it & no one can deny the Victory & conquest over Satan himself, in Jesus' name!) Hallelujah! TYJ! Amen!

13. Whew! I thought maybe we were going to have to leave! If she didn't get the victory, I was leaving—that's what it meant, that's how serious it was! I'll tell you, when you confront the Devil face-to-face & you hit him head-on, it's you or him, & you've either got to win or you're going to lose! It's a serious situation, so keep it in your prayers. You can't get over all this sort of thing necessarily in a day, it takes a little while sometimes, & the Enemy doesn't yield territory very willingly. When people have had these weaknesses & had these channels open to the Enemy before, he tries to get back in if he can. So keep praying for her that the Lord will really protect her & deliver her and give her the complete victory, rewire her completely! Ask Him that He'll put a new mind in her, "That mind which is also in Christ Jesus!"—Phil.2:5. TYL! That takes a new, real rewiring of all the nerves & nerve centres & whatnot, to make sure the Lord has complete control & the Devil is gone! He was really trying to use her, but thank the Lord for victory! PTL!

14. She's still on probation, I'll have you know, suspended sentence more or less, & in isolation. That's her penance, she wanted talks & she's going to get'm! She's watching the whole Garden of Eden series & she's getting a lot out of it, TTL! She never got to see it before, so she's going through that, & I think it's good for her & I think she ought to complete the course of indoctrination & brainwashing & rewiring, & also we're waiting to make sure it took! Amen? Some changes are instantaneous,

overnight, & others take awhile, & sometimes you just have to wait & see & make sure. So she's still not to come down to supper with us until she's finished those videos & we're sure that she's got complete victory & ready to really testify & show that the Lord has delivered her! PTL? Amen.

15. So it's not going to be necessarily any quickie, for I want to make sure & we're gonna wait & see. Meanwhile, she's on probation & she's in solitary, so to speak, watching those videos. That's what she asked for & the Lord's going to give it to her—talks! The Lord forgave David, but He let him go ahead & lose the child & for awhile lose his wives & his kingdom, his throne, his favourite son, everything, even after he prayed for the Lord to forgive him! The Lord forgave him, but let him suffer the consequences of his sins for awhile!

16. When the Scribes & the Pharisees came out to hear John, pretending to be repentant, he said, "Bring ye therefore forth fruits meet for repentance!"—Mt.3:8. He wanted to see the proof, he wanted to see the evidence! He said, "Let me see if you really mean it." So in a tough case like this, I'm going to wait to see the proof before we open our arms to complete fellowship again. PTL? Amen?

17. So I think we can stand a little victory celebration, huh? How about it? C'mon Alf, give us some lively music, some happy music, some dance music, & out with the lights & let's thank the Lord & praise the Lord for the victory! PTL? (Family: Amen!) GBY! Hallelujah! This is the first prayer meeting I ever was in that ended with a dance! Why not? Why shouldn't we rejoice now? That's what we're going to do at the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. After we've won the victory we're going to have a real shindig! GBY! ILY!

---

## **MORE ON ASKING FOR PRAYER! DO 1757 2/84**

1. Is everybody happy? Healthy? Anybody need prayer for your health? God's Word says, "Is there any sick among you? Let him call for the elders of the Church & let them pray over him."—Jam.5:14. It's a sign of your faith, a manifestation

of your faith, a testimony of your faith. That's why the Lord seems to require your asking for prayer. You can pray for yourself, or you can get some person just to pray for you privately if you don't want everybody to know you're sick, but then there won't be as great a testimony, either, when the Lord answers prayer & you're healed.

2. So the Lord seems to always require that you call for help, ask for prayer, call for the elders of the Church! In this case we're usually here at dinner at night, so you can call for the whole Church & ask for prayer! It's important that you make your requests known, not only to the Lord but to the rest of the Body in order that it may be a greater testimony to others as well when the Lord answers. To ask for prayer is not only a manifestation of your faith, but also of your need, & it's a confession of your dependence on the Lord. He says that you're to ask & you'll receive.—Mat.7:7.

3. The Lord knows your needs before you call, so why doesn't He just go ahead & supply them without your having to ask? He wants you to confess your dependence on Him & He wants you to manifest your faith in Him. He likes for you to ask publicly for prayer so that everybody can join with you in prayer, & everyone then will be manifesting or confessing their dependence upon Him & manifesting their faith along with yours, so that when He answers, it will be a general testimony to all of you that the Lord is the One Who heard you & answered your prayer! Amen? PTL!—Ask!

---

## **HOW TO SURVIVE IN A CLOSED COUNTRY!**

DO 1764 11/80

1. The Jews have learned to get along & survive in the World under all kinds of conditions under all kinds of regimes & people & they're still around. Whereas the Armenians nearly got wiped out, including a lot of other people. There was a religious movie that came out called "The Seventh Question", did you ever hear about it?—About being "red like a radish"! How red is a radish? (Family: Only on the outside!)

2. A lot of the martyrs to Communism, Christian martyrs,



died & suffered unnecessarily because they insisted on going to church! They insisted on repairing the church building when it was against the law. They insisted on getting their babies baptised when it was against the law. These are all things they could have practiced in their homes & forgotten about the church, but they insisted on going to church on Sunday when they were supposed to be at work in the factory & take Friday or Saturday or some other day off.

3. But you see, churchianity was their religion, not necessarily just Jesus Christ & just by faith. When your religion is based on church works, then your whole faith is based on the churches. And if you can't go to church & perform church services & church practices & keep the church building up & go to church on Sunday, then where's your religion?

4. Those poor dear deluded church people, they went ahead & went to church & baptised & did all the things they weren't supposed to do, so they got martyred or thrown in jail or out of jobs & all kinds of other things when they could have been just as good, if not better Christians at home & on the job & at school by complying with the rules & obeying the laws & doing what they were told to do as long as they didn't have to deny their faith! In fact, it seldom ever got to the point where the Communists said, "You must deny Christ or your faith in Christ or off with your head!"

5. Look what a much better job & a better witness they would have been if they would have been good Communists, shining examples of the good kind of Communist a Christian can be, up to the point of doing everything & obeying everything except denying their faith in Christ! See?

6. Many Christians have perished or been persecuted unnecessarily, even some of our own people! We've had people going into closed countries doing the most stupid things, passing out the most stupid kind of literature, passing out "Allende" in Chile under the government that killed him! Can you imagine anything so ridiculous? No wonder they got thrown in jail & kicked out of the country! So for God's sake, use your head! Don't be stupid idiots & go out of your way to be obnoxious & objectionable & unbearable to where the authorities have got to do something & get rid of you!

7. Jesus & Paul taught just the opposite! You were to obey the government, obey them that have rule over you, obey the magistrates, obey the police officer, "agree with your adversary whilst thou art in the way with him".—Rom.13:1-7; Mat.5:25. As long as it doesn't compromise your faith in Christ & His Love & His grace & your own salvation, as long as you don't have to actually deny Jesus Christ as your Saviour, there's no reason why you shouldn't be able to get along with most governments of the World!—Except for your witnessing, & that's, of course, where the crunch comes.

8. That's what we did when we lived in the extremely closed country of Franco Spain, we obeyed the rules & we used a lot of wisdom, but we couldn't stop being Christians, & didn't! The Franco government had nothing against Christ, in fact it was supposed to be very Christian, & had nothing against the Bible, they were supposed to believe the Bible, so we talked to people about God, we talked to them about Jesus, we talked to them about the Bible. How could we go wrong? We certainly didn't attack the Catholic Church & we avoided every way we could attacking the government. In fact, we praised the government for its many good points.

9. Now that's the way to do it if you want to go in & witness in a closed country. You may not stay there forever, you may eventually have to go, but for God's sake, leave a lot of friends behind & lots of believers & lots of converts who are carrying on after you're gone!

10. We didn't attack the church, we didn't attack the

government, we didn't attack the police, we didn't even particularly attack their religious mores or anything else, we were simply going down to the Clubs & dancing every night & talking about Jesus!

11. Even all these guys that were sent to investigate us & came to our home & stayed overnight, Guardia Civil—supposed to be the ultra of the ultra, like the SS troops of Franco, the most loyal & the most unapproachable & incorruptible of all the Francoites—they became our best friends! They took back nothing but good reports to their commanders.

12. All the Guardia Civil were concerned about was that we weren't attacking the church & the government, so they just went back & said, "They're nice people! He praises Franco, he praises the government, he thinks Spain's a great Christian country, wonderful, more Christian than the rest of the World!"—And I'd say it was!

13. So we're learning how to try not to offend, & how to live with it, to try to love our neighbours & even try to love our enemies & to try to get along with them & try not to offend them. So there are ways of getting along with people & along with governments & even along with opposing religions if you learn to be "wise as serpents & harmless as doves", knowing you're "sheep amongst the wolves."—Mat.10:16. There are ways to do it. And the smartest way is to try to not get in any trouble!

14. (Amen!—Make friends of the influential & powerful!—Don't antagonise them!—And above all, steer clear of the religions & religious strongholds & religious authorities!—That's who gave Jesus the most trouble!—And He tried to avoid'm!—For 3-1/2 years!—Till finally they couldn't ignore Him & His job was done & they killed Him!—But His native disciples carried on!—Until it got so hot most of them fled!—Into all the World to preach the Gospel to all!—Amen?—That's when your job'll be done! Try to survive until then, by going underground or fleeing, OK?—Tx! GBAKY till then!—In Jesus name, amen!)

## STRANGERS & PILGRIMS!

—The Advantages of Change!—Heb. 11

DO 1766 8/78



1. There's one thing about this Chapter that is very dear to me & that touches my heart more than anything in this whole Chapter, because ever since I was a little kid I knew what they were talking about when they talked about this. I was telling Maria the other day, we have moved around so much with Little David, from place to place, a few months here & a few months there, maybe longer in some places, but that's been the exception.

2. These child psychologists tell you, "Oh, when a child is young, he must have a permanent home! He must grow up in the same surroundings or he'll get feelings of insecurity & it might cause psychological damage, blah blah!" Well, if that's the case, then I'm damaged irreparably psychologically & forever, & maybe that's what's wrong with me!—Ha!—Because if anybody ever moved a lot when I was little, it was my family!

3. We moved around a lot & I don't think it hurt me any! I think I've often said, & maybe I've told you in the Letters, that I know one thing it did for me, it taught me that everything in this World is transitory, changeable. We used to say on the "Revolutionary Sheet" when we were first getting new disciples in Texas: "There's one thing you can be sure of in the Revolution—change!" (See No.S.)

4. So there was one thing in my little life when I was a kid that I knew always happened, & I was accustomed to change. I think maybe that was good for me because I got used to it & accustomed to it & I adjusted readily to new situations. Maybe that's

one reason I'm not afraid to try to change things, & if you're going to have a revolution you've got to be willing to change things! I think that's the trouble with the System, they've been so stuck in the same old rut so long that they're afraid to change.

**5. But people who are accustomed to changing & adapting to new situations & new places etc. are not afraid to change!** They're not afraid to try to change the World if they can, which we're trying to do! PTL? We started out changing from place to place & now we're trying to change the World!

**6. But there was one thing which that constant change did for me, it taught me that no place was ever permanent!** I would never be in the same house always, I would never be with the same people always, I would never even be able to keep the same toys always, I was always having to leave things behind, & I would always be going someplace new, meeting new people, staying new places & maybe finding new toys.

**7. And there was one thing besides that which it taught me to be sure of:** There was only one thing I could always take with me that never changed. You know what that was?—The Lord! It taught me that the Lord was always the same & He always went with me wherever I went. I really believed that the only thing in our lives that didn't change was the Lord!

**8. So I'll tell you, it really helps you stay close to the Lord when you never know what the future holds!**—And who does? You don't, I don't, only the Lord knows. Sometimes He tells us, sometimes He doesn't. I used to sing a song about the future, that sometimes maybe the Lord throws a veil over the future & it's best for us not to know. The things we need to know He tells us, sometimes the things we want to know He tells us, but most of the time He leaves the future known only to Him.

**9. But I believe it really helped me to learn to love the Lord more, trust Him more, think of Him more & stay closer to Him, because He was the only thing that didn't change.** I was always with different ones, but the Lord never changed. So He was very close & dear & I think it really helped me learn to love Him more & trust Him more & appreciate Him more, because He was all in my life that didn't really change.

**10. So praise the Lord, you have the most precious possession that you could possibly have, & that's the Lord, that's Jesus, & that's one possession you'll never have to give up, never have to forsake, never have to leave behind, never have to give away & lose.** You can give Him away as much as you want but never get rid of Him. You'll always have Him, thank the Lord, & He'll always be near, He'll never leave nor forsake you even to the end of the World!—Mat.28:20. PTL?

**11. And there's something in here that is amazing, & that's all I'm going to read to you right now, because this to me is the most important part of this whole passage, maybe because it applies to me more, I experienced it more & therefore I understand it more.** Verse 8:

**12. "By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed."** He was being given the title deed to it, God was promising it to him, right? But he'd never even seen it, never been there, maybe he'd hardly even heard about it for all we know. "And he went out, not knowing whither he went." How many times in the Family have you been sent out, sometimes not knowing where you were going? Well, you'll learn that fast in our Family.

**13. "By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles"—tents—"with Isaac & Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise."** Now mind you, by faith he went there, & when he got there in this strange land amongst strangers, how was he able to stand it? Well, one of the nice things about being a pilgrim & stranger, if you land someplace you don't like, you can always be sure that you're not going to have to stay there forever! So you just learn to put up with it at least for awhile, because you know you don't have to live there forever. That's one nice thing about change.

**14. "These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, & were persuaded of them & embraced them."** (vs. 13)—And what were the promises? How come they all died & never got these promises? What were they really looking for?—A Heavenly City whose Builder & Maker is God, a permanent home! "This World is not

my home, I'm just a-passing through. My treasures are laid up somewhere beyond the blue!" PTL! This World is not our home, so we don't have to worry about whether it's good or bad. The better it is, the harder it is to leave it. The badder it is, the easier it is to leave it!

15. **That's one thing about our life in the Family, we're always pilgrims & strangers**, because the Lord said to "go into all the World & preach the Gospel to every creature!"—Mk.16:15. You can't do that & settle down & be permanent. If you're going to keep going, you've got to keep going until everybody's heard, or every country's heard. Verse 14:

16. **"For they that say such things declare plainly that they seek a country."**—What country? I went looking for a long time for some country where I could settle down, where at least they'd let me stay, & I haven't been able to find one! But they weren't satisfied, they wanted something better! Why?: "They desire a better country, that is an heavenly!" What's their reward? They are not satisfied with this World, they're not satisfied just to always stay in one place, they are willing to keep on moving to obey God & serve the Lord, so what does God have to say about them?

17. **"Wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God!"** You know what that means, don't you? What it really means is God was proud of them! If you're willing to forsake all—home, family, friends, your home country & go to strange lands with strange tongues, strange people, preach the Gospel, always be on the go, always on the move, God is proud of you! You've given up a lot for the Lord & He's not ashamed to be called your God. He's proud of you! PTL?

18. **That's almost the best thing the Lord could ever say about you**, because you're willing to travel & give up & go, forsake all & go on & on, never satisfied here! Well, we "learn to be content in whatever state we're in" (Phi.4:11), but on the other hand, we're always looking for a country whose Builder & Maker is God!

19. **"For He hath prepared for them a City!"** Hallelujah! He's got a City for you & me where we're not going to have any

passport nor visa problems, it's our town, our Hometown in Heaven, praise God? And they're all going to be our people! PTL? We're just going to be one nationality of one nation, which we already are here! We're already a nation, we're already one nationality, we're already one Family, we just haven't found the place yet, we haven't gotten there yet! PTL! (Prays:)

20. **Amen, Lord, help us all to have that pilgrim attitude, & not be afraid to change!** When the time comes to move, to move! We've often said, Lord, that moving is like dying, you leave the old life behind, the old shell, the old house, old associations, you can't take much with you. We even take more with us when we move sometimes, more junk, Lord, than certainly we'll ever be able to take out of this life, but it's a type of dying. However, Lord, we can begin a new life!

21. **Thank You, Lord, for the life in the Family that teaches us this lesson constantly!** Though we have to leave one life behind, the things of that life, we do find a new life & new friends & new people & a new place to preach the Gospel that takes the place of what we've had to leave behind. So, Lord, we're never totally desolate or destitute, You always fill us up again with something, usually better than we left behind.

22. **It's been my experience throughout my life that nearly everything I gave up, if we even gave up houses & lands, Lord, You gave us in this life a hundred-fold, a hundred times more!** So, Lord, You're good to us, & even though we give up some things, You usually give us something even better in some way & we've never had to really suffer too much by it. Once in awhile it's been a little hard, once in awhile there's a little hardship, once in awhile it's a little trial, Lord, but usually when we come through, things are better than they were before. TYL! Although there are greater battles, there is also the enjoyment of greater victories in the end when the battle is over. So we thank You for it all!

23. **What's the best thing after a battle is over?—Peace!** Amen? The best thing after a battle not only is a victory, but peace! Lord bless you all! Thanks so much! —ILY!—Don't be afraid of change!—It's good for you! (Psa.55:19)

## RE: BEING HONEST WITH AUTHORITIES!

DO 1785 6/84

**1. I think the only time that denying outright & absolutely that you are a Family Member might be necessary & applicable would be when you're pretty sure the people questioning you don't know, & that it would actually do any good. But when there is a major investigation & they know, they already have your names & they know who you are & they've already got pictures & the proof & evidence & everything, to deny up & down that you're a Family Member sounds kind of ridiculous when they know you are! I don't think it's a very good testimony.**

**2. I don't know, I just don't have a good feeling about it that they'd just lie like that when the Police already knew who they were. (Maria: Like you said, if they catch you in one lie, then they are very suspicious of anything else you say & they don't know what to believe, whether all the accusations are true or false, they don't know.)**

**3. There is nothing the Police hate like lying! They can spot it almost any time! And a lot of times they just ask you questions deliberately when they already know the answer, just to see if you'll lie about it! That's one of the tests the Police give, to ask you questions to which they already know the answers just to see if you'll lie! And if you do, then they don't trust you for anything!—Not that it would have done them any good there, but I think it might have been a better testimony.**

**4. (Maria: I read about some Christians going in through delicate borders who just determined beforehand that they'd never lie & that the Lord would just have to protect them, you know. They sort of made an agreement with Him that they'd just always be truthful & that He would have to protect them in some way, & He always did.) That's what we've done, really, because I just don't like lying & I don't think the Lord does either!**

**5. I think there are unusual extenuating circumstances, rare occasions, & it even happened in the Bible (See 2Sam. 17:17-20), where you might be almost forced to not tell the truth to save your life or somebody else's, but I certainly don't think**

you should ever lie unless it is absolutely necessary! I really think if there is any chance at all that the Police already know, I think they'd really rather hear you tell the truth. I think they'd even admire you for it!

**6. (Maria: And then you'd have a good chance to stick up for your beliefs & give your side of the story & give the positive side of the message & dispel a lot of the lies!) Exactly! Then you could be a good witness. If you tell the truth about that, then they'll believe you're telling the truth about other things.**

**7. But it really hurts me to hear that people lie & swear up & down that they're not one of us, when they are & when the Police probably know they are! (Maria: I wonder if they could have gotten that impression from what we did in Malta?) Yes, but look how much good it did us there—none at all! They just kept after us all the more because I think they knew we were lying! (Maria: Well, I'm afraid we might have given the impression that that was the correct thing to do, because we made it very clear in those Letters that that's what we did & that's probably what they should do too in a similar situation. And like you say, it didn't do much good.) They still took Alf to jail anyway! They still searched the house anyhow, & they still gave us notice to leave the country anyway! So obviously they didn't believe us anyhow.—So what good did it do? I think it was a bad testimony!**

---

## WHY REBUKES BEFORE ALL?

—So Others May Fear!—1Tim.5:20.

DO 1795 9/74

Maria No.7

**(A good lesson to all from Maria on why it's so good to be exposed for our mistakes so all can benefit! Written 9/74 to the Royal Family, but still true today as seen in recent Letters about problem cases & prodigals!)**

**1. This is just a small little note by just little ol' me, but I think you'd better sit up & take notice. In the past few days, work on editing & getting the Worldwide Family Letters to the kids has all but stopped. Why? Because of a few well-meaning,**

I'm sure, but not well-thought-out or prayed-out criticisms & objections to a few harmless statements made in one of these Letters.

**2. I'm sure you just do not realise the seriousness of delaying, objecting to or criticising the Words of God's Prophet,** even those which do not come in a direct revelatory night-time, right straight-out-of-the-sky prophecy. As a result of being more concerned with yourselves & your own interests, you have completely discouraged God's Prophet from giving out any of the Words that are desperately needed, & you are hindering God's Work from going forward & making the progress God wants it to make.

**3. We have all been guilty of this at some time or another, myself included,** & perhaps I know better than any of you the horrible results of letting the Devil use any of us to discourage David. You who have lived with him for so long should surely realise this by now & should try your very best to only encourage & uplift him, & only in cases of extreme urgency or life-or-death matters & only after much prayer, write or say or do anything that would enable you to be a tool of the Opposition. There is a very delicate balance, & one little word can tip the scales either for or against, either to encouragement or to discouragement.

**4. You should not take advantage of the great love you know he has for you,** & how he'll do almost anything to protect you & comfort you & do what you request—you should not use this to protect your own interests to the loss of saving others & supplying their needs.

**5. None of us likes to be exposed to those under us,** & that is exactly what some Letters will do & are doing. But if our exposure will further the Work of God & save His Kingdom & encourage others, can we not make that sacrifice?

**6. None of us are perfect & we all make mistakes & we all need to be exposed for our own sakes & so that others may be helped thereby.** I'm no saint either, as you all know, & my sins have had to be made manifest to the World, things which I know now have been a much greater help to others than they have been a small embarrassment to me.

**7. I become very grieved sometimes when I see the m  
Letters going out to you leaders,** because I know that many of these lessons given to you & the many hours spent on reading & answering your mail will go no further than yourselves, which I suppose is natural, seeing there are only a handful of you.

**8. But when I think of what the results could be if thousands of kids all over the World were taught the same lessons and given the same tender loving care as you are,** it astounds me, and I know the results would be fantastic if others had the same opportunity as you and I to sit at the Prophet's feet & learn the ways of the Lord! (You now do, PTL!—Thanks to Maria! GBH!—D.)

**9. So when we are reluctant to let these lessons be passed on & when we are responsible for withholding the Words from the World, just because of our fear of being exposed, it's going to bear bad fruit somewhere along the line!** God's Prophet becomes discouraged, I become very angry sometimes, God's little sheep become leaderless, & though He gives you (or me, as the case may be) the desires of our hearts, He sends leanings to our souls (Psa.106:15), because we have not shared the lessons He has taught us through our problems & trials, the very reason why He lets us go through these, so others could be warned & avoid the same pitfalls & so we could comfort others with the comfort with which we are comforted.

**10. I think we all need to realise that one of the reasons we have so many failings & make so many mistakes is so we can be dandy bad examples of what not to do, & others can learn from us.** An example is something or someone who is held up before others so they can see it, not hid in the dark free from exposure.

**11. I think one of the most inspiring things Faith ever had printed was her confession to the kids at Bromley of how she & the other shepherds there had failed them.** It was one of the most encouraging & inspiring examples of a good shepherdess, who, even though she had made mistakes, she was willing to confess them & humbly ask for their forgiveness, & show them by so doing how they were to be with their sheep. I think I loved her

more for that letter than any of her others.

12. David said today, "I thought some of these people ought to get a little credit & let the World know what they're doing & how they're doing. If they're so damned afraid of specifics, I'm just going to cross out all the specifics & all the names. By the time we boil this all down, I don't even know if it'll be worth reading or sending, much less printing!"

13. Since when did the Prophets ask their families what they should give to the people & since when did the Prophets have the total loyal faithful backing of their families one-hundred percent all of the time, & since when have they always had the whole-hearted cooperation of their flesh families in all that the Lord has given them to do & say? Usually when I get angry I don't say much because I try to go along with David in being sweet & nice & gentle & kind to all of you.

14. I don't know that the Prophets are supposed to hand their families copies for approval of what they intend to say to the people, but when & if they do, then the responsibility on the part of the family is to back & encourage & have enough faith to know that it is "Thus saith the Lord", & that He knows better than they do, & that even if they don't like it, it is their responsibility to know that all things work together for good to them that love the Lord, & be thankful & rejoice in all things, no matter how hard they are to take, & cheerfully give to the Lord & to others, for "the Lord loveth a cheerful giver".—2Cor.9:7.

15. I know that when the Devil fights something this hard, as he is doing in getting these Letters to the Family, then they must be pretty important & pretty necessary to the Work of the Lord, & that they are really needed. So I hope that you'll all pray earnestly that the Lord will overrule & that His Words will not be withheld & that none of us will ever do anything again to stop up the bottle of God's life-giving water, whether intentionally or unintentionally!

16. I love you all, & I hope you'll forgive me if I've gotten too angry or sound too harsh, because I've been guilty of the same as well. Please understand that I do love you & really need you, but I love the Lord's Words more & want to do all I can to see that the flow continues.

## THE LOVE OF CHRIST!

DO 1806 7/84

—For His Girls, Faith & Magdalene—Lessons on Teamwork.

1. We should encourage Magdalene that she could be a real strong personality, a real strong warrior, a real strong leader without trying to be a man. She can be a strong Amazon or a Brunheld or a Joan of Arc, a real female warrior but still a female. It's just that imitation of a man that the Lord hates.—Almost like a usurpation of His authority! Faithy & Magdalene might work well together, that was my dream since they first came. They've really learned. It's been a hard road but they've really learned to get along. She's got a lot of the practical common sense about travel & knowledge of the countries that Faith needs, but Faith has really got the inspiration, & real knowledge of the Word & the Lord that Magdalene needs.

2. Magdalene has been so humbled by this & so put down that she couldn't go out on her own anyway, she'd have to have encouragement, & that would encourage her & encourage the people to have confidence in her, that we have enough faith in her that we send Faith with her to show that we still believe in her & trust her & have confidence in her. Faith can help sort of hold her up & lift her up on that score while she sort of holds Faith up on the practical side.

3. Magdalene would hardly dare try to push ahead. She won't dare to push ahead of Faith. She'll act more like Faith's assistant, sort of what I always said Faith needed. She always needed someone who could sort of take care of her on the practical side & supplement her ministry. I think Magdalene has all of that—the strength & the knowledge & the drive, but I think in this case she will let Faith lead in these situations.

4. Faith needs to let people lead in the practical things who have better sense than she has on practical things, in travel & things like that. I still think they might make a good team. (Maria: Well, I thought maybe we could see by sending them just on a trial run to somewhere where they're needed right now.) Yes, & also to get the reaction of the people. (Maria: Then they could come back & give a first-hand report & we could see how

they did.) Tell the leaders there to give us an honest report of what they feel is the effect on the people, if they were a blessing & an inspiration & an encouragement & the help I think they will be.

5. **I really believe the Lord has worked on both of them & they'll really be good together.** (Maria: The nice thing about it is they both have had the same problems, in a way. They both go through, & have gone through, the same battles, have had the same problems & they know each other real well & could help & strengthen each other.)

6. **The Family can't just brush away & forget all Magdalene's years of faithful sacrificial service for them.** She really spent years in their service & helping them & I'm sure they love her. I think they were sort of almost aghast at her humbling when we took her down, but I think it was the very thing she needed to knock that manliness out of her. It was sort of a self-confidence of the flesh rather than of the Spirit, you know, sort of an overbearing aggressiveness & strength of the flesh rather than of the Spirit. I believe she has the Spirit & I believe she has had an anointing or she could never have accomplished as much as she did. She had a lot of faith & was really led of the Lord & really inspired the people & really sparked them & got them going. I don't know how good an organiser she is, but if anything she's probably better on that than Faith.—We'll see!

7. (Maria: They really need each other, too, not only to keep each other humble but to encourage each other.) Yes, for company & companionship. Do they seem to get along pretty good? (Maria: It was a rough start since they're so different, but over the months they've gotten to understand each other now. They discuss everything together & they help each other with their battles.)

8. **It reminds me of the early days, a policy we used to have with people who had personality clashes & couldn't stand each other.** We used to make them work together, sleep together, live together & eat together until they finally just learned to get along with each other. (Maria: Yes, it's been sort of a hard road but they're making it, God bless them!) Praise the Lord!

9. **I think the people will recognise that they both received the humbling & the training that they needed,** & I think the fact that we send them out officially together will help inspire confidence in them now, maybe even more than before. Before people just sort of held them in an awesome fear with fear & trembling at their superior authority, whereas now I think there'll be more real genuine love & appreciation & understanding even of their faults, but to love them perhaps even more. "Upon our most uncomely parts we do bestow the greater care."—1Cor.12:23. And they'll go out as a shining example of what the Lord can do even with the broken & humbled & the unlovely in a way, you know?

10. (Maria: **And we'll have to caution the people to be respectful**, just like you did after you put down the Royal Family & some people started being really cruel & disrespectful! That's a tendency with some people which you really have to get on their case about.) That's a tendency with the unspiritual who merely feared them because of their authority & didn't really love them in the Spirit. I think the truly spiritual will now genuinely respect them & appreciate them & love them & follow them. There may be a few rebels, who perhaps before even resented their authority but were afraid of them, that might choose this as an excuse to be defiant or insolent, like they did to even some of the good leaders of the Chain after the RNR.

11. **But His sheep know His voice & they'll follow Him,** & I'm sure they'll follow them if we send them out with my appointment & anointing & authority as our official representatives. I think the people should be notified of that in advance (Here 'tis!), let them know that we have confidence in them now & that we have been pleased with their humbling & retraining & their actual improvement, & that's why we're sending them out to genuinely represent us now, which we're not too sure that they always did before.—To genuinely represent the Lord too in the way we think they ought to represent Him, not in their own strength or in the power of their own might & their own ideas of what the Family should be like, but what the Lord has shown us & what we believe the Family should be like.

**12. I think it could amount to a real powerful team, to supplement each other's gifts & strengthen each other's weaknesses & help lift each other & encourage each other. Let them know they're going with our full backing & encouragement & all the help we can give them. They'll have sort of a tentative itinerary, you know, of the places where we think they should visit & encourage & all the things they need to straighten out, & maybe the people they need to straighten out, but can leave it open for variation according to the leading of the Spirit, because they'll be on the scene & can be directly led of the Lord as to the actual needs.**

**13. (Maria: And the great thing about it is that neither one of them want to do it. They're scared to death! They never want to be big leaders again, so that's the best attitude they could have.) Absolutely! Absolutely! Boy, I'll tell you, I never really wanted to be a leader! But I guess the Lord had that spark there that He wanted to fan to flame, because that's what He did. So praise the Lord!**

**14. Lord bless them now & strengthen them in the power of Thy might, Lord, not their own flesh.**—Not in their own wisdom but Thy wisdom, not their own self-confidence, Lord, but confidence in Thee. Bless them, Lord, & keep them humble, close to You, Jesus, totally dependent on Thee & Thy Spirit. Jesus, Lord, do bless & help them! Make them what You want them to be, to be a blessing to Thy people, Thy Kingdom, an encouragement, good leadership, leading them the right way & teaching them in the right way, Lord. Prepare them for the Future! In Jesus' name! Thank You Lord! Praise the Lord!

**15. So, praise the Lord! That should encourage the people to see that we still love people & have hope for former leadership, that we haven't completely thrown them over & abandoned them & discarded them on the scrap heap, that we still are trying to use them & train them, & God is still trying to reclaim them & sort of rehabilitate them & help them to fly higher than ever through the humbling.**

**16. (Maria: That's a big revelation for our kids, that God has that much love & mercy on people! Even after the RNR**

many completely put down their old leaders & still have a hard time working under leadership. For example, one couple we recently had to rebuke publicly & demote but still kept on in a WS position, but their staff has completely lost all respect for them.) It's disrespect for us if they don't show respect to those whom we have retained in positions, to at least respect them for our respect & the position we've left them in. It's a kind of all-or-nothing-at-all attitude, they either worship them or hate them, so they need to learn a little mercy & forgiveness & tolerance & love. (Maria: Like you & the Lord have.)

**17. "Oh, wretched man that I am!"**—Rom.7:24. But the Lord still loves me & uses me, so I figure He must still love me. (Maria: Amen, Honey! You certainly figure right!) I think that's the attitude they should take with these leaders whom we've put down & humbled & demoted & then promoted again. They need to learn to be forgiving & tolerant & loving & respectful, if not for their sakes, for our sakes. Praise the Lord? Amen.

**18. As they used to teach us in the Army, they said, "It doesn't matter what you think of the man, respect him for his position, his authority.** If you don't like the guy, at least salute the uniform & his office & the officer, the fact that the Army has entrusted him with such a position." In other words, it's like you're saluting the Army, not just the individual personality. Some of those guys in the Army we despised, they were despicable! But we had to salute them for their authority's sake & for the position they held, thus showing the confidence of the Army in them in spite of their personality flaws etc.

**19. So I think the Family needs to learn to respect appointed leaders that we have designated!** They need to learn to love & respect & tolerate & forgive them for our sakes if nothing else! (Maria: Faith & Magdalene's testimonies & their repents have gone before them & all the lessons they've learned have been pubbed.)

**20. Amen! GB'M! I love'm!—And I'm expecting great things of them & the Lord & the people!** Please help'm all you can. They're there to help you! Let the Love of Christ constrain us all!—2Cor.5:14.—In Jesus' name, amen!—"For the greatest

of these is Love!"—1Cor.13:13.—Do you have Love?

(Editor: Dear Family, please remember that all prophecy is conditional on our yieldedness & obedience. GBY!)

## HAVE MERCY!

DO 1818 8/84

—Letter to the NROs from Peter, Dad & Maria!

—We Thought You All Needed to Hear This, Amen?



**1. You, as NOs, are most likely using quite a bit of paper power, writing letters to your sheep, answering their questions & their reports as well as trying to encourage them. We believe that you are also probably writing quite a bit to the other local leadership, NASs, GASs, DASs etc., & in many cases some of you have sent us copies of such correspondence. Overall, from what we have seen, you are generally doing good in your letter writing, GBY! Dad recently gave a talk regarding writing things to the Family. The whole point of Dad's talk was: "Without Love, It's Nothing!" (No. 1819)**

**2. We know that oftentimes it is necessary for you as Shepherds to write to people regarding various problems & areas in which they've disobeyed & been causing problems in the Home or in their area etc. These often are very unpleasant & difficult letters to write, but they need to be written. However, the one cardinal rule when writing such letters is "To do unto others as you would have them do unto you."—Mat.7:12. When you have to write such letters, we ask that you please do so in love & that you try to make it as easy on the person as possible by giving them as much benefit of the doubt as possible. They look**

to you as their Shepherds & your letters to them can have really great effects, either for the good or for the bad. If you write someone & really put them down & make them feel bad, they may not be able to overcome it, they may read your letter over & over again & continually be discouraged by it. Whereas on the other hand, if you do have to rebuke them, & you do so in love & understanding & compassion, they will feel it from your letter & that will inspire them to do good & to try harder & to do better. They will reread that letter over & over again & it will continue to inspire & help them.

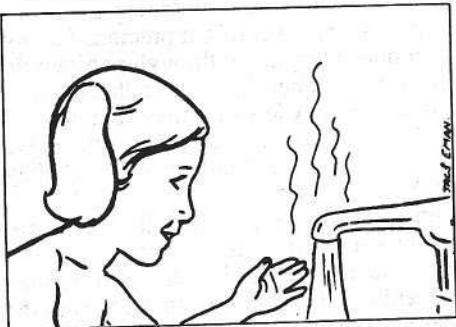
**3. Please write others & take care of your sheep in love with a true Shepherd's heart, having mercy & compassion on them. Remember, each one is a member of our precious Family even if they're causing problems or going through particularly hard times at this moment. Remember, the Lord called them & chose them & they forsook all & they joined & they're following Jesus just like you are. They love the Lord & they love the Folks & they love the Letters & they love the Word, even though they may have fallen on particularly hard times at the moment. They may just need your counsel & your help & your love. You are their local Shepherds & you need to love them & tenderly gather them in & care for them, which above all is your main responsibility as a NO, to shepherd the sheep, to love them, to care for them, to encourage them & to inspire them. As Dad has said, all of the other is nothing if you don't have love! So above all we ask that you please love your sheep, shepherd them in love, write to them in love, lead them in love & they will in turn accomplish more for the Lord, out of love!**

**4. We truly love you & are so thankful for your willingness to bear the burden & the responsibility of the flock in your area. We know that leadership is a difficult job & one which is often in many ways quite thankless, but please know that the Folks are very thankful for you & they greatly appreciate the time & effort & trouble you put into shepherding the sheep. They know it's a big job to have to make all kinds of important decisions & to give counsel & to try to efficiently & effectively operate your area, especially with so many ministries under your**

jurisdiction. It's a huge job, but one in which you are doing so well—thanks to the Lord & thanks to you! Dad & Maria truly love you & are so thankful for you & don't know how we could do without you! We are praying that the Lord will give you great wisdom & love as Shepherds of His flock, & we believe He is because you've been so faithfully taking care of His lambs! MGBACTMYAB!

## **WATCH & PRAY!**

—A Safety Lesson!



so hot that it hurt her & caused her to cry! I don't believe in having hot water that hot! Hot water is dangerous business! For God's sake, I don't see why you need hot water around here unless upon occasion you might need to boil water for drinking. (Heater should be set to 50°C., which is about 120°F.)

2. Well obviously, if you can't be trusted with it, we can't let you use it!—Because you have children & babies who could accidentally turn it on. Lots of babies have been scalded, badly burned & even burned to death that way in tubs where they turned the water on & didn't know how to turn it off! I know one case where there were two little girls in the tub, & when the mother ran off to the telephone, they turned on the scalding hot water & they both burned to death in the tub!

DO 1848 6/84

1. If water is hot enough to hurt somebody, if not actually burn them, then it is too hot! You don't have to have hot water. Techi just almost got burned by sticking her hand under that hot water! So it must be a helluva hot to be

3. Well, thank the Lord Techi wasn't badly burned, because I certainly would have held you folks responsible!—And I'm very upset to think that you created a situation where it could have happened & would have happened if she hadn't jerked her hand out real quick! Thank God for that! What if you'd had her stepping into the tub of hot water like that or something & she'd have slipped & fallen before she realised it?

4. There's no point in anybody having water that hot! How come you guys haven't checked that? I want you fellows to check that hot water temperature & make sure it doesn't get any higher down there, period! Is that clear?—Not a degree above 50°! Tape it down tight & make it impossible to screw that handle, & I don't ever want to hear about you having water that hot again!

5. Thank You, Lord, that something worse didn't happen! We ask Thee to deal with these people, Lord, to help them see how serious it could have been & how responsible they were & how careless they were, & to realise what a precious, priceless responsibility it is to take care of these children, that they are responsible for their safety & their health as well as their minds & their spirits, that they take good care of their bodies & guard them & watch them to make sure that nothing like this happens to them, & to not be careless about it, in Jesus' name. Lord, bless & keep & protect! Thank You for how You have, & that more accidents like this have not happened.—TYJ!

6. I think some of you have a tendency to get in a hurry & act hastily, a little impatient & rushed. Haste makes waste! Speed kills!—And I certainly don't want any worse accidents happening from people being impatient or hasty or being in a hurry or not checking carefully to make sure it's safe.

7. You can ask John, he works with me a lot, & I'm extremely cautious about safety! Is that right? (John: Amen, that's right!) I try to make doubly sure that accidents don't happen. I insist that they wear shoes when they're going to be working around electricity & try to keep their feet dry. I insist they wear glasses when they're working where things might fall in their eyes. I insist they work two-by-two. What about it, John? You tell'm! (John: That's right, you are always going the extra step, especial-

ly taking a lot of time, not going to another project without making sure nothing's left out that somebody could hurt themselves on.) As well as a lot of prayer, right? We always pray.

**8. When you have children to take care of you've got to be extra careful & watch'm, & you have to make it impossible for accidents to happen!** How many times a day do I say that, John? (John: You say it every time I see you.) Whenever I see any dangerous situation where one little mismove or something wrong could happen, I caution them about it: "You'd better move that or somebody might stumble over it. You'd better fix that or somebody might bump into it." Because as I've so often said, accidents don't just happen, they are caused.—Almost invariably by somebody's carelessness, prayerlessness & lack of being safety-conscious.

**9. So you guys had better be extra prayerful & extra careful, extremely cautious about safety & just make sure that conditions are so that things can't be knocked over or tripped over.** Just try to keep accidents from being possible to happen, make sure they can't happen! You can't always be sure, but you can certainly eliminate dangerous conditions of things sitting around where they shouldn't be etc.

**10. You need to realise that we are dependent on prayer & on the Lord, & to have gotten along as well as we have with so few accidents, hardly even any minor accidents, no serious diseases, God has been extra good to us!** But if you're going to start getting careless & prayerless & not really thinking about what you're doing in taking care of these children, you could really get in serious trouble & have something happen you'd be awful sorry for! I'm sure after all the years you've spent taking care of these children & giving them so much hard work & care, you certainly don't want that to happen! So it's up to you parents to really take care of your children & really guard them & make sure that nothing happens to them, & certainly nothing that's going to be your fault & which you'll be sorry for!

**11. And you girls especially who get in the tub with the children, or any of you who do when they're taking baths, you sit at the faucet end with your back to the faucet & make sure you know what's going on.** That should be the practice in any place

you ever bathe children where you're in the tub with them. You should never bathe them in the bathroom in the first place unless you're with'm!

**12. I gave you guys a lecture once-upon-a-time on what was the most dangerous room in the house, the kitchen, but I don't think I ever did get around to giving you a lecture on the second most dangerous room, & that's the bathroom!** Outside of the kitchen, most home accidents occur in the bathroom. And do you know what is the most common bathroom accident? (Alf: Slipping.) Yes, slipping while getting in or out of the tub or on a wet floor, falling & breaking bones or cracking heads & getting some kind of injury!

**13. I've heard of so many people having falls in & out of tubs that I have learned to respect a tub, to where I wouldn't let go of anything getting in or out of a tub or hardly even sitting up in the tub!** Especially when I went to stand up to get out, or the same thing getting in, I would hold on to the side of that tub, & some of them have a little handle on the wall where you can hold on even on the inside of the tub. Don't try the towel racks, they won't hold you! The safest thing you really know is going to support you & hold you is the side of the tub, so hang on to that!

**14. Teach the children how to get in & out of the tub,** that they walk up to the tub & take ahold of that edge with their hands first, & then they put a leg over into the tub. Then they should keep hanging on to it until they get the other foot in the tub & they keep hanging onto it till they sit down. You guys have got to teach these kids safety!—And that they don't get in the tub at all without an adult present to regulate the water, to make sure the water is right. Is that clear? (Fam: Yes, Sir!)

**15. I'm hesitant to ever leave a child alone in a bathroom at all, even as old as Techi is.** (Five years old.) They could make a mistake & do something accidentally or out of curiosity get into something they shouldn't, or do something dumb that they might not realise is dangerous & hurt themselves. So I nearly always insist when Techi's in our bathroom that one or the other of us is in there with her, because a bathroom is a dangerous place! You could slip & fall & all kinds of things!

**16. There are all kinds of dangerous things in there like disinfectants & stuff which should be kept way up high, out of reach of children.** We keep everything 'way out of reach, 'way up in a cupboard near the ceiling, & there's nothing in that lower cupboard under the sink, no cleaners or anything that could harm them.

**17. Maybe the Lord let this little tiny minor non-injury hurt occur to warn you about other things & being far more careful!** We've had so little happen to us that we're inclined to get a little lackadaisical, a little lethargic & a little careless & just think, "Well, nothing ever happens, it just can't happen to us." Well, the Lord just might jerk you up & let it happen, by letting something minor happen to teach you a lesson to make sure that you don't get careless & prayerless & start letting things happen, so that God has to let something happen to teach you a lesson & the poor innocent child be the sufferer! I hope I don't have to give this kind of a lecture too soon again!

**18. Keep electrical cords out of the way, electrical connections, fans, everything out of the way of little toddlers & babies!** They're in a very dangerous stage!—Not only from falls—they can usually catch themselves pretty good, although they may get a few bumps—but from sharp corners. I think you remember how aggravated I used to be with people who made glass tables & furniture with sharp metal corners & stuff like that! It's insane! It's selfish people that apparently don't plan to have any children around.

**19. Well, I didn't intend to talk this long, but if it saves one of our children's lives or limbs or eyes or fingers or toes or whatever it may be, it'll be worth it!** Some people get a little careless in their swimming too. It only takes one little sudden dunk & for them to take a gasp at the wrong time underwater instead of above water, & you're going to have a job on your hands trying to pump that water out of their lungs in a hurry before it kills them! Swimming is dangerous & I insist on the buddy system of one adult to each child. (Good swimmers are a different case.)

**20. Now I know it's a task to have to take care of children, but that's your job & you have nothing more important to do**

than taking care of those children! Those children are your job & you have nothing more important to do, ever! And when they're in any kind of dangerous situation such as swimming, either you're to be there with them or make sure some responsible adult is with them that knows how to watch them every moment & not turn their back on them for a second, one adult on each child!

**21. Now is the Lord going to have to let something actually serious happen & some real hurt happen, some actual injury to get you guys sobered up & serious about those children?** What if it had been hot enough & what if she had stepped in that end of the tub & sat down right under it or something & got a bad burn before she could even move? Thank God she could jerk her hand out real quick, but if she'd have slipped & fallen under that stream of hot water, can you imagine what a job you'd have had on your hands? She could have had a burn streak all the way down her body which you'd have to be taking care of for the next two weeks to a month! I mean it!

**22. Kids can get careless & I've seen them get a little careless & I've had to scold them several times.** Davida is always jumping in where Angels fear to tread, always impulsive & impetuous & too hasty, & you've got to really cure her of that! I'd almost say for Davida that she's accident-prone! And you know why it is, don't you? Well, Alf, it's good to be quick about some things, but it's safer to be slow. You're very quick & very fast & ready to jump at a moment's notice or a look or anything, but sometimes it pays to look before you leap! But Davida leaps before she looks & she's got to be cured of that or you're going to have a serious accident on your hands! I mean it!

**23. Now is this going to be enough? Are you going to be more cautious, more prayerful, more careful with the children, not take any chances & make it impossible for accidents to happen?** Isn't that one of our mottos?: Make it impossible for an accident to happen! Don't leave anything where it could be knocked off. Don't leave anything where it could be stumbled over. Don't leave anything where it can be fallen on. Don't leave any dangerous things within reach of a child!

**24. We nearly lost David, as you recall, in Tenerife when**

Dave left a can of cleaning fluid sitting on the floor while he was cleaning windows. David shouldn't have done it, but he was only a year old. Little kids that age will try anything. They don't know what's good to eat & what isn't, they stick everything in their mouths, they try it all! So David picked up the can & took a swig of cleaning fluid! I'll tell you, it's a miracle of God that he wasn't more seriously ill & we didn't have to rush him to the hospital or something! Thank the Lord he didn't get much!

25. Try to be sure that accidents can't happen, that nothing is in a position where an accident can happen, that no child is in a position where an accident can happen, & that you've got your eye on them every minute when they're in any kind of a situation anywhere! Even if you're right there in the same room with them you need to watch them. The way they play rough-&tumble sometimes, you've got to make sure that there's nothing that they're apt to fall against that could hurt 'm. You've got to make sure there's no sharp furniture or sharp corners or anything around that they could fall on or fall against that could hurt 'm. I mean it! Make it impossible for accidents to happen! Be so prayerful in the first place & so careful & cautious & safety-conscious that we give the Lord more than enough cooperation, & if it happens it's not going to be your fault! Amen?

26. All right, Lord, please help these caretakers to be better about taking care & be extremely careful & prayerful, cautious & safety-conscious with these children & with themselves as well, Lord, & others, to watch their step around this house & be extremely prayerful & mindful & cautious, not hasty, not in a hurry. Haste makes waste & speed kills! Help them, Lord, in Jesus' name, to be more cautious, more prayerful, more careful about arranging things & the position of the children & where they're playing, all these things to make it almost impossible for an accident to happen, so that they'll be able to prevent it rather than have to nurse it afterward!

27. An ounce of prevention is worth a pound of cure! A fence at the top of the cliff is worth a lot more than a hospital at the bottom! Help 'm, Lord, to look before they leap, squeeze don't jerk, pray before they take action!— And be much more prayer-

ful & careful with the children, to watch them more carefully, Lord, play with them more prayerfully & really be extremely safe if they go swimming. Swimming is dangerous, Lord! It's not our normal, natural element & can be extremely dangerous for one of the children in just one prayerless moment!

28. So we do ask Thee to help them to be much more prayerful & much more careful, much more cautious, safety-conscious, & most of all conscious of Thee, Lord, & their dependence upon Thee for the safety of these children. It could be any little thing, a plastic bag over their head, crazy things kids do that have literally killed many children! Thank You for how You've taken care of ours!

29. We thank You that these here have been cautious & prayerful, which is one reason we haven't had more accidents. TYL! Help this warning, Lord, to jerk 'm up & make 'm perk up so that they will not become lax & careless & prayerless so that You have to let something more serious happen, more sobering to make them better parents, better fathers & mothers, better caretakers of Thy little ones & Thy Kingdom. Thank You for how You have, but Lord, now help them to do better & not to get lazy or lax or let down in any way, Lord, to have no unguarded moments in which the Devil can slip in. Bless & keep our children, keep us, & thank You for how You have! Keep us again this night. We pray every night & every morning, all day long, for You to keep us, Lord. Thank You for how You've kept us!

30. Help this to be a lesson to these here, Lord, to never let anything careless like this happen again, to be constantly mindful of Thy children, constantly have an eye on them, Lord, to see what they're doing, to know what they're up to & not let the small ones get out of sight in any way, much less in the bathroom or anywhere where they're not constantly watching them, Lord, just like You do us.

31. Thank You that You're always watching us, You never take Your eye off of us lest we get in trouble! TYJ! You keep us out of all kinds of trouble. TYL! The only trouble You ever let us get into, Lord, is what we deserve. If after several warnings we insist on going our own way & not obeying, being careless or

prayerless. You let something happen just to teach us a lesson, but Lord, help this not to happen too often. Help us to be so careful & prayerful & cautious & safety-conscious, Lord, that we just about make it impossible for accidents to happen with Thy help. We know we can't do it without You, Lord, in Jesus' name. Amen!

32. The Lord never lets us out of His sight, He's the great example as a parent, & you shouldn't let them out of your sight! They should know you're watching them, if they're real small, every moment! When they're a little bit bigger you might let 'm sit in the next room & play with some other child, an older child or something, but where you can hear 'm & be at their side in a moment!—And be sure that everything in that room is secure, that they can't pull something over on themselves or whatever. Little toddlers start walking by hanging onto things & they could pull stuff over on top of them if you don't watch them. They reach up & grab anything to hold onto to pull themselves up.

33. You've got to keep an eye on these kids & keep your mind on them & don't let yourself get distracted! That's you nurses' job, that's your main job! You have nothing more important to do than watch those children & care for them & protect them & see that they're safe! So keep an eye on 'm! (Fam: Amen!)

34. I've said this many times before: Make it impossible for accidents to happen!—And one way to do it is keep your eye on them all the time, every minute! You say, "Well I can't do that when I'm asleep." Well, make sure they're asleep when you go to sleep! Make sure they're asleep first.

35. I'm not going to give you a spanking, but I just hope & pray the Lord's not going to give you a spanking by letting one of those kids get hurt through your carelessness & your lack of watchfulness! Watch & pray! Watch & pray! Those are two good rules of taking care of children! Really watch 'm & watch out for everything, & really pray! PTL? Okay, God bless & keep them & keep you & help you to watch & pray! I love you! I hope that did some good!—Amen?

36. Do you watch & pray over your kids without ceasing &

try to make it impossible for accidents to happen? God help you to do so to preserve these little ones for His Kingdom!—In Jesus' name, amen.

## BUYERS MUST BE BARGAINERS! DO 1849 1984



1. I've always told you that it's far wiser to do your wheeling & dealing & negotiating & bargaining on the telephone before you go there & get hooked right in their place or in their office where they know they've got you! They know you wouldn't have come so far if you weren't pretty serious or pretty interested, so the level of your bargaining ability is considerably lower when you're already there. It's much better to do your bargaining on the phone. Get all your prices & your deals & your discounts & all the rest on the telephone before you ever go, because they're going to do their best to bait you on the phone in order to get you down there. So they're going to offer their best buys & bargains & discounts & deals & prices on the telephone first, because they know once they've got you there they've al-

most got you & it's going to take quite a bit to make you back out.

**2. All you go to the shop or office for is to get a demonstration to make them prove their claims, & then if you're convinced, you can close the deal. All the other matters have already been settled on the phone. So that's how important phone calls are, 'cause that's where you've got the advantage to do your best wheeling & dealing & ask for your best prices, discounts, guarantees & all. They know they're bidding against the competition!**

**3. To make deals you have to be a salesman, to sell your point of view & to make your bargain! After all, they're trying to sell you, but it's your job to sell them! They're trying to hard-sell it & it's your job to try to be hard-to-sell & you've got to have good sales resistance!**

**4. They're not going to particularly love you for hard bargaining, but they'll respect you more & they'll know next time they've got somebody to deal with & not just a sucker who's going to pay the first price they ask! Next time they're probably even going to raise it higher if they figure that you're going to always pay the first price they ask.**

**5. But if you're a real hard bargainer & a dealer, they're going to learn to try to give you a low price to begin with, knowing that they might as well forget it, that you won't even consider the high price. They might not give it their lowest price, but they're going to be more reasonable as long as they're going to have a tough fight on their hands.**

**6. Never pay the first asking price no matter where you are or who you're dealing with! Bargain, make deals, make offers, try to wheedle them down & get some kind of good deal or agreement, if not on the price, the service, the guarantee, the discount or whatever. But that all should be done on the telephone if possible, because once they've got you there, then they know they've just about got you & you're not going to back out unless it's really offensive.**

**7. To bargain on delivery is not the time to bargain. If you try to bargain then, you're going back on your word, because if you didn't like the price, you wouldn't have had them deliver.—**

Or whether you liked the price or not, if you weren't agreeable to the price or you hadn't consented to the price you wouldn't have had them deliver!

**8. So it's no time to bargain in person unless it's the kind of shopping that you can't do by phone but you have to do it & it's just little stuff on the spot. But when it comes to big items like equipment & machinery, etc., get 'm to do their bidding on the telephone. What you're actually doing is shopping around asking for bids, & they know it.—And they don't know what the other guy had to offer or what price he gave. It's secret bidding & you're getting them to bid not knowing what the other guy's price was, & knowing that whatever price they give you it'd better be pretty reasonable or they may be outbid by the other guy even on their first price.**

**9. You can tell a lot about the kind of service they're going to give by the first service they give you, & that's dickering on the phone!—How much they're willing to talk & respond & answer questions & be helpful & give you all the information you ask for & not get impatient & not try to cut you short & say, "Nah, we don't want to fool with you because you ask too many questions!" Or, "You can't speak our language as well as we do." If that's the case, you don't want to fool with them either! Because any outfit that's snotty or afraid to be asked questions, there may be something phoney. So you'd better deal on the phone & learn how to read character & personality & spirit. The Lord can show you even on the telephone whether it's a good company to deal with or not.**

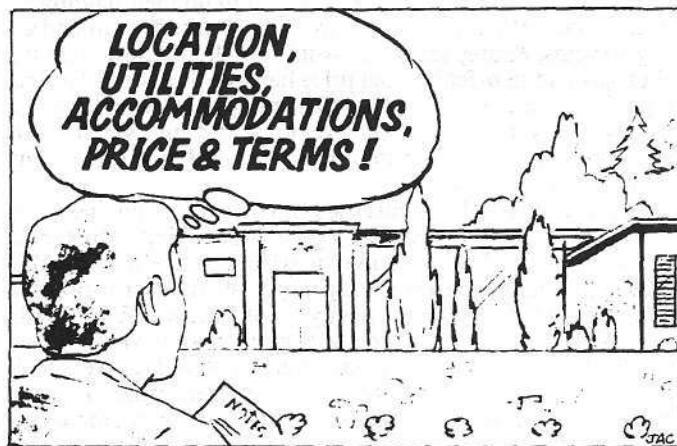
**10. If it's equipment you're getting, let their demonstrator start training your operator! Once you're serious & you've decided to buy it, make a deal too, "Well, can we stay there an hour or two while you train us how to use it?" It's better to do that there rather than have 'm start coming into the house to train you. Right? Let that be one of the last things before you close the deal, say, "Well, are you willing to show my operator there & train her how to use the thing before we go, before we pay the money, before we take delivery?" If that's the last request about it then they could hardly refuse.**

**11. But whatever you do, do your bargaining on the phone**

first!—Settle the price, discount, service, guarantee etc. before you go! When you're there it's too late! God help you all to be good bargainers for the Lord!—In Jesus' name, amen!

## BARGAINING FOR A HOUSE!

DO 1850 4/83



1. When you have made an offer, that's your word! You have vowed a vow & you've got to live up to it even if it hurts! Now don't forget that! That's what happens in a fleece. If you made the wrong fleece, like I told you guys about that place in Sri Lanka, then you've got to stick to it no matter what. (See No.1394) It's your word as a Christian, as a righteous man, that your word means something, for our own conscience & before God! It is not right to offer somebody something or say something & then back down, except in maybe some very rare circumstance where you can't go through with it.

2. I'm giving you a little lesson on any kind of deal: You decide on what you feel led of God to make your fleece, at least your first offer if nothing else, & be prepared to stick to it!—That

if he accepts such an offer, that you're willing to stick to it.

3. You say, "Well, that's our offer!" You've just sort of got to play it by ear & see his reaction. After he's blown off steam, then he settles down on something. He may say you have to pay it all in advance, that's what he'll dicker for first of all, but he's got to set his floor & you've got to set your ceiling, & I wouldn't actually call it a fleece unless he came down close to your price & your terms, your last offer.

4. Your best chance on these things is your first time there. If you phone back, he figures you're still nibbling & you're really interested to phone back, so your best chance is to dicker & get a deal on the spot the first time around.—At least it's your best chance if you do a little bargaining & leave him with what is your semi-final offer. Then maybe if he calls you & says, "Well, I thought it over & I decided I won't do that, but I'll do this," then you have a chance to come up to your final offer & say that's as far as you go, period. So he hangs up & he has time to think that over & waits to see if you'll call back, & if you don't call back, it's obvious he lost you, so he calls you again & says, "Well, all right!" You savvy?

5. But remember, your best time to bargain for a house is on your first visit, & get all the details!—The exact telephone situation, the utility situation, the security situation, who pays the gardener etc.

6. If you can't remember all these things, then you need to make yourself a little card to brief yourself on, to refer to from your notebook. Just take out your notebook & have a list all prepared. Just be very obvious about it, write it down. Say, "You don't mind my writing this down, do you? My memory is not too good & I might forget & we need to know all the details." Have a list prepared with blanks to fill in & then you won't forget anything.

7. Make a standard checklist of everything you need to ask about a house so you don't forget anything! It needs to cover everything about the house, the exact size, location, security situation, noise situation, facilities, water, lights, utilities, telephone, pool, water source, in every respect. There are at least a half-a-dozen questions you've got to ask just about the telephone:

"Is it a private line, how much, long distance or just local or what? How well does it work? How often does it work? Are the water & electricity reliable?"

8. **He's the seller & you're the buyer so it's up to you to ask the questions!** He's not going to volunteer! Ask everything about the house: "How is the plumbing? What kind of sewage disposal does it have?—Is it sewage, septic tank or cesspool? How well does it work? Any drainage problems? Any yard flooding problems?" I think that's why they got that place cheap in Peru, it seems to have a habit of getting flooded when it rains! Well, the owner wasn't going to tell them that, of course!

9. **Sometimes you need to ask around, ask the neighbours or someone what the score is, ask somebody else besides the owner what the situation is in that area.** Naturally, the owner is going to tell you that there are no problems & everything works fine, he's going to give it all a rosy glow! But why don't you ask a few neighbours or the people you meet on the street or somebody else, like you did. That was good, you got a lot of information from that one man, but don't just depend on his word alone. Ask around, ask in the corner store, find out all about the house.

10. **Look it over carefully—has it got roaches? Has it got rats?** Well, of course the owner is going to tell you it doesn't, but look! With either one you usually see their calling cards around somewhere. Open the drawers, open the cupboards, look! Look the whole place over, & if they're there you're going to see the evidence & you can even smell it!

11. **Ask how long ago was the last occupancy.** And when you've got all the information about it, then start asking about prices & terms & things like that, & on that first asking it's a good time to give him your first offer. When you've found out exactly what he's asking, make your first offer. Say, "Well, how about \$\_\_\_\_ since we're going to all this trouble of paying it in foreign currency?"

12. **Pick out all the flaws in the place!** "It's unfurnished, I've got to pay you in Dollars, it's a lot of trouble, & the house is not even safe, you can see through it & there's no way to lock it & blah, blah, blah!" You can go on & on about all the drawbacks

which he knows exist but he's just waiting to see if you're smart enough to notice them! Pick out all the drawbacks & all the flaws.

13. **But before you make any offers at all, find out his price & his terms, what is he gunning for to begin with?** And he'll give you his top, not necessarily what he is going to get, but what he wants. He'll probably say, "Well, I want \$\_\_\_\_ a month, 12 months in advance." So you can work from there. "OK, I'm offering you \$\_\_\_\_ a month, foreign currency, which is causing me a lot of trouble, but I'll give you two months in advance, first & last month, six months." Decide ahead of time how high you're going to go & what terms. Then you finally give him your flat offer of maybe \$\_\_\_\_ as the top. "All this trouble & what little you've got to offer, no furniture, no nothing! I'm not even sure I'm going to like it. I'll take it for six months, first & last two months in advance & that's it!" That's half the payment in advance, in other words, three months in advance for only a six-month contract.

14. **If you're just going to get what is the general average & what is usually done & expected, that's no miracle & that's no fleece!** We expect miracles! We expect God to do something unusual to give us a sign, to show us that that's the place so we should take it! Make him an impossible offer to meet impossible conditions & then you get an impossible answer—a miracle!—A fleece! But you have to know ahead of time after discussion & consideration.

15. **You only have to have your rock-bottom first offer while you're right there.** You can walk out on that one, see, because he can always phone you back, or he knows you can phone him back. You may phone him back then after we discuss here & decide on what's going to be our second offer, & you phone him up & give him a second offer. You understand? It's bargaining! You've got to do it this way, & the fact of the matter is, it's done all over the World, big businessmen do it all the time!

16. **First of all, ask all the questions about the house situation:** Number one is the location—& don't forget noise on that. Is it safe? Noisy? Is it accessible? What about public transportation, the distance from places you have to go & all that sort of

thing regarding the location—availability, accessibility, safety, protection, etc. Number two is the security situation. There are a whole bunch of questions in each of these categories. Number three, the utility situation—lights, water, etc., where do they get 'm & what do they cost, including your telephone.—All utilities & all about them. And after you find out all those necessities, then you can talk about Number four, house accommodations—what's the house got? How many rooms & how many of this & how many of that? Exactly what are the accommodations & what's the situation?

17. **Maybe you shouldn't even ask about gardening because you can always just refuse to pay the gardener if he decides to tack that on after you move in.** You can say, "Hey, listen, we didn't ask for a gardener, we'll do our own gardening, forget it!" Some places you just refuse afterwards because you already made your deal & you're in & those are things that he is going to pay for anyhow, whether you do or not. He's got to take care of his property & you know that & he knows it, so he's got no leverage once you're in.

18. **So after you've found the right location & the right security situation, utilities situation & what the accommodations are, then you can think about the price!** "What's the price, what are the terms, what do I have to do" & all that stuff. Then if you're interested, he makes his first asking price & you make your first offer. But don't make an offer unless you really plan to go through with it, in case he accepts it! Don't make an offer unless you're actually interested & you're making a solid offer you intend to keep!—And make it low enough it'll take a miracle for him to accept it.—Especially if you don't like the place too well, make it plenty low where it would really have to be a miracle, a sign from God to take it!

19. **No matter what the house looks like or how wonderful it is, if it hasn't got utilities & good water & electricity & telephone, forget it!** I'd rather have a cabin with good water & electricity & telephone than a mansion without! That's why I say ask about utilities next!—That's the next most important thing. After your location & your security situation, then start asking about utilities. There's no point in even looking at houses, no mat-

ter how nice they are, if they've got lots of utility problems & no telephone! So besides location & security situation, utilities comes next on the list.

20. **And after that the accommodations—just what does the house have in the way of accommodations etc.?**—And that includes whether it's furnished or unfurnished, how much room does it have & how many bathrooms has it got, how many toilets does it have & how much yard does it have for the children to play in, the pool & all the rest in the way of accommodations. That's way down, fourth on the list, but don't forget it.

21. **First of all you want to find out where you want to be, next you want to find out how secure it is going to be, & third you want to find out if you're going to be able to live there—water, lights, food, telephone, how close to the store, how expensive are the groceries etc.**

22. **You need to shop around & see what the close-by shopping is, so you don't have to go to the big town every time you want to buy a little grocery item or a loaf of bread!** Go & price the staples—if you have to, buy them, don't just stand around pricing them—buy an armload of groceries, it won't hurt. Buy a loaf of bread, a box of milk, a sack of rice, things which you consider staple foods that are things you always need & will always be buying regularly & need often, & you don't want to have to run all the way to the big city for. Buy a nice big sackful or boxful of groceries & bring 'm home with you.

23. **If you're not concerned about prices, you're not a good man to go shopping!** That's a must now, remember that. If you're willing to pay anything for anything, well, that's not a good shopper! If you don't care what you pay for it, that's not good shopping. And if you don't know what the price was, you must not have been that concerned about it. So do a little shopping before you come home. Find the biggest & best market nearby and see what they've got and bring home a load of groceries.

24. **So check the utilities, the accommodations & then the last thing is the terms.** And remember, even the price sometimes is not as important as the terms. The higher price can sometimes be better at lower, easier terms. For example, if the guy is going

to stick to his \$\_\_\_\_-a-month & absolutely refuse to come down any further, say, "OK, a month at a time." You wouldn't mind paying \$\_\_\_\_-a-month if you only had to pay it monthly, right? So the terms have a lot to do with it. If he'll come down to \$\_\_\_\_, okay, we'll up our final offer to first & last two months in advance, a six-month contract. We don't want anything longer than a six-month contract because we don't know that much ahead of time.

25. Ok, that's about the last thing on a place, when you start dickering for the price.—Because unless you're satisfied on all these other points, there's no point even discussing price. If it hasn't got a good location, security, utilities & sufficient accommodations, then why worry about the price? It's got to have all that. You've got to have the right location, you've got to have security, you've got to have utilities & you've got to have sufficient accommodations, & if it hasn't got that, you don't want it at any price!

26. But then when you start discussing prices, he starts with his asking price, you start with your offering price, & if he won't come down in price then he's got to come up on terms. And if the terms are easy enough, you might be willing to pay his price, OK? Now all those things are things you've got to remember when you're looking for a house!—Amen? GBAKY bargaining!—In Jesus' name, amen! (See also HH Checklist, FN 57, Pg. 68)

---

**MORE ON BARGAINING!** DO 1851 Compiled 7/84  
—Jewels From Dad on Bargaining!

1. That's not the way to bargain, to let'm know you're so thrilled with the place & you like it so much! The Bible tells you how to bargain. Can you quote the Scripture? (Peter: It says, "The buyer says, it is naught, it is naught."—Pro.20:14.) "It is naught, it is naught!" In other words, he belittles the merchandise & says it's not worth it! (Peter: But then he goes forth & boasts about the good deal he gets!) Yes, he goes away & he boasts that he really got a bargain! Well, that's the only way to get a bargain,



you have got to walk through & pick out all the flaws & make a bunch of complaints: "Well, look at the mess this place is in, ratty & rundown" & all that, & act like you don't like it. Whereas, if you start raving about it, of course they're going to up the price! They didn't think it was very much until you came along & you convinced them it was really good!—Ha! That's not the way to bargain. You need to be a hard-bargaining, critical old Jew like me! Don't get over-enthused about it, but run it down from what the guy's trying to sell you! On the other hand, don't be so critical you can't see anything good in it. That wouldn't be honest either & if you really want the place you've got to see something good in it, since most landlords want people in their house who will appreciate it & like it enough that they'll want to take care of it.

2. Let me tell you, Jews are experts at no sale! I mean, any Jew who's easily sold is no Jew. They're tough customers, they'll tell you everything is wrong with it & why they don't like it etc., & you've gotta do the same! There's just one thing they almost cannot stand, & that's not to make a sale at all, & I found this out as just a young kid. Now you guys have gotta learn how to do that

because it's also a typical Oriental style of bargaining.

3. **Never think about buying anything for the first asking price!** That's just their starting point & you haggle & you bargain & you argue. They can really get almost violent sometimes, but they can't stand to see you walk out the door without making a sale! You'll have a hard time getting out of any Jewish store without them making a sale no matter what it costs them! It's just against their Jewish blood not to sell, whatever!—But it's just as much against their Jewish blood to buy! They are born salesmen but they are tough customers!

4. **Don't ever pay the asking price, they don't expect you to!** You're not being mean or selfish or tight or anything by not paying the asking price, you're just being a good Oriental, that's all! If you start off by just paying what they ask you to, they'll just figure you're a fool & they lost half the fun of selling—the bargaining & the argument & the haggling!

5. **Where do you think they got that expression, anyway, "to jew him down"?** Some of you guys need to learn that, 'cause you've gone in & the real estate man's given you a certain price & he didn't even expect you to take it, he expected you to come down. They always pad it a little bit & expect you to say, "Oh no, it's nothing, it's nothing, it's not worth it! No, no, no!"—But they can't stand to see you go out the door!—That is if they're Jewish, & apparently Orientals are the same, like the Arabs!

6. **In bargaining the seller starts at the top & the buyer starts at the bottom & you keep working back & forth like a seesaw until finally you meet someplace in between!** Don't ever pay the asking price for a house or anything! If you're buying in a shop & they tell you the price, what they hope you're dumb enough to pay, some real bargainers are really disappointed if you don't fight for it! So you look at it & size it up & you decide on what you're willing to pay, what you think it's worth. You hear his price & you figure what it's really worth. You know it's worth a lot less than what he's asking, maybe half as much, & then you offer something below that, below what you're willing to pay. Don't start where you are willing to pay, start way below. In some stores, hardly anything is marked with prices. They start at the top, you start at the bottom, & you final-

ly get together & they really enjoy the sport!

7. **You business people are going to have to learn how to operate with these people, let me tell you!** It's the Jews, Indians & the Orientals who run the business all over the World!—And they didn't get that way by letting suckers push 'm around, they pushed the suckers around!

8. **(Are you a good bargainer & salesman for Jesus?—Missionaries must be good salesmen, & you've got the biggest bargain ever!—God's free Salvation!—"Sell" it!)**

## **"FILL UP YOUR HEART!"**

DO 1853 6/75



1. **My Grandfather was an orator of the old school, a great writer, great teacher, preacher & lecturer, & he really knew the language & he knew his grammar & his style & his oratory. He was an artist at it. And whenever he made a speech or a lecture, he never used a note!**

2. **So I asked him one time, "Grandfather, how do you do it? How are you so fluent, & you cover all these points, & sometimes in a one, two, three, four order & all this sort of thing—a very analytical lecturer—& you go on & on with all these illustrations & stories & never seem to forget anything. You're never at a loss for words, you hardly ever pause, it just pours out! How do you do it? How do you know what you're going to say? Don't you ever forget anything?" And he told me something I have never forgotten, & I thank the Lord for it, because I've used it ever since.**

3. **He said, "David, I do my studying beforehand.—I read,**

I study, I think, I pray & I get totally full of my subject, so that then when I stand on the platform to speak, out of the fullness of my heart the mouth speaketh." Amen? He said, "If I have any advice at all for you as a young man & if you're ever going to do any speaking, get full of your subject & then when you get up before an audience or a crowd, don't worry about notes or anything. Just speak out of the fullness of your heart & God will inspire you, God will lead you."—Lk.6:45.

**4. Do your studying, your work, your reading & note-taking beforehand, & when you get up before an audience don't go reading & looking at notes & this sort of thing. Be so full of your subject that you don't have to stop, it just rolls out by inspiration!**

**5. To me that's just wonderful, that God will lead me & guide me in what to say & inspire me with thoughts, & I often get pictures when I'm just giving a class or talking. God gives me some illustration on life. That's where most of these pictures come from, like "The Tree", "The Birds & the Seeds" etc. (Nos. 316A, 319)**

**6. Now if you're inspired of the Spirit & you ask God to help you in your speaking, & if you're full of your subject, out of the fullness of the heart the mouth speaketh. By this time you should be full of your subject. Your little mind should be a computer which has memory cells that are just packed with information & instances & illustrations & stories.**

**7. People like pictures! We're all children, & it's easier to grasp a picture, an illustration or a story than mere theories & facts & lectures & so on. If you'll notice, my Letters are just full of stories, full of illustrations, full of pictures.**

**8. If you read what Jesus had to say, you'll find His the same: Parable after parable after parable. It says that He never taught them except by parables, or without a parable—Mt.13:34. Jesus never taught the people without using pictures & illustrations, parables & stories. He was a great Story Teller. And this is a tool of teaching which helps people to learn & to remember more easily, just like your little children.**

**9. So I would suggest to you in my advice on your speaking: Make it simple, speak out of the fullness of your heart, from**

experience, from knowledge you've gained from others, tell stories, give examples, illustrations & paint pictures that they'll remember, simple little things. Tell stories about your own life.

**10. Let me tell you something, if people will not listen to anything else—they may never listen to all the preaching in the World, you could even prophesy & they wouldn't listen, you could do all the rhetorical erudite teaching that you think they might need & they'll never listen—but when you start telling your life story, instantly you have their attention. "This is the way it happened to me & this is my testimony, this is my personal experience", & they're fascinated. People are interested in people.**

**11. If you'll notice, almost every single time the Apostle Paul began to preach, he started with his own personal testimony! When it was a new crowd, new people, new situation, he always said, "Well, this is what happened to me." (Acts 22:3-21; 26:1-23.) I've told you folks this before. When you're witnessing, by all means give your personal testimony. Nine times out of ten, if you say it with sincerity & in the power of the Holy Spirit & in real earnestness & honesty, they will believe it, that you are telling the truth, & they will believe your testimony. That's one thing they cannot deny.**

**12. I have talked to people who said, "I don't believe in God. I don't believe in the church. I don't believe in the supernatural." But I have given them my own personal testimony & they wound up saying, even though they claimed they were a skeptic, agnostic, unbeliever & everything else, "Well, if you say so, I believe you."**

**13. But the moment they confess that it's possible for it to happen to you, they confess that it's possible for it to happen to others. If it has happened once it's not a freak, it's most likely to happen again & it can happen to them. They admit the possibility, & there's a spark of faith, a mustard seed of faith that has begun.**

**14. That's why I said in witnessing you have to sell yourself first. You have to do the winning & win them to yourself first, really. Isn't that what we really do by our sample & our love & our music? We win them to ourselves & our own happiness &**

our way of life first, then they want what we've got & what makes us that way.

**15. So when you're speaking, first of all I would suggest perhaps you could try just pouring out your heart.** And let me tell you right now, we're in a war! Time is more important than perfection.—Even though you say it simply, crazily, disjointed, disorganised, & maybe your listeners will say, "Why, this man's a fool. This guy is simple-minded. He speaks as if for children & he keeps repeating himself all the time. He's no literary genius. How did he ever get to be a writer?"

**16. Well, I didn't write or speak because I'm a literary genius** & I didn't write because I ever intended to be a writer or to be popular or to please people or to win their admiration of my journalistic talent. I am just telling people the facts & the truth that they need to know, whether they like it or not, whether they like my style or not or the way I put it or not.

**17. Stand up & speak & just tell them what God leads you to tell them** out of your head as it pops out, along with stories & illustrations. Maybe if you want to have a little subject outline in front of you of the things you want to say & points you want to cover so you won't wander too far astray, fine.

**18. Talk about how it happened to you**, how it happened in cases you know about by experience, how it has happened according to what you've heard & read & what the usual case is. But allow for the unusual & allow for exceptions & allow for others that it may not always be that way, it doesn't always have to be that way.

**19. Just let it flow naturally as much as you can.** The thing is to be natural, to let it flow naturally. Don't say it all has to be the same. When talking with others, to get the whole story you've got to put everybody's story together & you've got to have everybody's opinion. And this is what you must remember—you must be tolerant of the opinions of others.

**20. So when you speak always qualify your lessons** & always say, "Well, maybe none of this is going to work for you. Maybe none of this is true of you in your case or your disciples or your Home or children or whatnot! But this is the way it happened to me, this is the way it happened to so-&-so, this is the

way it happened to most of them & therefore this is the way it will probably happen." Get away from dogmatism. Get away from rigidity. Get away from dictatorship. Get away from systematic rigid formal conventionalism. You must allow for differences & freedom.

**21. Speak from your heart, pray for the inspiration of God**, ask God to please help you give them what they need. When I start speaking or start writing a Letter, Maria & I both pray, "Lord, give me what they need. Help me to feed the sheep, help me to give them the food that they need, the instruction that they need." And I believe He answers those prayers. Does He? Isn't it usually what you need? It is usually, even if it may not be worded right or it may be crazily put, at least I believe it's the truth & I believe it's the truth that you need.

**22. So no matter how you say it, speak the Truth, speak it from your heart**, from the fullness of your heart, & give them what they need no matter what. Let the chips fall where they may & whether they like it or not. I just say what first comes off my heart, & I believe my first impulse, my first reaction, my first answer, my first inspiration is the right one because I trust God. If I ask for a fish He's not going to give a serpent, & if I ask for bread He's not going to give a stone!—Mt. 7:9-11. If I ask God to lead me, He's going to tell me the right thing to say & I'm going to say what comes out of my heart, & what I believe & what I think is the truth & what they need.

**23. So give out of the fullness of your heart & let your mouth speak.** If your heart is full of Jesus & the truth, that's what you'll give them & it'll be what they need & don't worry about perfection. Try to organise it if you can, if you have to rearrange it a little bit to make it more understandable, but don't spend days & weeks on it.

**24. For God's sake follow God & then out of the fullness of the heart the mouth will speak** & you will give people what they need & it will be the truth. No matter what it sounds like or what it looks like or what you think it is, trust God that He has given you the right thing & pass it on. And for God's sake, do it! Just trust God that that's the answer & that's the thing, pass it on & leave the rest for the Lord. Trust God! Amen? PTL!

## **CONSTANT VIGILANCE IS THE PRICE OF SECURITY!**

—Is Your Home Secure Right Now?

DO 1889 1/85



1. Since security is a very vital issue, I think we should perhaps take time to make sure we're going to behave & arrange ourselves in such a way that we'll be able to continue to study & be prepared at any time to give an answer for whatever!—1Pet. 3:15. Amen? Somebody made out a very nice list & summary of the security rules that you discussed the last time, & perhaps I should help you understand the cause in order to get the right effect. (See No.1607)

2. Did you get a pretty good rundown of what happened in this last faux pas that made us have to evacuate an entire field? It's bad enough to have to evacuate fields because it's the fault of the government or the fault of a war or something like that, but when it's our own fault, that's almost inexcusable!—Especially when it's the fault of maybe just one Home that brought down the wrath of the System on the whole area. That's really sad, amen?

3. Peter asked me the question, "Should we be prepared for a warning in which we have a little time to get ready, or

should we be prepared for the knock at the door? "—And what did I say, Peter? (Peter: Both!) The most serious trouble often begins with our enemies instigating or encouraging bad publicity, bad-mouthing us & publicising it so that they stir up the public & more enemies to needle the government & stir them up against us. This has been the pattern for the Devil's operation for ages, from the very beginning. I've given Daniel as an example & I've given Jesus as an example. The enemies stirred up bad publicity & aroused the public to pester the government until they did something about it, the same old method they always use.

4. It can start off with only one parent getting mad about their child's joining us & raising such a fuss & even going to the newspapers & howling so loud that the newspapers decide it's a good news story & fit to print! "Here's a common problem of all parents, these terrible cults! Here's another cult come to town!"—Whereas their religions are the worst cults of all! But they're big & powerful & recognised & accepted with influence even over the government, so that the Whores of religion ride on the backs of governments & have the reins & control them.

5. So don't think that any country, wherever you go, is going to be any exception. Thank God for the countries we've gone to where they have received us, at least for a time, with open arms, at least the common people, even as they did Jesus. But sooner or later you're going to offend somebody, especially if you have done a good job & you have spread the Word & won enough souls & friends to make the Devil really mad & begin to really fear that you're going to steal his sheep or steal his field. And the Lord knows by that time you have saturated the field, you've done a good job & it's time to make you move on.—And if you don't get the point & do it voluntarily, He'll send out the hounds of Hell to go after you to drive you to the next field!

6. But in some cases we have lost a good field that was still receptive & responsive! They were booming in Indonesia!—Especially with the Tape Ministry, that's where it virtually began. But they themselves by their own foolish ways & lack of security, lack of awareness & lack of wisdom, lost us that whole

field of 160 million people, the most densely populated country in the World, where we'd been on the air for years, had thousands of followers & could have done a marvellous job in reaping! But they didn't even hardly have time to do the reaping, the Devil didn't want his field reaped. So some of our own foolish people brought it on themselves & got us driven out of that field!

7. **How do our enemies drive us out?** Well, first of all they go to the police & the police don't do anything or very little, not enough to satisfy'm. They don't want just one little case solved or one little kid recaptured, they want to get rid of all of us! The Devil wants you all out! So when they can't get the government or the police to do enough, they go to the press, & the bad publicity begins that stirs up all the people against you. Then all the people put the pressure on all the government & finally they get the action they want & the government takes action. The government is usually the most reluctant of all.—After all, the Government is of God!—Rom.13:1.

8. **Don't worry about the government, it's not the government you have to fear!** They don't want to do anything, they'd just as soon not be bothered, they don't really care, they've got enough problems of their own. They'll drag their feet rather than bother to even call at your door! It's not until somebody has insisted & usually the press & the people & the nation is in an uproar that the police will finally be driven by them to call at your door & knock & start questioning, usually rather politely. It's a job they didn't even want, they didn't even like, they didn't think it was necessary, they didn't even want to do, they don't even think you're that big a threat or that bad! But all these religionists, the Whore, is putting the pressure on'm: "We're not going to fuck you any more unless you get rid of these other lovers!"—Get it? The religious Whore puts the pressure on & gets her government System lovers to get rid of you through envy, jealousy & hatred!

9. **So that's how it begins, & it can all begin over one careless, slothful, lazy, disobedient little Home who didn't do what they were told to do,** who didn't obey the Letters, who didn't destroy their security trash, who didn't destroy the note immediately after they had read it as was printed on it big as life:

"DESTROY THIS IMMEDIATELY AFTER READING!" The NOs had written out this notice to them giving their name & address & phone number: "Memorise it & destroy immediately!"—Instead, they kept it for months so that the police found it. Then they found more Homes! "Boy, we're really getting quite a haul here! These people are really careless, they're really lazy, they don't cover their tracks & they don't destroy their security materials! They've got everything we want, we'll try a few more Homes!"—And the rest of the Homes were just as bad & had just as much booty to haul away back to the police station!—Names, addresses, phone numbers, private correspondence!—And fotos!

10. **Don't worry about the lit, they've already got the lit!** There's hardly anything they haven't already got. I don't think that what they're getting now & what we're putting out even DO is as bad as some of the stuff they've already had in the past. They've got enough to incriminate us in their minds already from the lit they used to get & they've already got! I wouldn't worry near as much about the lit as I would about the files & the correspondence & the records & the books & the address books & the Diaries. These were the things we found they were most interested in in Malta. They didn't take all that much interest in the lit, they'd seen the lit for years! They know what we preach, they know what we believe! They've seen it & heard it & had it themselves for years!

11. **I'd certainly want to protect our lit all we can, at least keep it so they don't get it & so we can have it, because we need to study it & refer to it!** We want to keep our library, at least our Home Library of lit. Right? Even if you don't have your own personal, individual copies to study & to read, at least you can borrow a copy from the Home Library. So for God's sake, don't let'm get all your lit, don't let'm take the Home Library! Have some secret place to hide that where they can't possibly find it. But as far as your personal lit etc., well, hide that the best you can, lock it up the best you can, but we found by experience that just locking it in a briefcase doesn't mean a thing. They can come in with a search order that says they can break locks if they want to.—Locks on briefcases, suitcases, doors, trunks, whatever,

search & seizure!

12. But I'm warning you, it's not just the lit that they're looking for, that doesn't tell 'm as much as other things they're looking for. What the lit tells them is what they've already heard by the thousands, by the millions! The lit is not what you really have to guard the most, except in order to keep it for your use. And of course Homes that depend on litnessing & distributing lit, they don't want to lose all that precious lit that they've paid for to get printed to distribute, so they'd better hang on to theirs! Even if you've got quantities of it, try to hide it someplace, in the closet or under the floorboards or in the attic.

13. We found that since the police are reluctant to do the job anyhow & they don't really want to do it & they're just obeying & sort of fulfilling at least the letter of the law, they'll say, "Yeah, we searched the place. Yeah, we confiscated everything we found."—And a lot of times they do a pretty sloppy job. They don't really tear up the floor or tear into the attic or go through the ceiling. Some of our enemies have "gone through the ceiling" already to stir'm up, but they don't go inside the walls or other places that you could hide things.

14. They're even making cabinets now in the United States with secret compartments where you can hide things! The safe is no longer safe, because people know when they see a safe that there must be something valuable in it or it wouldn't be locked up! It wouldn't be made of thick steel unless it had something valuable in it, & they've got all kinds of ways of opening safes, even using a stethoscope to hear the tumblers as they turn the combination lock until they can just turn the combination & open the safe without even blowing it up!—Or if it's small enough they'll pick it up & stuff it in their car trunk & carry it off. Or if it's too big to do that, safe-crackers & safe-blowers will stick plastic explosive on the door & blow up the lock! They know there must be something valuable in there or you wouldn't have it!

15. We've always found the safest place, not only for our things but even for ourselves, is anonymous, an unknown place, to be unknown, a hiding place that people would not expect or suspect to be a hiding place. That's your safest place.—

Not in an obviously locked briefcase, trunk, suitcase, locked door or even closet, but some place or some compartment or some closet they don't even know exists that is in the panelling of the walls or something that you can't even tell that it's a hiding place. That's what the rich people are doing now, they're smart. They hide their most precious things in secret compartments in desks or secret drawers, something that doesn't even look like a drawer or a cupboard, but is. They press a secret button or a secret lever & it opens up & they can put their stuff in & shut it again.

16. It's good if you can have more than one way & one side to get out of a house. In one house we lived in I used to figure out how we could climb out a window & over the back wall so we wouldn't have to go out the only one or two front doors, in case somebody was out there we didn't want to meet or see, but that was a difficult problem too. It's a difficult problem even where you have a walled home, where there's a big high wall around your home. You think you're nice & secure, but you've only got one front door, so instead of protection it turns out to be a trap!

17. So it would be good to have a house, if possible, with a back door. The officials usually come to the front door because that's where the address is, it's seldom that they really think you're that dangerous that they've got to surround the house with gunmen. Usually it's just one or two cops that come to the front door & knock, at first for just a few simple questions. They're quite polite & they just want to know a little more about you & check your passports & a few things like that. Normally the System police are very nice, they're taught PR & to be polite & not to be mean or anything. We've had a few rotters, but most of the police that have come to our doors in the Family have been polite & just wanted to ask a few questions. Of course, if their questions & your answers aroused their suspicion, then they came back for a genuine investigation!—And maybe later on, not only just a real tough questionnaire, but a thorough search! And if they couldn't find what they were looking for then, they came back & confiscated everything!

18. Usually you get some wind of it though, a little ahead

of time you get a little forewarning, some kind of warning or in some way you're tipped off by another Home. At least the first Home they visit can warn the other Homes that the police are apt to pay them a visit too. But often even before that, sometimes they'll call you down to the police office & ask you a few questions before they even bother to go to the house. And you can certainly warn the home folks then that they'd better pack up & get things put away if they haven't already done it, or even leave! Usually you get some warning.

19. It has been my policy to recommend to our offices that they never keep any file or any correspondence more than one month old & that any records or stats are destroyed just as soon as they've got the new ones! At least that unloads a ton of paper that you don't need. Why do you need those old reports? Why do you need the old stats? Why keep all that old junk? It's just a bunch of paper to have to find room to stuff somewhere & to give the police an abundance of material when they search & seize. Why not just keep the latest stats, the latest reports, the latest correspondence?—In such a small bundle that you can hide it almost any place that they couldn't possibly find it unless they tore up the floors or the ceiling or the walls. Do you get the point?

20. So it's not really the lit we're worried about, in fact, we've cleaned up our lit pretty well. We used to publish more shocking things & more what the System calls obscenity & pornography & nude photos & nude art, much more than we do now. The only thing you've got to worry about now is maybe some of your personal photos, which if nude, are illegal in some countries, & if not nude but include names & locations are nevertheless a security breach.

21. I suggest you don't ever carry anything like that in your bags or suitcases or briefcases when you're gonna cross borders, just in case some customs official gets cranky & snotty & decides he wants to look through everything. In some countries it's illegal to carry that sort of thing across borders & that sort of photography is illegal in their country.—Especially in the Muslim countries, they're very bad on that.

22. Some of you travelling from place to place want to carry

lit with you & you say that's identifying. Well, I carry a Bible, I've sometimes even had a MO Book or reference book or something like that in my bag that they might have thought identifying. But they wouldn't have thought anything of it except, "Well, he's got some of the literature of this outfit. It doesn't necessarily mean he's a Family member." And lots of Christians carry Bibles. Your new little MO Books like the MOP & BOF etc., they might even find'm interesting. They may just thumb through, leaf through & see it's nothing but a little religious book, & devotional book of some kind.

23. Of course, if you've got a big stack of duplicate literature that it looks like you're going to pass out in their language in their country, that they don't like, they'll probably take that! Even if it's in English & it's a bunch of duplicates, they are apt to take it because they're beginning to wonder how come you want so many pieces of the same thing. But it's not really the literature that they're usually looking for. They've had the literature or they could easily get it & they already know what we preach & practice, they know the whole works! But they are looking for names, addresses, phone numbers, Diaries, records & finances!

24. They're so interested in our finances, they want to know where the money goes, who gets the money, where is it? — And they think by confiscating books & financial records & correspondence & files they'll find out!—And they could find out with the carelessness of some people in some stupid idiotic Homes! They went right to our top officers in one city—some of them were top officers—because the stupid, idiotic, local Homes, those careless, foolish, insane, lazy people had failed to destroy records & even names of officers & their addresses & phone numbers! And it wasn't any time after visiting a few Homes that they found the top ones that they were looking for.

25. But don't worry about it even if you have a visit, even if there's an interrogation, even if there's an investigation, even if there's a search, even if there's a seizure! As long as you keep a clean house, it will be an empty wind (See No.367); they're not going to find anything & you don't have anything to worry about. Let'm ask questions! Answer'm! Let'm look! If they

want to take lit home with'm, let'm! So what? Just be sure you don't betray your own brethren by not having destroyed all excess files & records & correspondence & stats & names & addresses & only kept the ones you absolutely have to have for reference!

**26. When I leave or go anyplace I make sure I don't have any records.** I dump all my old files & records off on the rest of you & I trust you to destroy'm. I say, "Either file"—if you think you need to keep it—"or destroy". I dump all my junk on somebody else so I don't have it in my possession while travelling.

**27. So watch out! Try not to have anything in your luggage that could be considered contraband or smuggling or against the law.** Try not to keep anything in your house that could be considered contraband or illegal or that they might just use to smear you with even though it's not a crime.

**28. In all of these knocks on the door, questionings, interrogations, investigations, searches & even seizures, as far as I know, we have yet to have anybody go to court & suffer a jail term for any kind of crime or any kind of thing that they found in our Homes!**—Except in a strict fanatical Moslem country where distributing Christian literature is against the law & they enforce the law severely, especially if they can condemn you for proselytising or trying to convert their people. They could put you away for a year or two & probably would put you away or kill you if you're one of theirs, but because you're a tourist & a foreigner they let you out in a few months, maybe a few weeks, & warn you never to do it again. Yes, it's a crime to witness at all, litness at all, win souls at all in some of those countries. So watch out! You do it at the peril of your life or freedom! So maybe you shouldn't be in that country anyway, if you can't witness.

**29. But in most of the civilised World, both Western & Eastern, they don't care that much about your crazy religious literature or your crazy culture or way of life.** They're looking for drugs & for arms, to see if you're a threat to the government, a threat to society. They're looking for seditious literature. Salacious literature, that's porny & juicy & sexy & that sort of thing, but seditious, that's something else, you're writing against

the government, you're sounding like a rebel & a terrorist & a revolutionary, you might be dangerous! And of course, that's what the enemies & the religionists try to make out that we are.

**30. If they can't stir up the government any other way they'll say, "Well look, you'll find Communist literature!"** But in most cases it's not even illegal to be a pro-Communist or a Communist sympathiser or even have some sympathies & objections to the existing government. Most countries today, believe it or not, even Oriental countries, Eastern countries, are democracies or have a certain amount of religious freedom & even a little freedom to criticise the government or not agree with them at least. But when you begin to look like you would like to take up arms & tear it down by force, that's a different story! Watch out you don't sound like that!

**31. So beloved, don't worry about it! They're not going to find anything that's really criminally liable or worth charging you with a crime.** But don't let'm get ahold of literature that they can use to even smear you, like pictures & stuff where they can say, "Look what we found" & the people will condemn you even though it's not a crime. And don't let'm get ahold of correspondence & papers that are gonna not only expose your inner workings & secret organisation, but lead them to other Homes & other leaders at the top, all of whom they're trying to get.

**32. So don't worry when it comes, don't let it bother you.** First of all it's good for you, & second, there's not really much they can do to you, at least not now, not yet, praise the Lord! There's very little real trouble the Devil can cause you, it's just kind of like his flies & insects & mosquitoes, they're just annoying little pests! Most of our trouble with the System has just been pestering, harassing, annoying, there was nothing really serious that they could really get us on or really cause us any serious trouble about. Of course, that's pretty annoying when some of our own people were so stupid & we have to clean out an entire field & cause 300 people to move, 30 Homes to vacate & leave nearly the whole field to the Devil! That's pretty annoying, that's getting pretty serious!

**33. But if they persecute you, you'll be a better Christian!** It'll refine you & make you white, purge you, make you stronger!

You'll do better, you'll do more, you'll live closer to the Lord & pray more so He can do more! And if finally your job is done in that country, well, praise God, He'll see that you get flushed out to some other country. And finally if your job is done on Earth, He'll deliver you from this Earth too! So why worry about it, amen?

**34. But do have wisdom, do work on it, please do hide any very sensitive materials you wouldn't want to fall into their hands!**—And I don't mean criminal materials at all, I'm talking about things that would lead them to leaders & that sort of thing, that's what they're usually looking for. I'm sure you wouldn't be able to show'm anything that would show'm where the money is, because it isn't! It all goes right back into the work & back to the people & it's in the Homes. That's where the money is, the lit, the works! Ask our bookkeepers! They know where it all goes, it all goes right back into the work. The only part we spend is what it takes to keep you here, & when it was just Maria & me alone it wasn't this much. So they'll not find any money, they'll not find any me—if you are careful—& even if they find me or even you, that's not going to stop us! Praise God!

**35. But do try to be prayerful!** Do try to be cautious & try to not just give'm information like they did in one city & they have other places.—Please! Be cautious, be prayerful, be careful & just don't give them anything. Don't let things fall into their hands that might cause a little inconvenience & a little trouble, even FNs & FSMs that talk a lot about our operations & people & locations. (Prays:)

**36. You're not going to let anything hurt us, Lord, not a hair of our head,** You promised, unless it was Thy Will or good for us & time for it, Lord, or did Thy Kingdom good in some way. So we thank You for it! Thank You for the freedom all these years. Thank You for the finances all these years to pay for it! Thank You Jesus for all Thy goodness & mercy! Bless & keep these now & keep us all safely in Thy care. Help us all to be prayerful, careful, cautious & wise so that we can last as long as possible & get as big a job done as we can with Thy help, Lord, in Jesus' name. Amen!—Are you diligent & faithful about your security?

## WS WORKS & WORKERS!

DO 2024 11/84

—Maria 28

**1. A lot of our Family don't realise that our WS Units are not filled with near-perfect people who are all excellent samples in every way.** They think because they're WS Units & they're in contact with us & they work directly for us that we must have always approved their every move & example. But that's not necessarily so, we don't always have control over their actions & their sample, their daily living & their spirituality. However, people whose personal sample may not be the best can often be very faithful at their job & good in their work. If we don't have anybody else to do it, then a lot of times He gives them the anointing for the job whether they're the best samples or not or whether they're exactly where they should be spiritually or not.

**2. If you're backslidden or a bad sample, it doesn't necessarily mean that all the work you do will be bad.** Sometimes perhaps it will be, but if the Lord knows you're the only one to do it, then He won't let His Work fail.

**3. So you can't always tell from people's work what their spiritual condition is.**—Just like you can't always tell just by observing the physical condition of their Home what their spiritual condition is. The Home can be spotless, beautiful & well-decorated, but often you have to dig a little deeper to find out the real condition of the people.

**4. We can't live right with most of our WS personnel, & most of them are scattered around the World without any immediate supervision,** except ours by long-distance mail, so there's no way that we can tell what their actions are unless they choose to tell us, or of course unless the Lord warns us specifically of something or He checks us in some way, which of course He does sometimes. But even when He does, dealing with personal problems & sorting out complicated situations by correspondence is very difficult. We can give general guidelines, but it often requires physical on-the-spot intervention to ferret out deep-seated problems.

**5. Some of our Units are selah Units & therefore can't have**

local leadership going in & fellowshipping with them or advising them what to do. Most of them, therefore, have to be pretty much on their own without outside fellowship or outside activities or even the local people knowing where they live. They're their own leadership & sometimes they have to remain on their own for years, independent, not having anybody other than the Letters telling them what to do, & as a result, sometimes some of them get a little bit off the track! It's a sacrifice they have made for the Work & the Family & you shouldn't condemn them, but you should pray for them instead. However, it's a rather sad fact of human nature that if you don't have somebody standing right over you making you do the right things, some fleshly personage, then you often don't do them.

6. **No matter what the Lord tells you or what the Letters say, you're bound to get off the track in some way if you don't have some kind of direct physical oversight.** I'm sure that's why the Lord always gave His people leaders. Because they obviously weren't capable of just following the Lord on their own, He gave them a prophet or king, some fleshly person to instruct them & advise them & counsel them & command them & make them do it! Most people seem to need some kind of human leadership or they stray after awhile. In spite of everything the Letters say & everything they know they should do, if people don't have somebody hanging over them, watching over them & making sure that they keep in line, they often go astray.—Just like some of our top leaders like Faith & Magdalene & Juan, who were so long more or less their own bosses because we weren't able to supervise them closely enough.

7. **So if the Family should come in contact with people that are or have been members of WS Units, they should realise that they're not necessarily our personal representatives or good examples of the way we would do things.** In the work they do, yes, they send it in by mail, we check it, we advise them by mail specifically what to do & how to do it, so along the work lines they can't get too much off the track, but in their personal examples & lives & marriages & children, they are pretty much on their own because we just don't have much contact with them that way at such great distance & neither does anyone else. So

just because it's a WS Unit doesn't necessarily mean that everything they do is approved & authorised by us & the way we would do it. We would hope that it would be & it should be, but it's just one of those things that's not always going to be.

8. **Now we do have quite a few Units that operate very close to the way we do things & are very close to us in Spirit, & really try their best & are close to the Lord & living for Him in every way.** Some people who have joined WS have gone into these Units & have been thrilled with the sample, as they see that things operate exactly the way they have read in the Letters. But unfortunately not every Unit is such a good sample, so people shouldn't be too shocked if they join a WS Unit or meet some WS personnel that aren't such a good sample, because we just don't have control over all our WS people in that respect & we can't make them do what they're supposed to do, especially when we don't even know what they're up to half the time, if they don't tell us their problems themselves. On the other hand, even if we do have close contact with people it doesn't always ensure that they will be obedient & faithful in all respects, since people always have freedom of choice & can get away with quite a few things in their heart sometimes if they don't choose to obey.

9. **There have been times when we have had to dismiss WS personnel because of their poor sample & for causing major problems.** We dismissed them & sent them to the field, but the Family didn't always know why they were no longer in WS, & they expected them to be good samples & good representatives of WS. But the reason they may have been sent to the field is because they weren't good samples & we did have to let them go. Just because they have once been in WS doesn't mean that they're necessarily up to the standard that they should be or even as spiritual or obedient or faithful as a lot of our field personnel. They did well at their job, in most cases, but once we found out that their personal lives were a wreck & they had bad problems, if they couldn't be persuaded to change, we usually had to sacrifice the work to get them back to where they were supposed to be, to let them go out on the field & get the training & supervision that they needed, even if it meant having to train some-

one new to replace them.

10. Of course not every one that used to be in WS & is now on the field is there because of serious personal problems; we've had to release some of our personnel for financial reasons, because we were combining Units or doubling up on jobs.—Most of the WS people who are now leaving WS for the field are very valuable people who are leaving because of the Wind-down, because their jobs are done & they can now make an important contribution to the field. So just because you see WS people on the field you shouldn't automatically think that they've been fired because of a bad personal sample or because of problems in their lives.

11. Actually even the ones that we have had to let go from WS because of problems have made real strides & gained great victories in their lives & learned to have more faith on the field & more trust in the Lord & gotten a real shake-up in their lives & become better for it. They were faithful in their WS work & now they are faithful on the field. God bless them!

---

#### **DAD ON "KIDZ CORRECTION"! DO 2064 10/85**

1. I very seldom used corporal punishment on my own teens after they became grown.—I mean grown as big as David (almost 11 years old) or even more, because corporal punishment is not the best solution for teen misbehaviour! The night my father took a strap to my 14-year-old sister for staying out all night with her boyfriend, she ran away & married him the next day! It often increases their resistance & their rebellion & they feel misjudged & mistreated!

2. Whoever's going to be teaching teenagers is going to have to learn that corporal punishment, except as a last resort, is not the answer to our kind of teenagers! Force & violence is the only thing the World understands, so with Worldly teenagers it's something else, they probably need to be clobbered with a club!—But not our teenagers!

3. Our teenagers know the Lord, they know what's right, they know what's wrong, they know us, they're reared in love

& righteousness & the right way & I don't think we should have to apply physical violence to our children. I would say in some cases it might go even lower than the teenagers, even down to Techi's age! She has the understanding of a teenager & the insight & the sensitivity.

4. Our kids have had such instruction & such education & such marvellous spiritual upbringing, they're far beyond the System teenagers as far as understanding is concerned!

5. So I'd say with somebody that is sensitive, you don't have to spank'm, at least not usually, there are different kinds of ways to deal with them. Our kids are so sensitive in the Spirit & so knowledgeable & with such understanding, with such mature wisdom & a desire to be good & to please, you don't usually have to strike'm! If I just point my finger at Techi she sobers up!

6. After my first family got to be as old as Davida and David, we seldom used much corporal punishment.—Except with Deborah, who was a horrible rebel from the beginning, her mother made her that way. Eve defended her and no matter what she did, she stood between us, and Deborah just could get away with anything, because her mother would justify and vindicate her and stand between us and defend her. So finally I just said, "Okay, she's your child, you take care of her, I'm not going to have anything to do with her! You made her the spoiled brat that she is, you take care of her!"—And you can see how she turned out!

7. But I think the other three turned out pretty well! They respected me & obeyed me, but when they got as old as David & Davida, if I'd just point my finger at them or say a firm word, they'd whhsst, obey like that, because they knew I meant business! Now if they had just sluffed it off & been sassy & defiantly rebellious & disobeyed after that, I would have socked them & they knew it!—No matter how young or old they were. But I didn't have to, because they heeded the first warning, because they knew that meant business!

8. So I don't think you have to use corporal punishment with these teenagers who know better! I think we're going to have to let the Family know that when we talked about giving a

few swats to kids, applying the rod, we were talking about the little tiny ones who can't understand much else!—Those who are just learning to talk, very young. Sometimes you have to give 'em a little swat or a spank on their bottom or something.—But usually not these other big kids, they know better!

9. **There are other ways you can correct them, I don't even like to use the word "punish" them.** That's what chastening means, it does not only mean punishment, it means child-training. The thing that hurts them the worst is first of all just to displease, they really don't like to displease, & next worst, to be shamed before others! To have their misdeeds brought out in the open before you is bad enough, but if they go further, to deal with them in front of others is even worse! They're terribly peer-conscious & they want to appear right & good in the eyes of their peers, their fellow children & teenagers etc.

10. **So some of you need to revise your attitude on how to correct young people if we're going to start specialising in training teenagers!** I mean by that, preteens & even our older children who are not yet preteens, but are mature enough to be treated like teenagers. Don't use force unless you have to!

---

## **DAD'S GUIDELINES FOR DISCIPLINE OF KIDS YOUNG & OLD!**

DO 2066 10/85

—Compiled & Edited by Maria from the MLs

1. **Even if you don't understand what the problem stems from, the Lord understands, & the answer is Love,** whatever the problem, & through His Love He can show you the specific solution. Love never fails.

2. **"Behold, happy is the man whom God correcteth:** therefore despise not thou the chastening of the Almighty."—Job 5:17.

3. **Communication is so important.** At times of misbehaviour it's even better if you don't just punish, but especially talk about things & give the child a chance to explain himself & talk it out. Try to find out why he's misbehaving. Young people should only be given punishment along with understanding.

4. **Be sure the rules as well as the punishment, deprivation of privileges or sentence you lay down are prayerful & Spirited & not done in anger or without prayer.**

5. **We do not put up with foolishness or rowdy, mischievous, naughty, disobedient, wilful, stubborn & rebellious behaviour in anyone.** Warnings are usually needed to give the person time to make the choice for themselves to change for the better. But if not, "The rod of correction will drive it far from him."—Pro.22:15.

6. **There's nothing wrong with disciplining in righteous anger over wrongdoing.** God does that. We should get angry over sin.

7. **Discipline must always be tempered with Love & mercy.**

8. **There is such a sin as having too much patience.** There are a lot of times you shouldn't have patience because you need to nip things in the bud & not wait too long. You need to get stirred up & angry once in awhile & you need to immediately punish disobediences & correct problem situations before they go too far.

9. **Give discipline in love as a loving parent in the right way—not too hard, not too harsh, not too heavy, not to the point of total discouragement & despair so that your child gives up & quits trying because he just can't live up to your standards.**

10. **Your long-term goal should be to encourage your children to obey out of Love & to have the conviction to know what is right & what is wrong & therefore choose to do the right thing.**

11. **Once you have actually promised sentence, you may temporarily suspend sentence & put them on probation.** But once you have said, "Now you're on probation & we've decided we're going to do thus & so with you", or whatever the sentence is, & you suspend the sentence for right now, you must tell them, "But if you don't respond to this probation & straighten out, then such-&-such will immediately occur."

12. **Each child's discipline must be tailored for his particular needs, his individual personality!** A lot depends on the child & what really gets through to him.

13. **A child not only has to love you, he's also got to fear you**

& respect you & not be allowed to get away with outright defiance.

**14. Don't be afraid to use chastisement & look on it as the rod of God in your hand, God's servant, & may you teach your children to fear you as God teaches His children—us—to fear Him!**

**15. The rod of chastisement is not wrong but it is the spirit in which it is wielded that counts.** God Himself chastises us with His rod but He does it in Love & in patience & always comforts us afterwards & tries to encourage us to keep on in spite of our mistakes.

**16. Even God's spankings are done in Love & are a proof of His Love!**

**17. I frequently scolded & applied the rod in the form of lectures, exposure in front of others, deprivation of privileges & even very occasionally, some form of corporal punishment, but I always added Love's healing balm afterwards to soothe, encourage, comfort & give hope of recovery.**

**18. God is not only a God of Love, but He is also a God of wrath & chastisement & judgement if you disobey the rules & endanger yourself, your life, our Family & the Work!**

**19. When you have to use the rod of chastisement, be sure you wield it in the right spirit.**

**20. Correction does much, but encouragement does more.** Encouragement coming after censure is the sun after a shower.

**21. You will surely reap in your children exactly what you sow, especially if you don't discipline them!**—That's your job as a parent, to train up your child in the way he should go.

**22. Children need discipline, but it must always be tempered with love and mercy.**—You always have to weigh their motives. Why did he do it? If he really had a good motive even though the action itself seemed wrong, you should forgive him.

**23. If we can't have teenagers that behave in the Family, we just won't have any teenagers!**

**24. Under the Law of Love God has even more rigidly enforced some rules, but He has relaxed some others where they're not as tough.** In your disciplining you have got to decide on what

rules must be obeyed without fail & without exception & what rules can be sometimes relaxed & exceptions made. And you have to have the wisdom of God to know the difference.—Which ones you must enforce without fail & which you can be merciful about.—When to stick to your guns & when to sometimes encourage them & agree to do things their way.

**25. You can't have teenagers without a father!** No woman can control teenage boys unless she's a real toughy! It takes a man that can really lower the boom on 'm & apply the rod & sock it to 'm if necessary.

**26. We should do with our children as God does with us:** He tries to persuade us to do things through the right loving motivation because we want to do what's right, because we love Him & we love others, not just because we're made to, forced to, or because of fear of punishment; that's the old law!

**27. But if the gentling & the persuading & the love & the reasoning & the leading & the teaching doesn't work & they're still stubbornly willfully disobedient, then you've got to crack the whip.**

**28. Be sure your first admonition is loving, gentle & prayerful & with a good reason, a cheerful warning as to why.** But if they persist, sock it to them. Do it in Love as the Lord does (Heb. 12:5-11), & if you really love them & they know it & love you they'll eventually keep your commandments. (John 14:15)—And everybody will be happier in the end.

**29. Inconsistent discipline is the worst kind of discipline!** It's not discipline at all. You have to be consistent. Be frank, be fair, be honest, be loving, but be firm & then be consistent.

**30. For a child to be trained by Love takes a lot more time & patience, but they'll be a far better child & much more obedient if they are persuaded to obey through Love, rather than by breaking their will & forcing them to obey for fear of punishment!**

**31. Try to let young people make a decision themselves to obey & be good, without threatening.** Forbear threatening if you can, although I've found it does a lot of good sometimes!—Eph.6:9.

**32. Some parents have really been tough on their young people, hard, cruel & mean, & even if they were right, the kids**

never felt any real concern, reasoning, rationalisation, explaining, or motivation, & so they never learned love, love for God, love for parents, love of others. They just never learned the right motivation. They only did it because they were made to & they would only do as much as they were made to do, whereas Love goes much further, even all the way. It'll go to the death & die for someone else, to do the right thing.

**33. Some parents break their child's stubborn will by force**, but that child will always be stubborn anyhow whenever he gets a chance. He'll only obey the law as long as the law enforcer is there, and the minute he gets out of sight of his parents he will go wild and won't know how to handle freedom or choice!

**34. The best law is Love** & along with Love comes reasoning, persuasion, explaining, teaching, the Word & all the rest so that the children can make their own decisions, because they'll stick to it far better if they decide to do it themselves because they want to do right! That'll go a lot further than only doing right because you're there to make'm!

**35. When it becomes necessary to finally enforce the law that you've given**, if after a warning & repeated counselling they go ahead & do it stubbornly, rebelliously, wilfully anyway, you finally have to lower the boom & apply the rod, as God's Word says. It's very very Scriptural, & if you don't do it you're going to be sorry.

**36. You cannot threaten judgement & then not carry it out!** Law without enforcement is no law at all. Many a time I have wished that I didn't have to enforce my own laws upon my children & I've tried to sort of get out of it. But once you let them get away with it & they find out you're not going to enforce it, then there's hell to pay because then they figure they can get away with it every time.

**37. It takes time & patience & understanding & lots of real Love to train a child**, instead of just knocking him around & violently forcing him to do things he doesn't understand or thinks are not right or unfair.

**38. One thing I couldn't tolerate was for people to be sassy & insolent & show disrespect by talking back.** Arguing is one

thing, but downright disrespectful remarks just infuriate me, & I used to really sock it to them for that!

**39. May God give you great love, patience & wisdom & also the mercy to forgive when necessary or advisable!**—Or deserved because of great repentance & Godly sorrow!

**40. The best kind of correction should be chastening or child-training**, something that will teach them something, train them & help them to learn the lesson, & help them never to make the same mistake again. I much preferred for my father to give me a good walloping so I could get it over with, than to lecture me for an hour or two. To me that was the worst correction of all, but I know I usually learned a lot more from those lectures than from the beating.

**41. When the child training, the chastening, the punishment is over, then is the time to love, to comfort, to encourage, "lest that which is lame be turned out of the way", in other words, become discouraged.**—Heb.12:13.

**42. Don't let your children get away with a deliberate wrongdoing.** You'll be sorry if you do! Don't be too harsh & severe, but after a repeated warning where you've made it very clear what you mean & they really understand what you're talking about—if they keep right on at it, wilfully, knowingly & defiantly doing it to see if you really mean it, then you've gotta show 'm you mean it!

**43. "Let your moderation be known unto all men."**—Phil.4:5. Be "temperate in all things" (1Cor.9:25), and hit a middle-of-the-road in your scoldings & deprivations of privileges & applications of the rod. Don't be too easy on them, but don't be too hard on them either. And always try to show them why & try to get their willing cooperation through understanding & reasoning, as the Lord does. Then, only after your repeated warning & their repeated wilful defiant disobediences & an absolute refusal to obey, are you justified in using loving force—as God does!

**44. Those who can't be controlled through Love have to be controlled through fear.** You have to cause children to respect you before you can get them to love you. Even the fear of God is the beginning of wisdom & if you begin to have a little wisdom

it will eventually lead you to getting smart & loving Him.

45. Be sure it's in the right spirit with the meekness & quietness of a tender, gentle, loving, & contrite heart. Be sure that you're in the right spirit as you correct them for their mistakes & their errors & their sins, even as God does us & as we would want others to do unto us for ours.—Loving & forgiving one another for Christ's sake, even as He hath forgiven us for our sins.—Eph.4:32.

46. Boy, that's one thing that they never could have accused me of, that I couldn't control my kids, even when they were big teenagers! If the situation was serious enough, I wasn't afraid to sock my sons in public if I had to. But thank God that my teenagers feared me as well as loved me! Any parent whose children don't fear him as well as love him, is no parent.—We not only love God our Father, but we fear Him! We know He won't tolerate any foolishness and won't let us get away with anything, and we can't let our kids get away with anything either!

47. I was good to my kids & I was patient & I was loving & I was kind, but if they'd acted in that kind of obstreperous rebellious absolutely devilish meanness, I would've socked the daylights out of 'm & they would've been sorry they ever had anything to do with it!

48. But thank God by the time my kids became teenagers, they rarely needed a rod anymore! They were mature adults & grown up & out of that foolishness & were serving God & preaching the Gospel & winning souls & obeying & loving me & the Lord.

49. "Whom the Lord loveth He chasteneth!"—Heb.12:6. One of the supreme forms of Love, one of the most sacrificial forms of Love, is to discipline a child, in whatever way necessary.

50. Love never fails!—If it's real Love, it won't fail even if it's applying the rod in Love. I think you should try everything else you possibly can before applying corporal punishment. But if all else fails, you just about have to whack away! What else can you do? You have to use force. God does!

51. There's a time for the rod, but not all the time, only

when after a repeated warning & repeated advice they continue to go their own way & do their own thing & pay no attention, then you can bring it in & lay it on the line.

52. If all else fails on us, God uses force, corporal punishment, the rod, sickness, accident, calamity, loss of a loved one! He won't stop at anything that's necessary to make you repent! After He's tried all the Love & the mercy & the patience & the weeping & everything else, if that doesn't do it, He'll whack away until you repent!

### THE SHOVE-OFF PROGRAM!

DO 2070 12/85

—Spend Your Vacation on the Field!



1. For some people who have big families and can't really make it on the mission field or spend too long, if they've got any kind of income or could save up toward it, I think it would be a good idea to suggest to them, "Why not be a missionary for six months?"

2. Maybe we should suggest to our people in the States & Europe, "You could go out & get a taste of the field & what it's like, so you'll always have a real burden for it & really have a heart for it! Get out there & see what the conditions are & get a real heart for the missionaries & concern for them & want to at least help them." They could save up enough to go for 3 or even 6 months.

3. If the U.S. people even go to Mexico they can see the same kind of poverty you see in the East! All you have to do is go

across the border! They can maybe even make arrangements to pay full room & board in a Reception Center, which helps the Reception Center. Maybe we could encourage them to stay for as long as they can, for as long as they've got money saved up.—Even if they could only take a month's leave from their job or a two-week vacation, or if they don't have a job or are between jobs they could go from 3 to 6 months!

4. **Although, of course, all of our people are pretty good supporters already**, we might encourage them to at least visit the field. Spend your vacation on the field! Bring greenbacks to keep it green! Pay your way, don't come expecting to sponge off the missionaries.

5. **All reception Homes as well as any others who want to cooperate in the program could send their NRO their rates & how many they have room for.** Visitors would need to book, of course, well in advance so the Home can plan their reservations. They've got time to do that months in advance. That way they get a taste of the field & a burden for it & go home & support that Home well afterwards. It's also a big blessing to the Home financially. It's kind of a burden with new people there who are unused to working under difficult conditions on the mission field, but a part of our veteran missionaries' ministry is to inspire them to do more for the mission field.

6. **Have regular reservations!** Have the Homes send in a listing of room & board rates. And make sure they have round-trip tickets & only plan to stay as long as their vacation lasts or their visa. They can choose whatever Home off the list they think they can afford. They make their request for reservation for certain dates & after hearing back send a down payment, a good advance payment as surety that they really mean business.

7. **I think it would maybe be a good program & I think it would help both missions & the visitors!** Just count them as visitors. You're not expecting them to stay or to become fulltime missionaries or start their own Homes, but they're just coming on a visit & to see the field & help out all they can & then go back to their job or home or school or whatever. (Maria: That would be great for Latin America!) (Peter: Also you can get excursion flights for 30 days or between 30 & 60 days or 3 months. Then

your return flight is very cheap.)

8. **The people in North America could go south to Mexico, Central America or South America**, depending on where they can afford to go, & the people in Europe, encourage them to come East!—Especially Commonwealthers, lots of British, Canadians also. I think it would be a good program: Spend Your Vacation on the Mission Field!

9. **We could call it the Shove-Off Program! Spend your vacation on the field!** Shove off! I just got to thinking about it when I was thinking about trying to help those people in the North who haven't been able to make it on the field, some of whom never even tried. They could be encouraged to come spend their vacation on the field & see what it's like. It amazes me how faithful & steady & reliable some of those people have been for years now in the North!

10. **It'll encourage those people to know that if they've got enough money saved up they can have a place to stay & eat & fellowship with people who know the language & everything else.** If they can't do anything else they can go out & help witness & stuff like that with somebody who does know the language. (Maria: That's the key, to have a place to stay & be welcomed, otherwise they don't have the faith to go get their own. And this program might help some who are still stuck in the North having already raised their fare & landing funds, but who still do not have promises of home support.) (Peter: And then knowing that they don't have to feel bad if they go back. They're not going to be condemned about it, like they failed!) They've already got a nice round-trip ticket & all expenses paid. We could advertise all-expense-paid vacations! You cover expenses! "How would you like an all-expense-paid vacation on the field? We'll provide the places, you pay the expenses!"

11. **I wouldn't be surprised if a few of them, having once gotten to the field, really get the burden & the faith for it & see that it's not as hard as they feared & that they can get a start!** Certainly the people who entertain them would know who's got it & who could really make it, then they could really work on them: "Why don't you try it? If you have to go back to earn enough money to get started, okay, but now you know what it's

like!"

12. I think it would be a good program! It would help both the visitors & the Homes. I would expect the most fruit to be amongst the TRFers who are still in Europe & North America.

13. I was thinking, "How can we help those people?" At least if we propose a program like that it could give them a chance, give them the vision & the burden, so even though they have to go back, they see the need & know it, how hard the field is etc., & if they can't make it, at least they can go back & support'm. If you can't be a missionary, support one! I think it'll be a real blessing to the Homes, & it will certainly be a blessing to the visitors, both ways!

14. They can come expecting to live just like a missionary, expect to help with the household chores, cooking, dishwashing, witnessing & everything else. Spend your vacation as a missionary! Be a missionary for a few weeks & live just like we do! We'll help you to be a missionary on your vacation!

15. As many Homes in North America & Europe have quite a few children, we'd like to encourage any Missionary Homes that are able to do so, to open their doors to some of the larger families. One suggestion in order to make this possible would be for any large field Homes to have some of their seasoned veterans take Postering & tapenessing road trips during the warm vacation months, to help make room for new arrivals from Europe & the U.S. that have large families of three or four or more children.

16. P.S. To Homes already raising funds to go to the Mission Field on a permanent basis, you will need to pray about what is best for you, to either participate in the Shove-Off program or finish raising funds & support for permanent missionary work.

## 17. OUTLINE OF "SHOVE-OFF" PLAN:

A. The "Shove-Off" applicants send one copy of the Applicant's Shove-Off Request Form to the highest-ranking AS of their country, requesting a brief Clearance Recommendation be sent to their CRO, & send another copy of their form to

their CRO, along with 3 sets of photos of themselves.

B. The CRO would make 3 photocopies of the Application Forms they receive, & send 1 copy (along with 1 of the sets of photos) to the NOs of each of the 3 fields that the Shove-Off applicant has shown an interest in going to. The CRO would also include his recommendation or any other helpful information about the applicant.

C. Meanwhile, the participating Missionary Homes would fill in their forms, the Shove-Off Missionary Receiving Home Form, with the necessary information about their Home, & after getting the information verified by their LAS or DAS, send their forms to their local NO.

D. As the NOs would be receiving forms from the "Shove-Off" applicants (via the CROs) & would also be receiving forms from the Missionary Receiving Homes in their own countries, they have the means to match up the requests with openings on their field.

E. The NOs would then respond to the requests from the "Shove-Off" applicants on a first-come-first-served basis, matching up Missionary Homes that have adequate housing available with "Shove-Off" applicants that have the correct amount of money available to spend. If there are no Missionary Homes available within the NO's area (for example, to house a very large family, or if there are no Missionary Homes available to house people with an exceptionally low budget), the NOs will write to the "Shove-Off" applicants explaining that there are no openings on their particular field, & suggesting they consider the other two areas the home field Home is interested in. This correspondence from the NOs on the field to the "Shove-Off" applicants would be sent via the CROs of the home field Home.

F. If the chosen mission field does have an opening, the NO sends a letter of confirmation of clearance & acceptance to the "Shove-Off" applicant (via the home field CRO), confirming the dates available & giving the city the Missionary Home is in, & suggesting they go ahead & book their tickets, & send 10% of their funds to their home field CRO, along with a photocopy of their return tickets. This would be done a minimum of 6 weeks before the departure date.

G. The "Shove-Off" applicant would also be given a GP address in the NO's city to which he should send a telegram informing the NOs exactly when he'd be arriving. The NO would then pass the info on to the Missionary Home, who would make the necessary preparations to meet, receive & accommodate the guests. (The NOs would have already passed on the Request Form & photos to that field Home, & gotten an acceptance of this new team from the Missionary Home itself.)

H. When the CRO receives the 10% payment, along with the photocopy of the guests' return tickets, he would release the funds to the NO of the chosen mission field & would send the photocopy of the round-trip ticket to the NO. This forwarding of the money & ticket copy should be accomplished at least 4 weeks in advance of departure by the "Shove-Off" applicant.

I. The "Shove-Off" applicant would inform the CRO to put their mailings on HOLD until they return from their missionary vacation! (For the ROs: As the CROs would be receiving no reports or funds from these Homes while they are on the field, & because the field Homes would report them as visitors on their reports, the home field CROs will continue to add in the "Shove-Off" applicants' population stats on their monthly reports.)

J. The responsibility of meeting & taking care of the new arrivals would be given to the participating local Home, as the NO has taken care of much of the preliminary details. Happy vacation for the Lord! WLY!

---

**FIGHT FOR YOUR HEALING!**—By Maria 9/85  
—Lesson on Fighting & Prayer for Maria's Sore Eyes! DO 2072

#### AFFLICTIONS—OUR MOST FREQUENT BATTLES IN LIFE!

1. It's the job of a leader, as Peter & Sara know, & as Grandpa has taught us, not only to confess our own problems & get the victory, but to try to help other people get a lesson out of it as an example! We can't just do it privately & in a



corner. We don't only have to get a victory ourselves, but we're responsible to make our problems an example for other people, & when we get the victory, we're responsible to tell you about it & to tell you how to get the victory. I haven't exactly gotten the complete victory yet, but by faith I have! So I want to share it with you & help you to also be able to know how to get the victory if you are sick, or if you have to pray for somebody else, that you'll know how to pray for them & you'll know what to do.

2. Some of our biggest battles in life are our physical afflictions. It's almost more frequent & common to have physical afflictions than it is to have spiritual afflictions. Of course, we always have ongoing spiritual battles & we're always gaining victories, & we're always progressing in our spiritual lives. If I were to ask, "Who has had some spiritual battles this week?", maybe you'd all say you had spiritual battles as well as the physical battles we all suffered! But a lot of times the physical things seem more bothersome & are more difficult to get the victory over than the spiritual ones!—And get you more down & discouraged. It's a little more difficult to know how to attack them sometimes & what the Lord is trying to teach you through them.

#### HOW THE ENEMY USES SICKNESS!

3. Physical afflictions are really stubborn & you get them over & over & over. You get healed of one & you get another! Why do you think that is? (Fam: To keep you dependent on the

Lord. To keep you humble.)—Yes, both, to keep you dependent on the Lord & keep you humble & keep you sympathising with other people. (Fam: To keep you in the Word & close to the Lord!)—Right! Actually, there are about 30 reasons why you get sick listed in the Kidz MOP! (See Kidz MOP Vol. 2, Pgs.588-601)

**4. Did you ever stop to think why maybe the Enemy uses illnesses & sickness to attack many of us sometimes even more than things like jealousy, selfishness & pride? Number one, you usually become discouraged when you're sick.**

**5. Not only do you get discouraged, but it can make you irritable with other people**, so it doesn't help your relationship with others much. If you adults have, for example, a bad headache or an actual sickness where you're down in bed & you can't do anything, then you have to neglect your children or your husband or wife. So you not only get discouraged about the sickness itself, but you get off guard & you get weakened to the point where you become irritable, upset, sharp with others. See, a physical attack is usually double-barrelled, with a spiritual attack at the same time.

**6. The Devil attacks us with these physical afflictions because through it he can try to get us discouraged & get us down, but there's a greater victory in it, much greater than the Enemy's discouragement!** The Enemy thinks he's really going to get us with it, but the Lord brings a victory out of seeming defeat!

**7. Some of the people that have been the sickest & have had the most problems have grown the closest to the Lord**, because they've learned from it & accepted that those things are to draw them closer to the Lord.—Not that they exactly accepted the illnesses, they need to fight those, but they've accepted that even though the Devil brought it to them, in a way, the Lord allowed it for a reason, for His reason, a good reason, not a bad one.

### **REBUKE THE ENEMY!**

**8. Look how many times Grandpa said this in his prayer for me: "Rebuke the Enemy! Rebuke the Enemy! Rebuke the**

Enemy! We rebuke you, Satan! We resist you, Satan! Resist the Enemy & he will flee from you! Resist the Enemy! Rebuke, Lord, these afflictions! Rebuke this thing in the Name of Jesus! Rebuke this affliction! We resist you, Satan! We rebuke this affliction! Why don't you get the victory?" Well, that's not exactly saying the same thing as "fight", but in a way it is because to get the victory you have to have the battle! You have to fight in order to get the victory, so that's the result. So Grandpa in a way right there is saying, "Why don't you fight & get the victory?" Victory denotes fighting, because you can't have a victory without a fight!—Right?—Without a battle! Let's see where else he said something like that. \*(See full Letter, para.19-38)

**9. "Will you please get the victory? Are you going to claim the victory? Are you going to rebuke the Devil? Do you rebuke Oplexicon? Do you rebuke the Devil? Resist the Enemy! Rebuke them, all the devils!"** He said, "I'm getting the victory over them. Rebuke the Devil, resist the Enemy! Rebuke it! Fight! Fight, Team, fight! He's fighting you, you've got to rebuke him & fight! Sit down, look at that paper & fight! Rebuke the Devil who is trying to blind you, in Jesus' name! Trust the Lord! Why don't you rebuke the Devil? Claim the promises!"

**10. That's another thing, claiming the Promises!** You're resisting the doubts of the Enemy and the lies of the Enemy when you claim the Lord's Truth in His promises, so that's fighting too. "Quote Scriptures against the Devil, come against him," that's fighting him too. "Lord rebuke this devilish sickness!" That's about it, but that's only half of it all. Grandpa just kept repeating it over and over. He really wanted me to get the point!

**11. Grandpa made it clear my sore eyes are an attack of the Devil**, even though the problem may have come through a physical channel, through my not treating my eyes properly. Do you think most of our sicknesses & illnesses & diseases are attacks of the Enemy? Well, either they're direct attacks or they are used by him to hinder us. So we know they're of the Enemy one way or the other because they hinder the Lord's Work, & we know they're not of God & they're not of the Lord if they do that. We know they're of the Enemy & they're not of the Lord & they need to be rebuked & fought against if they hinder the

Work.

## FIGHT FOR YOUR HEALING!

**12. The Lord's healing is there just as much as it always was & it always is,** but the Enemy is really fighting us very hard, fighting against the Lord's healing. Remember that Letter "Difficulty in Spiritual Communications"? (#1846) Dad said he's going to come back & help us, but there's that hindrance there, that force, the Enemy fighting. The Lord said it & we believe it, but we're going to have to fight for our healing! It's there, & it's not that the Lord won't do it, He wants to do it & He's going to do it, but we've got to get over that barrier & really fight the battle in the Spirit & not just be lethargic!

**13. It's not enough just to claim & quote the Scriptures!** Grandpa said to quote the Scriptures & claim the Scriptures, but he also said you've got to do more than that. He said fight! Resist! Rebuke the Enemy! So that's a big part of our healing. He said all this before. This isn't anything new, but the more I think about it the more I see that in some cases just believing is not enough. Sometimes it's enough, like with little tiny things that don't bother us much, we just claim a verse & thank the Lord, & that's enough. But in some of these difficult cases & big cases, we've got to really fight the Enemy! Jesus made a difference in cases when He said, "This kind cometh not out but by fasting & prayer."—Mat.17:21. In other words, some required more effort than others.

**14. Sometimes it's a big spiritual attack!**—I'll just take my own eyes for example: I have a very important job & there are some things I have to do that nobody else can do, so if I don't have my eyes those jobs just don't get done.

**15. So it's a real attack of the Enemy & we have to rebuke it, not just go to bed!** In "The Power of Positive Praise" (#1375) I came to the conclusion that going to bed wasn't going to help my headache. If it is a spiritual battle, just going to bed isn't the cure, even though there are times when if you have a headache from tiredness or overdoing, going to bed is probably part of what you need & it'll help. But if it's a real attack of the Enemy, no

matter what you do it isn't going to get you the complete victory unless you really fight the Enemy & rebuke the Devil & get the victory over him! Sometimes taking an aspirin may help my headache temporarily, but to get a real lasting victory over headaches I need to really pray & rebuke the Enemy & claim the Lord's victory!

## DON'T BE LAZY!—STIR YOURSELF UP!

**16. We can't be lethargic & lazy!** That's my tendency! It's a natural tendency to be lazy & lethargic & to do sort of the minimum that you have to do. I dare say that most of us are like that, it's sort of human nature.—But not everybody is like that! I'd say Dad is far from that way & there are a lot of other people that aren't. But the majority of us usually take the easy way out & we are normally a little lazy & lethargic & we don't want to get into too many fights, it's too much of a problem, it takes too much out of us. So we just sort of sit back & say a little prayer & let things go on until they get so desperate that we've gotta fight & there's nothing else to do!

**17. Like Dad said, every swallow for him is a fight!** He's got to fight constantly! You have to fight constantly with the Word! It's not enough to just read the promises over & say, "Okay, Lord, I know I can be healed. Look, everybody else has been healed, & of course You're going to heal me. I ask forgiveness for my sins & I know I'm going to be healed." Do you understand the difference? In a way that's fighting, you're claiming the Scriptures, that's what you're supposed to do, that's one part of it, but that's not enough to win the battle! You've got to really be militant about it & aggressive & really sock it to the Enemy!

**18. Tell the Enemy, "The Lord healeth all our diseases"** (Psa.103:3), but you are the culprit & you get out of here! I don't want anything more to do with you & I resist you, Satan, in Jesus' name! It's not enough just to look at the verses on healing & quote them, "Who healeth all our diseases, lay hands on the sick & they shall be healed, by His stripes we are healed"—fine, we are, that's true—but we've got to also on the other hand

sock it to the Enemy & overcome that barrier that the Enemy is trying to put in our path to keep us from appropriating that spiritual blessing & that healing.

### **STUBBORN SPIRITUAL CASES TAKE MORE FIGHT & EFFORT!**

**19. There's a difference! Some healings & deliverances come out pretty easily & we get our problems taken care of pretty easily, but others take a lot more.** Remember how many times we had to pray for Magdalene? We had to pray three times for her & I think we got rid of a few more devils every time! Some of these things just take real fasting & prayer, a real concerted effort & real perseverance. They aren't all so easy & there are different degrees, so we can't treat every problem the same, demons & devils or spiritual or physical afflictions, whatever they are.

**20. There are different conditions for different people.** Some people's afflictions and sicknesses are actually because they've really been bad. For instance, in "Are You Deaf?" (ML# 1040) the Lord was trying to show the parents that the problem was because they were a bad problem and a bad influence. In other cases it's not because they have a big spiritual problem, it's more of a real outside attack to hinder the Work.

**21. So we really need to go on the attack and remember, that especially nowadays when the Enemy is really fighting us hard, we're going to have to really fight back and really stir ourselves up to really want the victory!** It's not just a matter of saying a little prayer, but it's stirring up our spirits, stirring up ourselves, asking the Lord to make us desperate to get the victory, to want to fight! You can say the words, but with spiritual problems and spiritual battles you have to continually have that attitude of desperation, of a stirred-up spirit on the attack. We have to have that attitude in our heart!—Not just come here and shout at the Enemy, which is a good thing to do and we'd better do that, but we've got to really feel it and continually be on the attack against our lethargy. (See Jer.29:13; Isa.64:7)

**22. We've got to stir ourselves up, we can't be lazy &**

lethargic any more because we're in an army! This thing about fighting & rebuking the Enemy, this is what armies do, they fight! And we should actually have much more the attitude of an army! I think it's good to call ourselves an army, to keep that in front of us, to keep reminding ourselves that it is a fight & we've got to "endure hardness as good soldiers", we've got to "fight the good fight", "the weapons of our warfare are not carnal", "earnestly contend for the faith!"—2Tim.2:3; 1Tim.6:12; 2Cor.10: 4-5; Jude 3.

### **DAD IS A FIGHTER!**

**23. A revolution is a total change from one government or political or religious system to another, & sometimes changing it takes armed conflict, war, fight!** We've had to fight to have this revolution & we're still having to fight to keep it a revolution, & to keep changing. And that's what makes Grandpa & our movement different than any of the other movements. So do you see how important fighting is & what the Lord thinks of it? We wouldn't even have the Family or the Revolution today if Grandpa hadn't been a fighter & started it & continued to keep it going. We'd just be another denomination or youth group or church organisation.

**24. So you see why the Lord evidently thinks pretty highly of fighters.** There are very few of them in the World! The majority of people just aren't fighters, even most of us aren't fighters normally, that's not our natural tendency. But we have to learn to be, because it's so important to the Lord. That's what the Lord wants in an army, in this movement. He doesn't have the potential for such a strong army of fighters anywhere else in the World, so we've gotta be His fighters! That's what He's trying to make of us, although it's really hard. I've prayed that He would make me one, but I need to pray it more!—Not only me, but all of us! We need to really stir ourselves up in everything, not only in healing, but in everything we need to be fighters!

**25. We're an Army & a Revolution! Dad called us a Revolution & the Lord confirmed it, & the Lord calls His**

people an Army & soldiers in the Bible. That's what He would like them to be & that's what they're supposed to be, but there are very few Christians that are real soldiers in His Army! Where are they? So the Lord's counting on us to be the soldiers by even naming us a Revolution, even naming us an Army!

HE'LL BE DISCOURTED IF WE'RE NOT FIGHTERS!

LEAD ME TO THAT STANDARD A LITTLE

### IT TAKES EFFORT!—MORE CREDIT FOR OVERCOMING!

26. If there's something that's difficult for you & you do it anyway, the Lord's going to give you even more credit for it than somebody who just likes to do it & for whom it's not difficult! Of course in a way it's difficult for all of us fighting the Enemy, but I'm just saying some people naturally like to do one thing & other people don't. So it's harder for them & when they do get the victory the Lord really gives them more credit in that particular area than the one who is sort of created to be that way & likes to do that.

27. It says that "Jesus endured such contradiction of sinners against Himself, so be not weary & faint in your minds."—Heb.12:3. Grandpa got that verse for me one time. Jesus endured contradiction against Himself, "but ye have not yet resisted unto blood."—Heb.12:4.—Resisting unto blood! We haven't fought the battle like Jesus did. But we're at least supposed to be strong & not faint in our mind, not be weary in well doing! "I have fought a good fight", "ye endured a great fight", "strong, waxed valiant in fight", "so fight I, not as one that beateth the air", "whatsoever thou shalt bind on Earth shall be bound in Heaven." Don't tell me that's not a fight! I mean, that's something that you really have to put a lot of effort into & really get all the forces of the Lord on your side. "And they overcame them by the blood of the Lamb & by the word of their testimony!"—Rev.12:4.—They overcame! That is a war too, that's a fight! "The spirit of a man sustaineth him", in other words a fighting spirit, one that's alive, one that's ready to go on the attack!—Pro.18:14. "If thou faint in the day of adversity, thy strength is small."—Pro. 24:10.

28. There's a good quote in the MOP that says he who at-

tacks us or persecutes us, helps us! Our adversary makes us strong, & in fighting the battles we get strong, our prayer & our faith muscles get used & get strengthened. (MOP 38:22) So don't be afraid of the fight! But most of us aren't so worried about being afraid, we just need some more umph, we need more of an attitude of fight. We're not so afraid, we just need to stir ourselves up & get on the attack—in everything! I don't just mean healing or spiritual battles, but in our everyday life & in everything we do we need to have enthusiasm & inspiration & put effort into it, be aggressive!

### FIGHT THE GOOD FIGHT!

29. Grandpa says: "I love to fight, because I know I'm fighting for the One that's worth fighting for & the souls that are worth winning & the goals that are worth attaining!" (MOP 38:1)—That should be our prayer, that we get to the point where we love to fight, we love to put forth the effort, we love to teach others, instruct others & fight the Enemy!

30. So even though fighting the Devil is hard work, if you love the battle & ask the Lord to give you that fighting spirit, then it's not going to be such an "Oh what a weariness, another fight with the Devil!" You're going to be challenged & you're going to love to do it! You can love to do it because you know you're going to win the victory!

31. We know we have all the Lord's power on our side & we'll always get the victory over the Enemy! So we can always love to fight because even though we get a little bruised & battered in the process, we're going to win, & we're going to have a victory!—Not only a personal victory for us, but a victory for the Lord's Work & for others. So it's a good motivation for fighting!—Right? AMEN!!

32. The Lord doesn't want us to fear the battles or think, "Oh dear, not another battle!" He wants us to enjoy them! Of course, He doesn't want us to desire to have conflicts just so we can have a battle, but because we know there are always going to be battles coming He wants us to be challenged in fighting them & full of faith because we know we're going to get the victory!

So let's get on with it, let's have the spirit to win the battle!

### MORE IMPORTANT THAN BEING A FAMILY IS BEING A REVOLUTIONARY ARMY!

33. We're a Family, yes, but we need to be a fighting Family! We need to keep in mind that it's more important to be a fighter even than a Family, because if our Family quits fighting it's not going to be a Family very long!

34. A Revolution & an Army take real work, real struggle! You've got to keep your place, you've got to be a real soldier if you're going to be able to stay in the army, you've got to be a real team & everybody's gotta pull their weight!—And if you don't, out you go! You've got to hold fast that which thou hast. (See Rev.3:11.) I thought that was a real good parallel which Ho brought out in one of his articles, that it's important to look at the Revolution, which is what we started with. We became a Family later. When our couples got mated they had children & we were more a Family, but we started out as a Revolution & we've never changed from being a Revolution & an Army. We've always been that. That's even more important than being a Family, to keep in mind what our job is & what we're here for & what we're supposed to be doing. The Family is more our sample to the World. The Revolutionary Army is our vocation & job for the Lord! (See FSM 25)

35. I think fighting is the main point that the Lord's trying to get through to me about. I preached a pretty good sermon to myself, & to you in the process!—That we really need to fight & we really need to stir ourselves up, not only with healing but in everything else. Of course, then you have more battles, but you get stronger every time you fight them!

### WHY RECURRING AFFLICTI ON THE ATTAK IS THE IMPORTANT PART. OR YOU CAN MAKE IT TO "WHY RECURRING AFFLICTI

36. I also wanted to tell you about herpes. I really think you here who have prayed for deliverance have been healed. Now this is not to say that I think everybody in the Family who has prayed to be healed of herpes but still has attacks has been healed. But

you who have done everything you could & you really confessed & progressed, & your problems that the herpes may have been a physical manifestation of are gone & you've taken care of them, then you have a right to claim your healing. You really did get the victory over the things that the Lord was dealing with you about when you had such bad cases of herpes. You did really get healed & you also got spiritually healed at the same time. You made progress & you got some of these things taken care of that the Lord was dealing with you about.

37. Occasionally you have recurring symptoms, but you shouldn't minimise your healing! I think there's a reason the Lord lets those things recur sometimes, or even some little symptoms hang around, & it's not because you haven't been healed!

38. It's not always just for humbling, sometimes it may be sort of a monitor to keep you desperate, to catch you up & say, "Okay, watch it!"—Sort of like a warning bell! Maybe it's not only for humbling, but as a warning, sort of a monitor or to keep you desperate & close to the Lord. This doesn't just apply to herpes, it applies to everything! So you see, that's pretty smart of the Lord! He doesn't let you have anything permanently that will distract you from your work or keep your work from going. That's good efficiency! The Lord really has things under control & He knows what's going to really keep you in line without hurting your work or others or anything like that.

39. If sometimes you don't get completely healed—maybe your hair falls out & the Lord heals you & brings it all in again but leaves a little bald spot—you don't say you're not healed! You're healed & obviously the Lord did a miracle, but maybe He just wants you to remember that! But you would never say you weren't healed. You've got to keep claiming the victory!

40. But I think in these recurring things that if you're really on the right track & your heart's really right with the Lord, that you ought to search further for a reason & not think it's because the Lord didn't heal you or because you're necessarily doing something wrong.—You could be, I don't know! You've got to know in your own heart. But you've got to accept your healing & know you were healed! Everybody does some things wrong

occasionally, but if you can't find anything wrong, any specific thing that the Lord's dealing with you about at the moment, then I think you could look for another reason why the Lord allowed it, maybe to keep you humble or to keep you in tune & in touch with Him! So I think that's something that we ought to think about & reflect on to see why it is.

41. We say the Lord delivers us out of all our afflictions, all, all, all, every affliction! Well that's true, but I don't think the Lord is going to deliver us out of everything entirely in every case until we get our new bodies! It's a promise, but I don't think the promise is always for the present.—In most cases it is. In most cases the Lord "delivers you out of them all" one at a time. He delivers you out of one & then you get another, & the Lord delivers you from that, He keeps delivering you!

42. But people like Fanny Crosby & Helen Keller & other great people of the Lord, the Lord didn't deliver them from their afflictions until they went to be with Him! So in some cases the Lord allows some afflictions. You could accuse them of not having enough faith, but I don't believe that. Fanny Crosby was a woman of great faith, Helen Keller too, as well as many many Christians down through the ages. So I think it was for some other reason. If they hadn't been blind they never would have accomplished what they did. So there are a lot of different reasons sometimes why the Lord allows some afflictions to hang on or maybe even be permanent.

43. Dad gave me that verse, "Whom the Son shall set free is free indeed".—Jn.8:36. The Lord really frees us from some of these things! If we're bound or chained by the Enemy, the Lord has got to free us! PTL! Well, maybe you could lay hands on me now & pray for the Lord to heal me.

## HOW TO GO ON THE ATTACK!

—Quote Scripture, Pray, Praise & Sing!

DO 2128 11/85

1. (Maria: For the first few days following the prayer for my healing (See ML 2072), my eye condition stayed the same, then gradually cleared up completely to where my eyes were to-



fighting the Enemy & getting the victory.)

++++++

2. There's something about saying things out loud. It is a testimony to yourself & to the multitude of witnesses that surround us! It's not enough to just say it in your head, you need to say it out loud, quote Scriptures & rebuke the Devil & praise the Lord! That's why my Mother used to say, "Words are real things", & you need to say them. Words can curse or words can save. "By thy words art thou justified or by thy words thou art condemned!"—Mat.12:36,37. You have to give an account of your words.

3. Words are very important! You need to use them! The Lord hears them & the Heavenly hosts hear them & you hear them & the Devil hears them. It is very important that you use the words, even if you can only whisper them. (Maria: Then it's not as effective if you just say them in your head without using your mouth?)—No, it doesn't seem to have the same power for some reason or another.

4. Give no place to the Evil One!—Eph.4:27. If you get so

tally back to normal for the first time in months.—A real miracle of the Lord's healing! But after a while I began to have problems again. The Lord had answered & done the work, but He still had more to teach us. And again, He spoke through Dad with further counsel on

busy quoting Scripture & praising the Lord & rebuking the Devil, you won't have so much time to think about your headache. "Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace whose mind is stayed on Thee because he trusteth in Thee." (Isa.26:3) If your mind is centered on the Lord & stayed on Him then He is the One you are thinking about & you can't think about both things at once.

**5. So keep thinking about the Lord & praising the Lord & quoting Scriptures & praying out loud.** That takes concentration, you have to think about it, you have to keep your mind on the Lord & your mind on the Scripture & on your praises, even sing! The Devil hates song because it's praise to the Lord. You've just got to keep at it, really work at it! It's a testimony even to the Lord that you are really trusting Him, that you really have faith in His Word.

**6. As long as you keep thinking about your headache & concentrating on your headache, then it's your headache you'll have!** But if you get your mind on something else, it won't be as bad.

**7. I think that's why your headaches get so bad at night, you're not working, you're not reading & all you can think about is your headache.** But you need to get your mind off it & rebuke it & praise the Lord! Sing, quote Scriptures & really go on the attack!

**8. But there is just something about saying the words that really crystallises your resistance & causes the devils to flee!** They hate to hear the Word. Besides, if others are listening it is a declaration to them that you are trusting the Lord, that you have faith in His Word. It's a testimony & a witness to them, it even encourages them to know that you're really trusting the Lord & have faith in His Word & you really believe those Scriptures & just keep quoting them even if you can only whisper them.

**9. It takes more concentration & it occupies more of your mind & your consciousness if you have to say it out loud, quote it out loud & praise the Lord out loud! Rebuke the Devil out loud!** He has to obey. "Resist the Devil & he will flee from you!"—Jam.4:7. Quiet faith is fine but it is not enough of a real attack, a real fight!

**10. You've really got to do it out loud, the louder the better!** (Maria: Does that really make a difference?—The louder the better?)—Yes! The more people that hear you the better! It's good for them. It encourages their faith & lets them know that you're declaring that you're trusting the Lord instead of just moping around & suffering in silence.

**11. You need to go on the attack! Be positive & show that you have faith in the Word, faith in the Lord, faith in praise, a sign that you really trust & you really believe.** It's like a declaration of faith. And when your mind is occupied with that, you can't be occupied with your suffering & your pain.

**12. There is power in the Word! There is absolute power in the Words!** You really need to say it with your mouth. "Thou shalt confess with thy mouth that Christ is Lord." —Rom.10:9. "With my mouth will I make known Thy faithfulness unto all generations." —Psa.89:1.

**13. I never saw my Mother get the victory just by thinking the words or thinking prayer.** You can do that too under some circumstances, but when you're having a real battle with the Devil or sickness or headache or something, you've got to say it out loud, you've got to go on the attack & really fill your mind & heart & your mouth with declarations of faith & praise & prayer & Scriptures—the Word! You have to use your mouth to say the Word. Words are things that you have in your mouth made by your mouth. You've got to use your mouth & then that becomes not only a testimony to yourself but to others as well.

**14. There are a great cloud of witnesses who are always watching us, trying to help us, but you need to declare your faith openly & loud enough at least that you can hear it yourself.** —Heb.12:1. It'll keep your mind & your mouth occupied with the Word & with prayer & praise & with attacks on the Enemy. It really helps to occupy your mind & your heart & especially your mouth, as well as your spirit. It will do you a lot of good!

**15. You've just got to get busy, you've got to say it, you've got to word it, put it into words & say it out loud & really rebuke the Devil & declare your faith & show your trust in the Word by quoting it out loud.** Even though nobody can hear you

but yourself, it will do you a lot of good. "By thy words shalt thou be justified & by thy words shalt thou be condemned."—Mat.12:37.

16. Now you need to open your mouth, Honey, & let the Lord fill it with whatever He wants to give you. Pray in tongues as well & the Lord could give you interpretations to encourage you. You've got to do it out loud! Forget this suffering in silence business. I know in bed here you are trying to keep from waking me up, but you've got to do it somehow. Either whisper to yourself or go in the next room & do it.

17. Boy, when I got up early some mornings, if I didn't go in my little cubicle & pray & praise the Lord out loud, I don't think I could make it! I mean it does me good just to hear my own voice quoting Scripture & praying & praising the Lord even if it is only in a whisper. It just takes a lot of concentration to say it with your mouth & use your tongue & the Devil has a hard time getting past that.

18. When it comes to the Devil, words are sort of like bullets or death rays or something & they just blast the Devil! Every word just zaps him! They're part of our offensive weaponry, the Word! It describes the armour of a Christian—it says the sword of the Spirit is the Word! —Eph.6:10-17. It's sharper than any two-edged sword.—Heb.4:12.

19. If you were quoting Scriptures & praising the Lord & praying & talking in tongues I'd know you were really on the attack! It would even encourage me. But when you have these headaches & just sort of go silent, you just sort of freeze up. (Maria: I always thought that that kind of thing would be drawing attention to yourself & asking everybody to concentrate on your sickness.)—Good!

20. Let them concentrate on it! Let them pray & praise the Lord with you, quote Scriptures & stand with you in faith. Then they'd know you need prayer, they'd know you need help. "One can chase a thousand, but two can put ten thousand to flight!"—Deut.32:30. You really need to do it out loud & go on the attack & let others know that you are attacking, that you're not just suffering in silence.

21. Doing it out loud really focuses your attention on what

you're doing & what you're saying, & you're not only using your mouth & your tongue, which takes concentration, but your ears are busy listening so your consciousness is almost fully occupied with what you're saying & you can't think so much about your pain or your problems or worries or whatever. Don't submit to the Devil! He gets you on the run where you're just thinking about nothing but your headache & that's the worst thing in the World you could do!

22. You need to declare your faith & just fling it in the face of the Devil! Just throw fiery darts of Scriptures at him out loud in prayer & praise! He hates that because it is a testimony to you even if you're all alone. And if there are others present, it is a testimony to them. It is a declaration that you are trusting the Lord & that you have faith in the Word, & you need to use your own words as well as God's Words. Amen? (Maria: Amen! Thank You Jesus! That's right!)

23. If you're not doing that & you're thinking about how your head aches & you're thinking about how your eyes ache, & he is telling you all kinds of lies about how this is caused by this & that, you're always going to have this, & blah, blah, as long as you're quiet & silent, he can really talk to you! I ought to know, I've been through it plenty. You need to just go on the attack & be positive & say things out loud against the Devil.

24. Quote Scriptures & sing & pray & praise the Lord & talk in tongues & keep your mouth busy & your mind busy & it keeps your ears busy too. And it's just like a vicious cycle against the Devil & it's a saving cycle for you! Just keep it in circulation. Keep it going! Say it and hear it and think it and say it & hear it & think it, & say it & hear it & think it & keep it going!

25. He just talks up that pain & aggravates it & the more you concentrate your mind & your heart on your pain & your headache & your eyeache & your backache or whatever it is, the more it magnifies it, aggravates it & the more he makes you think about it. But if you'll keep your mind & your mouth & your heart & your ears busy with the Word, you just haven't got time to listen to the Devil or even feel his pain! Just rebuke it & rebuke him & do it out loud, & quote Scriptures & sing, pray, praise,

talk in tongues, anything to keep your mind & heart & your mouth & your ears & your eyes busy!

26. Just out-talk him! Drown him out, because you can't be thinking about two things at once. You can't be thinking about both of them. You can't be concentrating & thinking & worrying about your pain or your problems while your mind, heart & spirit, mouth, tongue, ears & eyes & everything are busy with the Word. Even if you don't know much Scripture to quote, then just read it, but read it out loud.

27. There is just something about saying words out loud that seems to be much more effective than mere thoughts. The Lord said to Isaiah, "Command thou Me!"—Isa.45:11. He meant for him to put it into words, to tell Him what to do.

28. A lot of times that's why I get up early in the morning instead of lying here silently in bed thinking about all the things I ought to be doing & about all my problems & worries & what-not. I get up & I do something! That's another thing, keep active, keep busy, what they call "work therapy", & keep your hands busy if you can't do anything else. But all the time be talking to the Lord & praising.—Talking in tongues, praying, quoting Scriptures & singing!

29. If you can keep your actual physical body busy with the Word, including your tongue & your mouth & your eyes & your ears & your thoughts & everything, then you won't have time to think about your problems! You won't have time to think about your worries or your pains if you're concentrating on the Lord. And He promised, "Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace whose mind is stayed on Thee."—Isa.26:3.

30. If your mind is busy, it makes you forget other things! It pushes everything else out of your head. When you're talking you can't think of anything else but what you're saying. So say it!—Amen?

## CHOICES WITHIN GOD'S WILL!

DO 2157 5/80

1. There's a certain leeway & allowance for variation of choice in the Will of God as long as it stays within certain



boundaries & as long as it doesn't go too far right or too far left. He may let you wander around quite a bit according to your own personal choice, here or there, as long as you stay in the correct

general area. As long as you stay within the tunnel of God's Will, He'll give you your choice. Of course, there's always the best even within the tunnel, and the worst, so He leaves that choice up to you.

2. It shows you how God must feel! I really enjoy & I get a big kick out of watching Baby Techi to see what choices she will make & what she will do. It's really interesting! After all, as long as it's not bad for her, so long as it's not going to hurt her, I like to let her do whatever she feels like doing!

3. Like my offering her two crackers, I was really interested to see which one she'd take—she took 'm both! Well, you can't always have your cake & eat it too! We did find out eventually that she did like the salty cracker even better than the sweet. She'll come in here & she'll get interested in this thing or that thing, & sometimes you have to distract her away from something that's not good for her with something that is good for her!

4. But it's a very fascinating game to watch what a child will do within certain boundaries of safety & health & what's good for them, & I imagine it must be a little bit the way God feels! He put us here on Earth & He gave us a choice—a lot of choices! I mean, Adam & Eve probably could have eaten from 1999 different trees in the Garden besides that one! They didn't have to eat of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good & Evil. They had a lot of choice, a lot of variety to choose from, right? So the Lord is not unreasonable & I don't think He's too narrow-minded

or too strict. He's been awful good to us!

5. So right now in trying to find God's Will, I'm just doing a little bit like I've seen & heard my Mother do many times: Sometimes you may not know by the open doors, you just sort of get knocked around by the closed doors, the slammed doors, & then you know which way you have to go! You don't have much else left to do!—Amen?

## IT'S CRASHING!—Are You Ready? —Here Are Some Survival Tips!

DO 2230 9/86



World! So they should have gotten their money out of the bank before this, or they've already lost it! And if they haven't already lost it by now, they'd better get it out or they're gonna lose it, because there'll be more banks closing!

2. So the best thing our Family can do is make sure they don't lose what little funds or reserves that they have, especially to the banks or any kind of investments. Try to have some

420

cash & gold or some form of commodity they can trade or something on hand so they can at least have a little money to buy food, & hopefully have their rent paid up in advance so they don't have to worry about that. Thank God, in many of the countries where the Family are living they make you pay your rent one or two years in advance. So a lot of our people will have their rent paid, thank God, & they will simply need money for food.

3. But the Lord has promised to take care of His Own, & as the Lord has shown us & we've even seen in dreams & whatnot, the poor that we have helped & the people that we have helped & won & have made friends of, we will then be cared for by them! (Maria: But if these friends aren't little farmers out in the fields in the boondocks, they're going to have the same problem, aren't they?) If they have been wise & they had savings & some kind of money tucked away in a sock under their mattress or something, they might have enough tucked away, if it's not in a bank that closed, that they could survive for the duration. If they were wise ... & we're supposed to be advising those people to do that kind of thing!—To get their money out of the banks & tuck it away somewhere, hide it, because it's going to be worth more & more!

4. But in a way the poor will be better off than the rich! Because the poor of the poorer cultures & countries of the World, the Third World etc., are already mostly living on the land, already feeding themselves, as well as others! TTL! So one of the best assets you can have in a case like that is friends & relatives who have at least something to eat & can share with you.

5. But the Lord takes care of His Own, amen? He never fails & the Lord will always take care of us somehow. Of course, those who have saved up even a little bit of money, a little bit of gold or something, a little fund to tide 'm over, are going to survive a little bit better than the people that didn't.

6. We don't have all the answers for all those problems of the future, & we don't have to know 'm yet! "Fret not thyself for tomorrow, sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof!"—Mat.6:34. I'm just saying that if they have a little bit of reserve funds, they will be in a better position to survive for a few months of the worst or whatever it is until some kind of salvation comes

421

along, even the Antichrist System. If they've done what we told them to do, they should be able to survive for awhile. When it comes to the point where they've got to walk out into the country to try to make friends with the farmers & get something to eat, I'm sure all those little children will touch the hearts even of the farmers! PTL!

7. We don't want to worry or need to worry too much about it, because when the time comes the Lord will solve it! But I think we should try to prepare as much as we can for what we know is coming. (Maria: Even if they have survival food, that will keep them going for awhile.)—Right! But that's what we know is coming, because that's the way it has happened before & that's the way it's happening now!

8. Each one just needs to have whatever they can on hand as best they can, as much as they can, in both food & necessities & hopefully a little bit of cash reserves, gold reserves or whatever. It's going to be worth a lot when the Crash comes & the bottom falls out of the prices etc. so that everything gets cheaper. What little they have is going to be worth a lot more & they'll be able to survive on it for awhile at least, Lord willing, & I'm sure the Lord is willing! So we don't need to worry too much about it.

9. (Maria: But if they had to use their reserve for desperate needs such as helping other Family members get to the field, for example.—I'm sure that because they've been unselfish & given to others that even though they don't have a reserve of gold or whatever, the Lord is going to keep them!) Honey, they've got Bible promises in the Word of God to hang on to! "He that considereth the poor in his affliction, shall the Lord take care of in his time of need!" I've forgotten just exactly how the verse goes, but that's the idea! (Psalm 41:1) If you've helped others, you're going to reap what you sowed!—Gal.6:7. They're going to help you or the Lord's going to help you in time of need, so don't worry!

10. Just try to be wise, stay out of debt, don't borrow money, try to save a little bit to tide you over if you can, & if not, save a lot of good will & a lot of blessings from the Lord! Okay? PTL!—And the Lord will see you through! Amen!

11. P.S. By the way, maybe that's when we'll start evangelising the farmers! I'm sure they'll be happy to trade you a bit of food for those gorgeous Posters, even if they haven't got tape players! You can walk from farm to farm as a family, kids & all, & barter Posters for food—& shelter too!—They could put you up in the barn at least, as you walk through their area.

12. So hang on to your sleeping bags & camping equipment & backpacks! You'll need'm! Bikes & pushcarts will be handy too!—And I mean pedal bikes, not motor bikes!—There'll be no gasoline, or you won't be able to afford to buy it with no money! Just count on your feet, & foot-driven vehicles!—Unless you're blessed enough to own a horse! Then you could have a little wagon to haul everything & family!

13. Isn't that beautiful!—Just like the Millennium!—Just be sure it's a covered wagon! Hallelujah! TYJ! Won't that be fun! GBY! ILY! Remember: Now's the time to get ready!—Tomorrow will be too late! Everybody else will be wanting'm too!—And be sure you've got a good stock of survival Posters!—You'll need'm! That's your stock in trade! Be ready to be Gospel Gypsies!—Amen?—Amen!—TYJ!—GBAKY!—IJNA!—ILY!—D.—ARE YOU READY?

---

## WHAT'S IN IT FOR ME?

DO 2232 4/86

1. When you take things away from people you've got to give them something that's just as good. Like some of these false cults, for example: They enable their members to have all kinds of spiritual powers & do miracles & things, & when you take them out of that & give them Christianity, you've got to give them something that to their way of thinking is just as powerful.

2. Christians & the churches take a negative approach to false religions. They attack them negatively, trying to show everything that's wrong with them, but they don't really offer them something better! They don't really show them how much better the Lord is, at least a lot of them don't. They don't really show them how much greater power they can have through the Lord!



ing to the ground out of one hand, & she's reaching up to a real live dove that's coming down to land on her other hand! In other words, the imitation was easily traded for the reality of something even better.

4. Mother used to illustrate it that way to show that you don't have to fight these false religions, just show'm something better, give them something better! Show them that Christ is better, the Holy Spirit is more powerful & that God is the God!—That you can really have greater peace, greater power & the only Salvation through Jesus! Because nearly all of them are imitations & counterfeits of the reality. And who wants an imitation & a counterfeit when they can have the real thing?

5. (Maria: But even manifestations of some of the more miraculous, more helpful, protective things seem to occur for these false cults in a more spectacular way than in the Christian's life. We as Christians have many many miraculous answers to prayer, none the less miraculous just because we can't see them take place before our very eyes! But the Lord more often

(Maria: They can't, because they don't have that power themselves. Because they don't want to accept it.)

3. My Mother used to illustrate it by the famous picture of the little girl that has dropped her fancy little dolly that she loved so much. You see the dolly fall-

than not lets our miracles be done through natural channels in accordance with His natural laws, not bypassing them in a spectacular show that calls public attention to them. Do you think that's because the Lord wants us to believe by faith & just know that He's doing it & taking care of it without us having to see what He's doing?)—Yes, of course.

6. Our main miracle that we want people to see is Salvation & its power to change hearts & lives! These false cults emphasise & spend their time on signs & wonders with no real power to change people!

7. Of all the nine gifts of the Spirit, only three really are obviously observably supernatural, such as tongues, miracles & healings.—Miraculous types of healings, instant healings etc. We have plenty of healings, we have plenty of tongues & we've had miracles. But they've not been the main nor most spectacular part of our ministry & they've not had to be!

8. We're trying to win people to Christ & the Love of God, & not just going around showing off our super-duper spirituality, that we're some kind of mystical gurus that can perform miracles & healings & speak in tongues & do showy spiritual manifestations! (Maria: It would make us too proud, wouldn't it? And it would gain us a following who were coming along just for the miracles.)—Just for the loaves & the fishes, just for that sort of thing, just like the Pentecostals have.

9. (Maria: I guess the Lord wants us to have faith too, just faith in Him, in the unseen.)—Yes, most of the gifts of the Spirit are not showy gifts, they are the gifts of wisdom & knowledge & faith & discernment & things which are not so showy, not so obviously supernatural, but things which are the most needed & the best of all the gifts if you're going to work for the Lord! If you're really going to do things for God & be led of His Spirit, they are the things that you have to have in order to be a real leader for the Lord!

10. How many church people really want gifts of the Spirit which will help them witness & win souls & have the faith to go to the mission field & faith for support & to self-sacrifice to give their all & suffer for Jesus & for others that they can save souls for Heaven! (Maria: Not very many.)—Not many!

**11. Most Christians are after God with the attitude, "What's in it for me? What can God do for me?"** What J. F. Kennedy said to the nation: "Ask not what your country can do for you, but what can you do for your country?", could be paraphrased for Christians: Ask not what your God can do for you; but what can you do for your God! My message for the average church person is quit asking God, "What can You do for me, God? What's in it for me?"

**12. We literally have a higher & far more sacrificial calling** which requires far more faith & wisdom & knowledge & other gifts of the Spirit in order to sacrificially witness & preach the Gospel & win souls, save people for Heaven!—And not just, "What can I get out of this religion? What can I do to still live comfortably & sacrifice little or nothing & give up almost nothing to go to church on Sunday & get out of it whatever I can for me selfishly?" That's what most church people are after with their selfish motives of self-aggrandisement, self-interest & self-acquisition.

**13. Most Christians have a selfish approach to faith & Christianity & churchianity:** "Is it doing any good for me? What do I get out of it? What's in it for me?" I mean, everything's in it for us, of course! By forsaking all & serving the Lord & pleasing God, He'll give us almost anything, the desires of our hearts abundantly above all that we can ask or think!—Not only our needs, but our wants!—The desires of our hearts! Everything's in it for us!—If we will delight ourselves in Him & His Will & His service in obedience to lay down our lives in love for others & for Him! If we'll obey Him & do His Will & follow Him & serve Him & others & win souls, everything's in it for us!

**14. There are two sides to the deal!** It's not only, "God, what can I get out of You?" But also God wants to know, "Christian, what can I get out of you?" And if He can get enough out of you, He'll give you anything, like He has us! PTL!

**15. So this business of wanting spiritual manifestations & miracles & powers & supernatural demonstrations just to show off your power & that you're some kind of a god & you're some kind of a supernatural superman human being, this is what most**

people are looking for. They're looking for the spiritual, even church people. They're not really looking for what they can do for God or others, they're looking for what they can get out of it for themselves & show off to others!

**16. The Lord showed us that this is foolishness as far as God's concerned!** "O foolish Galatians! O foolish Corinthians!" All this foolishness of child's play, of playing with the gifts of the Spirit like they were toys! The Lord had to show us that we needed to grow up & be mature Christians with the responsibility of parents & the responsibility of souls & followers, babes in Christ, to teach others to teach others to teach others, that a Christian has most of all a responsibility to God in thanks & gratitude for what God has done for us already! We're not just to be looking for more & selfishly craving more, selfishly boasting of more, but we are to sacrificially want to serve Christ & serve others & witness & win souls forever for Heaven!

**17. So that's the whole crunch of the whole affair, & that is, what is the real motive?** Why do people join our Family? Well, they join for Salvation most of all, to be saved from their sins & receive Christ & know that their future's assured & to even know the future, & for Heaven & all the rest, to get the peace, the satisfaction, the joy & the love that they've never found before! But when they join, they know that they're going to have to do something for the Lord in return, that they're going to have to carry the same Message sacrificially & by faith & suffering for others.

**18. They know they're joining an army & going to be a soldier that has to fight battles & fight the Devil & sacrifice, forsake all, suffer & live by faith in order to be genuine Christians, what Christians are supposed to be & what Jesus intended for them to be, like His Own disciples who lived & fought & died for Christ & others & to bring us the Message, or we wouldn't be here today!**

**19. The Lord tells people to sit down & count the cost, because as far as we're concerned, when people join our Family they know what's in it for them—they're going to have to live like they see the Family living, & they're going to have to witness like they see the person witnessing who witnessed to them!**

They're going to have to win souls like they were won! They're going to have to live by faith like the Family lives! They're going to have to suffer persecution like the Family suffers! They know what's going to be in it for them! But because they know what priceless benefits they have already gotten out of it, they join anyhow because they love the Lord & they want to please Him, & they love souls & they want to save 'em! That's what's in it for you & me!—Amen? AMEN!

## "IN QUIETNESS & CONFIDENCE!" DO 2238 11/86

(Grandpa & David had worked hard all afternoon building a top bunk for David & Techi's bed so that Techi would have a more comfy sleeping area. However, Grandpa was concerned about her safety & warned her not to horse around in her new top bunk, when only moments after Techi first got in bed, he heard a crash to the floor, & went running in to find that Techi had slid out of the top bunk!) (After David prays for a good night's sleep, Grandpa continues praying:)

1. **And thank You, Lord, for not letting Techi have a worse fall.** Thank You that she didn't hurt herself real bad. Help her to be much more quiet & much more prayerful & careful & not do all these silly antics, Lord, in her bed & in her bedroom. Help her to remember that a bed & bedroom are no place to do calisthenics & acrobatics.

2. **Help her to learn how to "be still & know that You are God"** (Psa.46:10) & that You're going to spank her if she doesn't behave. "In quietness & confidence shall her strength be", Lord. In Jesus' name, help her to be more quiet.

3. **Whatever happened to your verses you had by your bed on quietness and being still?** (Techi: Auntie Sara gave me a verse tonight about being sober.) "In quietness and confidence shall be your strength."—Isa.30:15. (Techi: The verse was something about being steady.) (See 1Cor.15:58) I wish you'd try to stay steady in your bed and in the bedroom, please. (Techi: Yes, Sir.)

4. **Now what's the Lord going to have to do to you, Honey,**  
428

**to teach you to be quiet?** Techi? I'm asking you a question. Why don't you try to be quiet so He doesn't have to do anything to you? Are you going to try to be quiet? All right.

5. **Amen, Lord, do help Techi to try to be quiet & help David not to encourage her & laugh at her antics which makes her act even sillier. Help him to realise how dangerous it is to be foolish & that she could have a very bad fall!**

6. **Amen, we thank You, Lord, that she didn't have a bad fall & that she didn't break or hurt something badly. Please help her to be more quiet & not to be such a silly girl at night when she should be calming down & getting quiet for bed, in Jesus' name. I think you ought to pray about it right now, Techi.**

7. (Techi: Amen. Lord Jesus, please help me not to be silly & goof off & fall off my bed, Lord. And help me to be still, Lord, & to know that in quietness & confidence shall my strength be. In Jesus' name, amen.)

8. **Which means that being noisy & silly & foolish is a weakness, not a strength. Quietness & confidence is strength, not being silly & noisy, right? That's a weakness. It's not funny! It's very serious! You could hurt yourself badly if you don't behave. I mean it!**

9. **See, you depended too much on the mattress & you held on to it & it slid & you fell.** Now, if you hadn't been fooling around, it wouldn't have happened! So you can be thankful an Angel was certainly around your bed & watching your head or you could have banged it real bad on the dresser or gotten a cut or a bad bump or even broken a bone!

10. **Now it's a dangerous place to sleep, Honey, & you've got to try to be careful & sober & quiet & wise or you won't be able to sleep up there!** And if it's too crowded down here with David then we'll have to send you & David clear back to the other room. Now, do you want that to happen? All right, then, are you going to be quiet up there & more prayerful & careful & cautious & not have a bad accident? (Techi: Yes, Sir!)

11. **Please, Honey, please try to take better care of yourself.** Give the Lord a little cooperation or give His Angels a little cooperation, will you? All right. I love you! Thank You Lord, thank You that she didn't get hurt badly, in Jesus' name.

12. Just settle down & be quiet when you get in bed & go to sleep instead of horsing around. You can read or you can sleep, but bed is not the place for antics & acrobatics & jumping around & all this wiggling. I mean it! God bless you, Sweetheart, I love you. I'm so glad you didn't hurt yourself real bad. PTL!

## WHAT TO DO IN A ROBBERY!

DO 2244 1/87



1. The reason I came to have this meeting with you is because of an emergency which could arise even here, & the worse things get in this World, the more likely it's apt to arise & might happen. I've always prayed it wouldn't happen & I've always hoped it wouldn't happen & it's never happened here, thank the Lord!

2. I have been very prayerful in all my years of travel & living alone in hotels & whatnot! I could have had many things stolen from me, I could have been held up many times, robbed, beaten or God knows what! But I'll tell you, I prayed like everything depended on prayer, & then I acted & I really did everything I could to be secure as though everything depended on my own security!

3. God wants you to give Him some cooperation! He's not going to do it all for you! If we were just lazy and said, "Well, let God do it" & expected God to do it all, we wouldn't have

walls or fences! He says, "Roll ye away the stone!"—John 11:39.—And then He did what they couldn't do, He raised the dead!

4. Well, there's just one thing that maybe we haven't taught you enough about, & maybe that's why this incident happened, as a warning to all of us to be more security-conscious, particularly people that go to the door or gate!

5. When people are dirt poor they'll steal anything if they can! And as one of our teachers told us when we first got to school, "If you leave things out to tempt the thief to steal it, you're just almost as guilty as he is! You're the one to blame! You tempted him to steal it! You put it out and left it out where he could steal it!" She said, "Put your stuff away! Hide it or keep it in your school bag & take it with you. Don't leave anything valuable in your desk, keep it out of sight, keep it out of reach!"

6. That's what we're trying to do here on our property. Every property we have ever occupied we have spent a great deal of time making sure that the walls & the doors were secure, with security lights all night long. Thieves hate the light! They love darkness because their deeds are evil!—John 3:19. The darkness hides them & they can sneak around in darkness & get closer in darkness, climb walls & fences in darkness!

7. We have the walls & fences up to discourage them—not to make it impossible. I mean, anybody that really wants to get in, they can get in! But the walls & fences etc. are to deter them or discourage them from trying, to make it so difficult they'll decide, "Well, it just isn't worth the trouble to climb this wall. Besides, they've got lights shining all night long & all that fencing, they must be on their guard! They must be guarding the place & ready for trouble, & even if I make it in, I might get a bad reception!"

## GUNPOINT ROBBERY AT WITNESSING HOME! A WARNING TO US ALL!

8. Apparently God wants this message to get to the whole worldwide Family to jerk you up on your security, to show you that it can happen anywhere! As far as I know, up until

this time, I don't think the Family has ever had a gunpoint robbery or stickup. I've heard of a few knifepoint stickups, I've heard of several snatchings where they snatched watches right off people's wrists, & pocketbooks, theft, stealing, perhaps even burglaries.

9. Do you know the difference between a theft & a burglary? A theft is when they steal it & you don't find it out till later. A burglary is when they break in & steal it. Breaking & entering, "B & E" as we used to call it, is considered a much more serious crime than if they just walk in the unlocked door. In other words, it's partly the householder's fault for leaving the door unlocked so the thief didn't even have to break in!—Which is what happened in the incident I'm going to tell you about!

10. People in poor countries like the one where this incident happened are starving, hungry, they'll do almost anything to get something to eat, even a chicken is valuable!—Not that our Family wouldn't want to feed the poor. Even the Bible forgave people who stole because they were hungry, they received very light punishment.—Pro.6:30. So if they're that hungry, maybe you just ought to let 'm steal it! But allowing them to steal it is allowing them to commit a crime, & worse yet, commit a sin which they will have to suffer for. That's tempting them to steal, tempting them to commit a crime!

11. This girl tempted the guy to come in & rob 'm at the point of a gun by leaving the door open!—Or at least opening it for him, because obviously it was not locked! Obviously they were not in the habit of locking it in the daytime. People commit robberies not only in the nighttime, they also commit them in the daytime, especially in poor countries where they're hungry!

12. The correspondence we received said that she was walking around out in the yard & they hadn't secured the wall! There was a place on the other side of the wall where he could just run up a little knoll & jump into the yard!—No broken glass on top of the wall, no barbed wire, no nothing to keep him out, easy to get into the yard! They had never done anything to secure the place!

13. Apparently they thought it would never happen, so ob-

viously they didn't even keep their doors locked in the daytime!—Or at least when she went out to take her little walk around the house, he saw that she just shut the door behind her.—The front door, of all things, facing the street, where there was almost no wall, nothing, where he could just jump over! After she took her little get-out she walked right back in, & obviously the door was not locked.—Either it was never locked in the daytime or she unlocked it & left it unlocked.

14. He obviously was watching her, & when she decided she'd had enough walk & she walked back in through an unlock-ed door, he was right there, boom! He just leaped over the wall & got there before she shut the door, & he just pushed his way in & held her at gunpoint!

15. So naturally she backed off. We have taught our people not to resist, that you're apt to get hurt worse if you resist. The famous words of stickup men are, "Your money or your life!", & we think your life's a lot more valuable!—So give 'm your money! Of course, you don't have to give it all, & you don't have to go around & show 'm everywhere it is! Try to keep 'm cornered so they don't go any further!

16. So she led him to a nearby room just across the living room, & in it was one of our men, the finance manager of the Home, with his briefcase sitting there open in which he had his money!—Which they said he had been told not to do, it was strictly against the rules: "Do not keep your money in your briefcase nor in this room, but be sure it's hidden & locked up somewhere where they can't find it too easily!"

**"A STRONG MAN ARMED KEEPETH HIS GOODS IN PEACE!"—Luke 11:21.**

17. I've kind of always thought, "Well Lord, you've never let it happen before, maybe you're never going to let it happen!" But when a Home gets robbed at the point of a gun by an intruder, Beloved, I think it's time for us to wake up & realise that it could happen here too, & I'm sure it could have if the Lord hadn't protected us & if we hadn't been very careful & prayerful & very secure & security-conscious, mindful of security!

Don't think it can only happen in poor Third World countries, people all over the World are suffering financial failure, and anyone with something to steal is fair game, no matter where they are!

18. But if you don't even have a fence that they can't jump over and you don't even lock your doors, you're apt to get some unwelcome visitors! If they know you're careless, they'll figure you're careless about where you keep your money too, and that man was. All the robber had to do was walk across the living room into his room and there it was sitting openly on the floor!

19. Jesus Himself said, "A strong man armed keepeth his goods in peace!" So what did Jesus mean by that? You need to be strong. To be strong is to be watchful and to be wise. Not just strong and able to beat him up or shoot him, but to be strong in spirit, strong in prayer, strong in security, strong in watchfulness!—Armed!

20. We don't have to have guns to be armed, we've got clubs! You don't have to be armed with guns, you can be armed with wariness!—Not weariness, wariness!—Being security-conscious! You can be armed with good walls & good fences! You can be armed with good night security lighting! You can be well-armed with protection of every kind without having to shoot guns!

21. I can never forget the time Fred Shultz scared off that intruder who picked the lock and got in the front door. He was just feeling around in the dark down in the livingroom and fell over a chair! Fred rushed out of his upstairs bedroom and in the semi-darkness he took this golf club and pointed it down over the railing of the stairway and said, "You take one more step and I'm going to blow your head off!" The guy ran out that door as fast as he could go!

22. But we need to be watchful, wary, cautious, security-conscious, very careful and very prayerful, particularly you folks who go to the gate. That is a dangerous job! We've been very liberal & rather careless lately, but in view of this thing that's just happened, I'm sorry, but I think the Lord's trying to warn us to be more security conscious from now on!

23. I've mentioned a few times to some of you boys that it's better to answer the gate from a distance first. That way you're not there in person where they can stick a gun or a knife in your ribs!

#### ARMED ROBBERY!—NOT JUST AN ACCIDENT!

24. I don't consider that just an accident! With as little security as they had, they were asking for it, they were literally begging for it! They were like the guy who left something out, tempting the thief to steal! They were tempting them to do it with as little security as they had! And then she led him right into the finance man's room where his briefcase full of money was sitting right there on the floor, obvious as can be! Sorry to keep you so long, but it might save your life! It might even save your money!

25. He wasn't a burglar, remember. A burglar tries to creep in & steal while you're there, with a gun ready for you in case you wake up. He burgles, he tries to come in & steal it without waking you up, but he's prepared to shoot you in case you do wake up. Many people have gotten shot in bed that way.

26. But this was what's called a stickup, or in the technical language of the law, armed robbery! He was armed & he was intent on robbing them. He didn't have to work very hard to get it, they told him right where it was & he got it!

#### FINAL MISTAKE—THEY DIDN'T WITNESS TO HIM!

27. As far as we now know, they never said a word to the thief about Jesus, or witnessed to him or even said, "We're missionaries, poor missionaries!" You know what the guy said to him? He said, "What are you doing, stealing?" What a self-righteous, condemnatory remark!—Not a word about Love or Jesus! They never witnessed to him, they never even told him that they were missionaries or Christians, or he might have left the money!

## WHAT MISTAKES WERE MADE?

28. Remember those old puzzles where they used to say, "How many things can you find wrong with this picture?" Well, how many things can you find wrong with that picture? (Fam: They were not prepared.) They were not prepared. They hadn't secured their borders. (Fam: The door was unlocked.) He didn't have to worry about the gate, apparently the wall was so low he could jump right over it. He just ran & hopped over it because there was a big mound of grass right there in front of the wall, & obviously the door was unlocked.

29. (Fam: She was by herself.) She was out there by herself, that's another thing! She might have thought, "Well, right out here in the yard, I can just walk around!"—But I understand that their house is right on a main street travelled by thousands of cars & thousands of people all day long, & lots of people without cars who walk by! And she was walking around alone out in the front yard where obviously she was well seen. She walked around long enough that he could see she was alone, & when she walked back, he evidently waited to see if the door was unlocked or if she had to knock to call somebody to the door to unlock it. But it wasn't even a locked door, she just turned the handle & walked in, & he walked right in behind her!

30. What else? (Fam: The money was not hidden away.) The money was not hidden at all. Of course, if they ask you for money at the point of a gun, even if you've got it hidden you're probably going to go find some, but you don't have to give them all of it! That's why you should keep your money scattered around in a lot of different places with a lot of different people! We're not keeping anybody prisoner here—we've seen to it that everybody has a little money.

31. What else did they do or fail to do? (Fam: They didn't witness.)—Didn't witness to him, think of that! In fact, turned around & accused him instead, saying something condemnatory: "Are you stealing?" What a self-righteous thing to say! What else? (Fam: Well, she led him right to the guy that had the money.)—Yes!

## "HIS BLOOD SHALL I REQUIRE AT THY HAND!"

32. The Lord says, "If you warn the wicked of his wicked way, but he repents not of his sins & goes on in his wickedness & dies in his wickedness, but you warned him, you've delivered your soul, his blood is not on your hands!" But He says, "If you warn not the wicked of his wicked way, & he dies in his wickedness, his blood will I require at thy hand!"—Eze.3:17-19. You say, "What does that mean, Dad? It sounds awful!" Well, it may be awful, who knows! Maybe the Lord will let that memory haunt you for the rest of your life!

33. I hope they never forget that guy & I doubt if they ever will! And I hope they especially never forget that they never delivered their soul to him or washed his blood from their hands by giving him the Gospel & showing him a little love & a little concern! They might have asked him, "Would you like a cup of coffee or are you hungry?" or anything else to show him a little concern or something. Of course he was nervous & in a hurry, you can understand why he might not have accepted the cup of coffee, but they could have at least offered! They say his hands were shaking so he might not have been able to hold it. The gun was shaking, poor guy, he was nervous, scared!

34. But they never said a word of love, nothing to him, as far as we now know. We haven't received any other report. I think some people whose conscience is tender enough, if they'd known they were missionaries they wouldn't have robbed them. Or if they had witnessed to them & showed love to them they wouldn't have robbed them!

35. I'll tell you, that was dangerous business! That was one time it was dangerous not to witness! There are times when it's dangerous to witness, but that's one time when they could have maybe touched his heart, & they are going to have his blood on their hands if they didn't say a word to him about the Lord or Salvation!

36. Even if they only had time to say a few words, they could have said a few words about the Lord that could have touched his heart & not only saved the man, but saved the money besides! I think that was probably unnecessarily wasted money! I believe

they might've touched his heart with a witness, don't you?

### WHAT WOULD YOU DO?—TIPS ON ANSWERING GATE!

37. **What do you folks do when you go to the gate to greet people that you don't know & you don't know who they are & you're not sure what they're there for?**—Especially if it happens to be men, & sometimes you can tell a lot just by people's looks. You need the gift of discernment! You can tell by their spirit whether they have an aura of evil or a threatening mien or an evil face!

38. **I suggest you talk long enough to them through the little window that the Lord could show you what kind of a spirit they've got & whether it's safe to go out & talk to them or not!** It may not be very polite at first, but that's what steel doors & iron bars & small windows & peepholes & gates are for—for protection from people that aren't safe!

39. **I suggest that before you unlock that door, you talk to them through the window first & ask the Lord to give you a little discernment to sense out what type of person it is, and if they're there for a legitimate reason—especially if they're a man that doesn't look like it!**

40. **So what do you do if you show your head in the window to see them, & the guy pulls a gun on you & says, "Open the door or I'm going to shoot you!"** In the first place, he's not apt to shoot you. He doesn't want any more trouble than he bargained for, and a shot at the door or gate could alert all the Home, the neighbours and God knows what! Thank God we've got people all around & he could at least worry that he knows there must be a lot of people living here, that a shot at the gate could alert the whole Family & they'd all be there & he wouldn't get his money!

41. **It's the threat, the scare tactic, that is valuable to them!** If somebody threatened you with a gun through that window, you first of all were wary & you didn't just slide open the bolt & dash out there to talk to them, but you talked to them face-to-face first of all through the window. (Fam: You could say, "Okay, I'll open

it," & then you just duck or move out of the way, but you never open it.)—Exactly!

42. **In the split second it would take him to decide on whether he needs to shoot or not, you drop out of sight!** Besides, if he shot you before you opened the door, he couldn't get in anyhow, so he's not apt to shoot you through the window! So you could just drop out of sight instantly before he could possibly even pull the trigger, & there wouldn't be any point in shooting you then because you're aware of what he wants. What's he going to do, climb up & try to find you on the floor & shoot through the window? If he shoots you dead you can never open the door!

43. **So if he says, "Open the door!", You can just pretend you're going to go open the door & call for help.** What would you say? What would you yell? (Fam: You could yell, "Bring the guns!" even if you don't actually have any.) Yes, "Hey men, bring the guns!" You can drop to the floor & say, "I'm pushing the alarm button & they're coming with the guns, you'd better get the Hell out of here before you get shot!"

44. (Fam: Maybe blow a little police whistle also?) That's a good idea. Just blow a police whistle real loud! Just hit the floor, hit the dust, press the alarm, blow the whistle, whatever it is, & yell, "Bring the guns!"

45. **So one of the best ways to scare off any kind of criminal, burglar, rapist or anything, if you have a chance & it's not going to endanger your life, is to scream or yell, because that's the last thing they want to do is attract attention!** That is what they don't want, is to attract attention & have a lot of people come running. They figure they can handle you with one little pistol, but a bunch of people, they can't shoot 'm all! Besides, it's too late then. You've got a bunch of people coming, they figure with guns, & they know it's too late to ask you for money!

46. **You greeters need to really pray about it & ask the Lord what's best to do.** I suggest you think about what could be the possibilities & what could happen. Especially you who are responsible for your Home's security, that's all of you men, & any of you women involved in answering the door, should discuss what to do & how to do it in case it ever happens, & pray

that it never does! PTL!

47. Apparently the Lord wanted to give that Home a little shake-up to show them where they were lax & where they needed more prayer & more caution & more love & more inspiration to witness & a lot of things!

48. They could have said to the guy, "What do you need, my dear fellow? What's the problem?" & acted like they were trying to be cooperative & trying to help him out. At least they could've said a good word about the Lord & said, "I love you, brother! You need it?—Take it! PTL! I live by faith, the Lord loves me, He'll take care of me anyhow, you need it more than I do!" They could have said something! "Well, I'll have to go get some & there are a lot of people in this house who will have to know about it before I can have it! I have to go ask for it! And if I do that, I'll have to tell some people, who will tell some other people, and there are a lot of people here who may not want to let you have it! I'll have to let a lot of other people know before I can get any money!" He certainly shouldn't have had such a large amount of money there in his room!

49. What a hell of a thing that would be to die for, to have somebody kill you for your money! God knows we don't want to die that way. If they kill us, we want to die for Love & for the Lord, right? We don't mind giving our lives for people who need us & need the Love of the Lord, & some of us have, it's not that some of us haven't been killed for it.

### CLOSING PRAYER!

50. Amen, let's pray the Lord will give you the wisdom for whatever happens, however it happens, whoever goes to the door.—That even if we haven't mentioned it or haven't covered the subject or the question or the situation, Lord, You help them to know what to do. You can tell them what to do, something we never even thought of, Lord!

51. But help us to be prepared, watchmen on the wall who are watchful, & not those who fail to warn the people! You said of some of the watchmen, some of the people who were supposed to warn the people, some of the false prophets, that they

And that "Love—Jesus—Never Fails!" PTL! (Please remember to pray for Mene. She's still having problems, but we're hoping & praying for the Victory.—In Jesus' name, amen.—Tx! ILY!—D.)

### THE SPIRITUAL WARFARE DEPENDS ON US!

—The Majesty of Choice!

DO 2327 6/87



1. The main warfare is actually going on here amongst the humans, & the other spirits are merely helping us! The Angels of God & the departed spirits are helping us, & the de-

mons of the Devil are trying to defeat us! So the major battle of the forces of Heaven & Hell is for or against the humans, it's not that it's all that much just between them & in the Spirit World. Helping or hurting us is their main project, & in the process of it, of course, they fight each other.

2. The warfare in the Spirit World is very important, but it all hinges on us & has to do with us! The warfare that my Mother envisioned going on in the heavenlies is the warfare between spirits in the Spirit World for & against us! (Maria: So it all depends on what we do. We're the ones that are deciding things, but we can't carry them out without their help?)

3. The battles depend largely on our decisions as to which way they go, because the hands of the powers of Heaven are tied according to our decisions! If we make the right decisions & operate by faith, then the forces of good are loosed & empowered to help us & to overcome the forces of evil! But if Man makes the wrong decision & goes the wrong direction, then, in a sense their hands are tied, & the hands of the devils & demons & of Satan are liberated to bring about devastation amongst humanity, just

like is happening right now!

4. It was because of Daniel's prayers that he got the victory, & then Michael was able to come & help him & got the victory over the Prince of Persia.—Dan.10:12-13. And it was because Jacob fought a good fight & persevered that he got the victory, won the blessing & was empowered of the Spirit of God to win!—Gen.32:24-28.

5. So the battles of Heaven are actually entirely dependent upon us & which way we go! The spirits are not totally independent of us, & just merely fighting amongst themselves in Heaven. There would be no point or purpose in this, because the whole idea is that Man is the one who has been given the majesty of choice & decision, & the way Man goes, so goes the battle! MOP 10:15  
6. If we do the right things & make the right choices & go the right direction, then we have the power to call in the forces of Heaven to assist us & to overcome & overpower the forces of evil. But if we make the wrong choices & go the wrong directions & do the wrong things, then the Enemy has the power to overcome us & defeat us in spite of all Heaven would like to do!

7. "Whatever is bound on Earth is bound in Heaven; whatever is loosed on Earth is loosed in Heaven!"—Mat.16:19. It doesn't say it the other direction at all. What Heaven does is dependent on us! That's the whole idea of the whole game! They are just our spiritual helpers or hinderers, bound or loosed by what we do. (Maria: I guess that's why they're called "ministering spirits", because they're there to help & serve us, we aren't serving them!)—Yes! What they do is entirely dependent upon what we do.—How we work, how we pray, the decisions we make.

8. We're almost like the commanders of the forces of Heaven, or the forces of Hell! You can work for Heaven or you can work for Hell, & those forces are dependent upon us & our command. (Maria: By "those forces", you mean either good or bad?)—Yes, exactly.

9. We turn the tide of victory or defeat entirely by our choices, believe it or not! That's what God has done: He has put the fate of the World into the hands of Man—up to a point. Of

course, very soon God is going to take over before Man has gone too far!

10. There would be no point even in our existence if the tide of battle was entirely dependent on the Heavenly forces. The tide of battle is entirely dependent on Man, that's what Man was put here for. It is dependent on Man & his choices for or against God.

11. God is in control, but He has set down certain rules of the game, of the battle, just like a football game! You've got to abide by the rules & if you break the rules, then you unleash the powers of Hell to win. If you keep the rules, then you empower the powers of Heaven to win! It's all dependent upon Man & his choice—up to a point, of course. Pretty soon God is just going to completely take over! Right now, God is allowing the Devil to take over, because Man has gone the wrong direction.

12. If we are doing the right thing, going the right direction & making the right choices, we have spiritual weapons which can overcome the Enemy completely! He cannot defeat us! He cannot win the victory over us if we are going God's way, because then God's spirits are unleashed against him & he cannot win! But according to the rules of the game, if we go the wrong way it's just the other way around. MOP 10:56

13. It is not the spiritual powers of good & evil, Angels & devils, who are fighting on the field of battle down in the arena while we sit up in the grandstands & the bleachers rooting for our favourite spirits. It is we who are down in the arena fighting evil men & evil forces, & it is the Angels of God on the one hand, on the right hand, & the demons of the Devil on the other hand, who are rooting for or against us! The tide of the game, or the battle, is decided on the field of battle, not in the grandstands!

14. If Adam & Eve had made the right choice, it never would have happened, God would have protected them! The Devil wasn't up there fighting with God in Heaven & having a fist fight with the Lord! The Devil was fighting for the control of Man's mind & body & spirit here on Earth! God was speaking, trying to influence them, & the Devil was speaking & trying to influence them. Whether they won or lost depended on their choice, & they lost. They made the wrong choice.

15. The battle is for the control of our minds & hearts & spirits, bodies as well, which will follow, & just like they did in the Garden of Eden, it was through the words that they spoke that they tried to influence Adam & Eve. It's a battle, a wrestling match for spiritual control, & it's largely done through words & communication, influences. You can call it "words", but they don't always speak in words, they also give pictures & thoughts. The Lord gives warnings & good thoughts, & the Enemy gives temptations. So there's a battle of the mind, a battle of the spirit, a battle of the heart, which winds up in the battle of the body!

16. So there's a tremendous battle going on in Heaven, yes, but the battle is over us! God & His Angels are trying to conquer us, the Devil & his demons are trying to conquer us, & the whole thing is dependent on us & our decisions & the way we go. It's not like some totally independent warfare going on in Heaven that has nothing to do with us, it has everything to do with us! The whole thing is about us & for or against us & over us, it's all dependent on us! That's what the whole Creation is about. That's why God created Man, to make choices & decisions, for or against Him!

17. We are the ones who control the tide of battle! We are the ones who decide whether God or the Devil is going to win! God has left the choice up to us up to a certain point where He finally steps in & cries, "Foul! Penalty! Stop the game!" And because the other side is doing wrong, they forfeit the game & we win, because we made the right choices, we listened to the right voices, we obeyed the right commands, we did the right things.

18. And the battle is not for or against our Salvation, that is already settled! That's completely settled by the Lord, we're saved. The battle is for the souls of men & their actions & their deeds & their words & attentions & all that sort of thing, & which way goes the World. TTL! THE salvation BATTLE IS SETTLED!

19. So far, as far as I can see, as far as the World is concerned, it looks pretty much like the Church has lost & the World has won! But that's the way the Lord knew it would be, because He said, "Strait is the gate & narrow is the way which leadeth unto life, & few there be that find it. But broad is the way & wide is the gate that leadeth unto destruction, & many there be

that go in thereat!"—Mat. 7:13,14. So the Lord knows that the vast majority of Mankind are wrong & going the wrong way & He's giving an illustration to all the forces of Heaven & Hell what happens if Man is given his choice!

20. The whole war is dependent on us & our choices! That's the way God has set down the rules of the game. If we listen to His signals & we play according to His rules, then our side wins & we win individually & collectively & the other side loses, because their ability to fight & to win or lose is entirely dependent on us & which way we go, which way Man goes. And as far as I can see right now, it looks like the Devil is winning the World. But of course, as we know, the Lord & we will win in the long run. God will win with His minority over the Devil's majority!

21. It proves that Man cannot really be trusted with choice! Man has to be ruled by a rod of iron, by force! Only a few glorious heroes are able to be trusted with choice & will choose to follow the Lord & not the Enemy. Praise the Lord!

22. The war is not decided by just one battle either, there are a lot of battles!—Some we lose & some we win, & we just hope we win most of 'm & don't lose too many! We don't win 'm all, but thank God, we win most of 'm!—Amen?—Are you winning or losing?

---

## MORE ON MAMA'S EYES!

DO 2333 8/87

—Read Less & Talk More!—Mama Letters!

1. I was praying about your eyes this morning & you know what came to me?: That the Lord wants you to talk more! Maybe if you'll obey the Lord He'll heal your eyes. Get your tape recorder & just talk into it. Don't have any talks with anybody on the intercom or in person without having it recorded, just like you do with me.

2. The prophecy said you've been leaning on the arm of flesh. (See "Prayer & Answer for Mama's Eyes", #2332) I think maybe that means you've been leaning on your eyes too much & reading everybody else's material, letters, reports etc. & making that most of your work instead of leaning on the inspiration of the



your sin has been!

3. It's just pride, plain pride! The Lord never gave me much until I finally gave up & just rattled off whatever came, & that was it. (Maria: I know it's pride, but I also genuinely feel bad that I can't make myself clear & I have to do so much editing on what I say to make it understandable.)

4. You've been leaning on your eyes & you've been leaning on them too much & making that the excuse that you haven't got time for talking because you have so much to read. Now the Lord wants you to start putting out!

5. I got that just as clear as anything this morning when I was praying about your eyes. I mean, it just came so clear. It's just like I said, "Lord, why would You afflict her eyes so much when she needs to read so much?" It was almost like the Lord said, "I don't want her to read so much, I want her to talk more!" (Maria: Yes, I guess I'm really confident in reading & passing counsel on to Peter, but certainly not in making myself clear to everyone else.)

6. I've heard you rattle on talking by the hour! You spend a lot of your time talking. You go out & talk for hours to Peter & other people around, personal conferences, & you don't record

Lord in pouring out to the Family in recorded talks. You do give a lot of counsel to Peter & Sara & others, & it's inspired, but you're failing to record it. —And I think the Lord is angry about it! I have told you many times before that you write very well, you talk very well, but you have neglected to record it. That's where

them. So they're not getting recorded, they're not getting published, they're not getting read by the people & therefore they're really losing out. You're withholding from the people! "He that withholdeth, it tendeth to poverty." —Pro.11:24.—And in this case it is tending to poverty of eyesight!

7. He's promised because you've been humbled by this weakened condition that He'll save you & many many others with you. Do you know how that will happen?—By the things that are going to come out of your dictation & your recordings! (Maria: Yes, I wondered what that meant, I couldn't figure it out before.)

8. Quit thinking about yourself! Think about the Lord! You've got to have the faith that He's giving it! That's what I've had to have all these years. You just have to trust the Lord that He is giving it, & give it & pass it on, or you're withholding from the people! (Maria: I have the faith that He is giving it, but it's my poor presentation that messes up what He gives.) Forget about your damned presentation! Trust the Lord! It's better to even get it said poorly than not at all!

*Since you'd like a separation, why don't you try it for three months first?*



## SEPARATIONS!

—By Maria 8/87

Maria #85 DO 2339

—Vital Counsel for all Couples, Leaders & Adult Family Members!

1. I'm getting more convinced all the time that now is not the time to try to keep failing marriages together! Maybe before, when we first started, we needed to work on

relationships & marriages for the sake of the children etc. But right now, time is so short, if we have any shaky problem marriages, I think we have a lot more important things to do than to try to make a major project of trying to fall back in love & get all romantic again, all submitted to each other etc.! It's more important to just start helping the World & getting out & doing the work we're supposed to do!—And perhaps just agreeing to disagree, or separating, which might be even better.

2. **I almost hate to say this, but it seems like in almost every instance where people have had serious marriage problems, it's borne good fruit to separate.** Perhaps it can just be a temporary separation at first. But there's hardly one case that I know of which we have been personally knowledgeable about, in which we have either counselled people to separate, or another leader suggested it & we've agreed to it, I don't think there's been one case that hasn't borne good fruit.

3. **The parties involved have gotten closer to the Lord, more desperate with the Lord, & in almost every way it's done them good.** It seems like we're getting more & more into the "One Wife" situation, & it looks like for this particular time, this is what the Lord wants. At least we know He wants total dedication to Himself & to His Work, & in so many cases the former relationships had become too distracting.—Either people getting so wrapped up in each other that they can't do the Lord's Work, can't concentrate on it.—Or getting at each other's throats so much with so much contention & problems that they're a terrible sample!—And then they often feel so condemned & like such failures that they can't accomplish much for the Lord in this case, either. So either extreme, being too wrapped up in each other, or too contentious with each other, is a big distraction & hindrance to the Lord's Work.

4. **It almost seems like the most fruitful kind of relationships are those in which they are very close friends & work together well.** When couples are close friends & get along & work together well, but are not overly dependent on each other, not too romantically involved with each other, but complement each other's ministries, these are the ones that have really done the best. In other words, they do well together, but if they were

apart they would also do well. But because they do well together & complement each other, we don't want to separate them. But if they had to separate for the sake of the Work, they wouldn't have any problem with it, or at least not too much of a problem.

5. **Of course, we don't just go around separating people for the sake of separating people.** I'm glad when people can stay together & get along well together. Thank God for all of our couples who are not at each other's throats, or who are not so wrapped up in each other that they can't see anything else! Sometimes such couples worry because they aren't very romantically involved or "in love" with each other. But the fact is that they can usually do the Lord's work better that way. Sad to say, it seems like a good deal of our couples have a hard time finding the right balance.

## FIRST LOVE!

6. **The Lord wants to be our husband, & I think that's the main conclusion that we're coming to.** Having a big romantic love affair, maybe that's nice for a bonus once in awhile, but it just seems that if we put each other first, we're not going to be putting the Lord first.—How can you? There's not enough time.

7. **Besides, the Lord is going to repay, & this present time isn't going to last much longer anyway.** The Lord is going to make up everything, give us the desires of our hearts, & greatly repay us for the sacrifices we make, & it's not going to be so long from now. This is such a small sacrifice to make compared to what the Lord has in store for us! "For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory that shall be revealed in us!"—Romans 8:18. PTL!

8. **But people don't need to be fearful, just worrying & waiting for their turn to come!** As I said, we're not going around trying to split people up unless there's a very good reason for it or their relationship is presenting a big problem! If they complement each other & are a good team together, we certainly don't want to split them up unless their service for the Lord somehow requires it! As Dad has said, "Whatever glorifies God the most, that's what's best", praise the Lord!

## LEADERSHIP'S INVOLVEMENT IN SEPARATIONS!

**9. Separations are really a sensitive issue**—they are an affair of the heart, & therefore are more sensitive than almost any other kind of situation. We want to be considerate of people's feelings, we want to help them decide for themselves what they feel is best & what they believe is the Lord's Will. Our people have got to learn to make decisions on their own, to get the answers for themselves. So leadership's involvement in separations cannot be coming in & saying, "Okay, you do this & you do that!" Our people have to see for themselves what's best & what is God's Will, otherwise they'll always blame their leadership for it.

**10. It's true that the Lord has given us the authority to lead & guide others, but with that authority comes the responsibility of loving & caring for them, & making sure that they & their children are taken care of.**

**11. Separations are a very complicated issue, & every situation is different.** That's probably why a lot of our leadership have gotten themselves into a lot of trouble & created a lot of problems by trying to break people up. In many cases they probably saw that there really was a problem in the relationship, & they knew that everyone would be better off if a separation were to take place. But, sad to say, they didn't always know how to handle it very wisely.

**12. Perhaps the leadership just came in & decreed that a couple needed to separate** without any real explanation or showing the parties involved the good fruit that it could bring forth in their lives. Often it makes it a lot easier for such couples if a little temporary separation is suggested.

**13. In some of these relationships they've simply gotten so familiar over the years, it's almost impossible for them to break out of that rut, out of that mold, & they find in some ways that it's really a relief for them to be separated.** Although it's difficult in other ways, particularly in their care for the children, in some ways it's a real break-through in the spirit & a relief & a lightness & a real peace, & almost everyone whose separations we have had anything to do with has found that it

has borne good fruit.

**14. Someone may have to suggest it, but if they just flatly ignore or refuse the suggestion, it's their decision before the Lord & what they do is really up to them!** It's their individual decision that counts, because if they are more or less forced to break up & they don't want to & they don't really agree in their hearts, you can do all you can for them, but if their hearts & their minds aren't in full agreement with you, they might as well be back together. "A man convinced against his will is of the same opinion still."

**15. It's sort of like choosing whether or not to be fully committed to the Lord**, yielded to the Lord. Each one of us has to make that choice before the Lord, & we can't have anybody else make it for us. "Choose ye this day! Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind!"—Josh.24:15; Rom.14:5.

## TEMPORARY SEPARATIONS!

**16. We can't really give specific rules regarding all of this because each case is different & each individual situation certainly needs to be handled differently, prayerfully & led of the Lord!** In some cases we've suggested temporary separations. In fact, in some cases that's all that their marriage really needed, & when they separated for a few months they realised how much they actually loved & needed each other, & they sincerely wanted to straighten out & get victories, so they went to work on their problems, drew closer to the Lord & were able afterwards to get back together & go on in a much better relationship.

**17. A temporary separation is also helpful in that it helps the parties decide if they really want to go through with a permanent separation or not.** They can see for themselves where they're at.

**18. It's wise that such folks have at least one chance to get back together again**, if they so desire, after 3 or 6 months or something, & then they can judge how it went when they were separated & how it goes again when they're back together. It really helps the couple themselves to see what they need when they have that comparison.

## YELLERS & HITTERS!

19. Another entirely different kind of situation, which thank the Lord, is rare, is having to separate people because of their yelling & screaming at each other, or even getting violent, where they slap & hit each other. In serious cases like that, we don't have to merely meekly suggest that perhaps they should consider a separation, but we can then railroad things through!—Because if people are yelling at the top of their voices at each other, it's obvious that something must be done immediately!

20. This is the exception to our policy of having people's consent in separations. If they're causing a major problem like screaming, yelling, hitting or slapping each other, we don't exactly need to give them a suggestion to separate, we give them an order!—Because it's breaking security rules! In fact, this sort of behaviour has even merited excommunication in the past!—And in such cases, it doesn't have to come from top leadership either, as there may not be any top leadership around.

21. No matter who is at fault, if people are slapping each other, yelling, screaming & creating a security disturbance, disturbing the peace, when things are that bad, something has to be done whether they agree to it or not! We just have to step in & tell them, "Okay, you've got to be taken apart because you're bad for security, you're a terrible sample!" Such people are an absolute reproach, not only to our own Family & our own children, but also to outsiders who might happen to hear them! In fact, they're not only a reproach & a terrible testimony, but a very bad security breach because the neighbours could justifiably call the police!

22. So I would say such problem couples should be required to at least temporarily separate for three months. You could wait until they do it again, & just give them a warning the first time, but you might have the police come the next time!—Or they might erupt into violence in which someone gets seriously hurt! In other words, because of security implications & because of the terrible testimony it is for the Family, yelling & screaming like that definitely warrants at least an immediate

temporary separation of three months.

23. Our people already know that actual physical violence will not be allowed or tolerated at all!—Dad has made it an excommunicable offense. But I think we can now modify that a little bit if the slapping or hitting wasn't too severe, because sometimes the other mate provokes it so much that they're as much to blame, if not more so, than the person who actually does the slapping. So I'd say that instead of instant excommunication, we can modify that to say an instant separation in most cases.

24. So a good solution would be separation instead of excommunication, a temporary separation. But if they get back together again after a few months & it happens again, then separate them permanently!—And of course, if one of them starts beating up on or slapping someone else around, excommunicate them!

25. If they don't agree with it, then it's "Get the victory or get out!", they both go! In other words, we don't really force them to split up, we simply lay down the Family law, the rules, & if they don't want to keep our rules, they can leave together. We don't force anyone to stay in the Family, & anyone who doesn't agree with our rules is welcome to leave!

## COUPLES THAT WANT TO SPLIT!

26. Obviously, the most common cause for separation in the Family is when the couples themselves request it, they originate the idea & suggest a separation themselves for some reason or other.

27. This type of separation presents so many problems, I sometimes wonder if we can even allow people the luxury of being apart for three months! But to just let people stew in their own juice, to make them stay together & be burdened & worried about trying to get victories which they maybe never will get because they've gotten so familiar with each other, to just force them to stay together because separations are so complicated & present so many problems, I don't want to do that. I like to give people the benefit of the doubt, to let them have some time to reflect on their personal situation, to get away from each

other for awhile. Sometimes situations like that become almost unbearable & the poor people certainly could use a rest from it & from each other, a little distance between them so they can pray & get the mind of the Lord. So I would like to give people that if we can.

28. I think we should try to allow people a little breathing space, a little room, especially if they're stuck in a real rut & they're discouraging each other & dragging each other down, critical of each other etc. I think we almost owe it to them if they ask for it, to help them work out at least some kind of temporary situation of three months or so where they can at least get away from the situation.

29. Many times they don't even know what their own potential is or what they can do on their own. So if they want it, need it, & we can possibly arrange it, I think we should try. Of course, it presents hardships and difficulties for others, particularly when children are involved, but we're all supposed to be one Family & love one another, and if the situation desperately warrants a separation, then for that three-month period the Family will have to work it out and trust the Lord to have someone help them take care of their children when necessary.

30. If both parties really love the Lord & are desperate to find His Will, hopefully at the end of their time apart, if they're both sincere, the Lord is going to show them the same thing, whether or not they should get back together again. If they don't want to get back together, & want a permanent separation, then that's much more serious, & a lot of factors have to really be weighed out, especially what's best for the children & their care.

31. Now we don't want to have a whole rash of separations just because a lot of people would like to have a vacation from each other for awhile & because they think that maybe it will be easier for them if they're apart! We're talking about people that are really having problems, or that are really being hindered by each other. Usually, I think the Lord requires people to try to get the victory in their situation where they are, instead of escaping it.

### WHEN ONE MATE WANTS TO SEPARATE & THE OTHER DOESN'T!

32. What do we do if one party wants to separate & the other doesn't? I think in a case like that, the one that really wants to, who thinks it's of the Lord, should probably win out. In other words, they can say, "Well, why don't we try it for just a few months & see how it will work?"

33. We're not just talking about the pleasure or the personal desires of a woman or of a man, we're talking about the Lord's Work now & the end of the World & a desperate need to do our best for Jesus, to win souls, to accomplish all we can for the Lord! This changes things slightly.—It's not just a little man-woman situation, it's just not that simple any more.

34. Of course, our leaders need to be very, very prayerful & Spirit-led when counselling people about such situations. Many times they'll have to get in there & observe for awhile & hear both sides of the story. But even then, after you hear both sides, some people are much more convincing & much better salesmen than others, more persuasive, & can present their side a lot more sincerely & believably than the other party can. But that doesn't necessarily mean that they're right, it may just mean that they're a better talker! So you're going to have to really pray & be Spirit-led when counselling people about such changes & separations.

35. And if there's a case where a couple feels that they're being pressured, that an injustice is being done to them, they should feel free to write personal letters, unread by anyone else, directly to their NO, so they can appeal & present their case.—And if the NOs need help or counsel in the situation, then they can write their CROs or write us! So the leadership needs to get in there & investigate & find out what the situation really is. It can't just be because some girl happens to read something like this, so she decides that her husband is a little weak & blah blah blah! You can't just go by anybody's whim, such as when someone falls in love with someone else & figures they'd rather have someone else than their mate, who they now suddenly feel is too weak to suit them, so they request a separation.

36. If someone doesn't want to live with you, you ought to have enough love for them that you're not going to try to force them to stay with you, right? Who wants somebody to stay with them that doesn't want to be with them? It reminds me of a fellow I saw in a movie once, he said the most loving thing he ever did for his wife was to let her go, because he knew that's what she wanted to do.

### REVIEW OF THE SEPARATION CATEGORIES!

37. Let's review what we've covered so far: Basically we've got three categories of situations that warrant separations. The first & most common is the category of the couple that brings it up themselves, it's their own idea that they want to separate. Either both of them or one of them wants to separate.

38. The second category are those that have a serious open problem, such as loud arguing, screaming or even physical violence, & leadership simply needs to go in & say, "This is enough, you separate or get out of the Family!"

39. And the third category, which as I said, would be just a very small amount of cases, is where leadership definitely sees that people for some reason or another are mismatched, or they could do much more for the Lord if they were separated than being together, even though they might not even seem to have any big open problems.

### GETTING BACK TOGETHER!

40. For whatever reason they were originally separated, if both parties want to get back together again, then I don't think anybody should try to stop them, even in those cases where they were separated because they were screaming or being violent with each other. I think we have to take it in good faith if they want to get back together that they're not going to do it again. But if they do, the first time they do it again we will probably just have to separate them permanently!

41. But I don't think we can do this sort of thing too often. People can't just go back & forth, back & forth, back & forth &

separate for 3 months, get back together for 3 months, separate for another 3 months etc. etc.! It's simply too much trouble for everybody. They're going to have to make up their minds permanently whether they want to stay apart or get together & stay together!

42. I think it should be the couple's responsibility themselves to get back together when their 3 months is up, they're the ones that should fight for it. If they want to get back together they should say, "Listen, LAS, DAS, NAS, whoever you are, our 3 months is up & we're going to get back together unless we hear from you otherwise!" They shouldn't write a letter & say, "Our 3 months is up, can we get back together?" If they both want to get back together, then they should simply notify their leadership that that's what they're planning on doing unless they hear otherwise.

### WHEN COUPLES DON'T WANT TO GET BACK TOGETHER!

43. What happens if after their temporary 3-month separation, they decide they want to be permanently separated? If they've got a lot of children, then we have to be very careful, very prayerful, & it's a very big step that the couple is deciding to take, & they'd better have the faith for it!—And we should do all we can to try to see that whatever is best for the children is what's worked out.

44. In most cases the couple usually has to split up the children, unless they agree that one is going to take all of them & can somehow manage that way. But I suppose the normal thing is that they split up the children because it would be too much of a burden on either one of them to take all of the kids themselves.

45. We've had a number of cases where the husband was able to leave his wife without any real problem because somebody else had volunteered to take care of her & the kids, or she fell in love with someone else & someone else with her, & they'd gotten together. So in effect, the children already have another Daddy, so there wasn't really much problem with it. In a case like that he's not really deserting her. She's cared for & in some cases, she may have gotten what she wanted.

46. In cases where they decide to permanently separate, they're going to have to have the faith that they can make it on their own, with the Lord, of course, if that's really His Will. They can't just be following their own selfish desires, they have to have faith that the Lord will provide for them. The wife can't just expect that leadership is somehow going to give her a fulltime bread-winner. So such couples that permanently separate who have a lot of kids, are going to have to have a lot of faith that the Lord is going to supply & that they're not going to be a burden on others. If they have each other & they can make it together, then before they separate they are going to have to have a lot of faith that they can make it apart!—Without overburdening others.

47. Children need parents, & every child needs both a mother & a father if possible. So for the children's sake, our Family's sake & our witness & sample's sake, such cases must be handled very prayerfully, as some of these separations of large families have been a very poor testimony.

### ARGUING IN FRONT OF CHILDREN!

48. If the parents are such terrible examples to their own children of constantly nagging, arguing, fighting & showing a real lack of love & consideration, in cases like that it's almost better that they separate & not be such a terrible example! In some cases the mother & father seem to be good to the children, but horrible to each other, so we almost have to decide which is the most important: To get rid of the bad sample or to keep the mother's & father's care there for the kids. It certainly seems that if parents in the Family really love their children, that they would be absolutely desperate to get the victory over such problems!—Or at least to keep them from being so open & so obvious that it will damage their kids!

49. My goodness, if you have the Lord, you can certainly do something to prevent such a terrible, terrible example being shown to your own children! Fighting & fussing & arguing all the time results in real insecurity for the poor kids. Even if they know the mother & the father love them, if they're afraid that the father & mother are going to split up all the time, or

they're afraid they're going to hit each other or hurt each other, they're not going to be too secure about anything!

### OTHER PERTINENT POINTS!

50. Another point regarding the children is that if the parents are going to separate, even a temporary 3-month separation, they need to make sure to wisely & lovingly give some kind of explanation to the children. They could tell them something like, "Well, just like you kids get spankings sometimes when you're bad & you have lessons to learn, Mommy & Daddy have some lessons to learn now too. So we're going to be apart for awhile so we can get closer to the Lord & seek Him & His Will & learn the lessons He wants to teach us.—And then, Lord willing, we will be back together again in just a few months."—Or whatever the case is. They owe it to their children to somehow explain it to them & not just to be silent about it & act like nothing's happened, which will just confuse the poor kids.

51. Another point worth mentioning has to do with those who are having a temporary separation because they were putting each other before the Lord & His Work: If an overly romantic relationship is what caused their problems in the first place, they should be cautioned not to go out & immediately start another big love relationship with someone else! If they get all romantically involved right away in another relationship, they may wind up right back in the same problem that they just came out of!—So why suggest they separate or even allow them to separate if they're going to jump right back into the same kind of situation that was holding them back & causing them trouble in the first place? If their problem is serious enough to warrant a separation, they should use their time apart to concentrate on the Lord & to renew their relationship with Him, & not seek out another human relationship in which they'll get all entangled again!

52. Something else to be aware of is that when two people do have to split up, but they still love each other, or even if one of them is still in love with the other, it's really difficult for them if they have to stay together in the same Home or the same situ-

tion. Very rarely should they both remain in the same Home.—Only if both of them are desperately needed! In almost all cases it would be much better to separate them & put them in separate Homes, if possible.

53. As I said, there are so many difficult things regarding this topic that we have to really be prayerful & Spirit-led! A lot has to do with the people themselves & what they want to do & what they decide, but a lot is also up to us as their shepherds & overseers in the Lord. Each situation, each couple, each individual needs to be dealt with individually, personally, prayerfully & carefully.

54. God help us all to lay aside the weights & sins that so easily beset us, so we can run the race that is set before us, & channel our time & energies, desires & strengths into winning the World to Jesus in these last desperate hours in which so much depends upon us & our faithfulness to the Lord & our preaching of the Gospel & winning all whom we can into His Eternal Kingdom!

55. P.S. Please bear in mind that the point of this talk, & our objective, is not to separate & break up all of our couples!—There's a difference between couples who are going through temporary "growing pains", minor problems & conflicts, & those that have reached a dead end & are absolutely hindered, ineffective & spiritually stagnated because of the marital rut they've gotten themselves into!—Some people are simply incompatible as mates!

56. Most couples who are having problems shouldn't react to this with, "Alright!—Let's break it up!" Their first reaction should be, "Let's get desperate with the Lord & see if we can work things out!"—Like the parable of the man who had sought fruit on the fig tree for three years, who felt like giving up & cutting it down.—But the dresser of the vineyard said, "Let it alone till I dig around it & dung it: And if it bear fruit, well. And if not, then after that thou shalt cut it down." (Luk.13:6-9)—Give each other—and God—a chance! Then, if after an agreed time, you still can't "get it together", then perhaps try a temporary separation!—Amen? God bless & lead you & make you a blessing!

## BACKSLIDERS, EXCOMS & IMMATURE LEADERSHIP!

Maria #87 DO 2340 8/87

—By Maria



(Notes on a recent discussion Mama had regarding some Family members who either left or were excommunicated:)

1. To understand why some things have happened, you've got to not only put yourself in the people's shoes who

had the problems, but also in their leadership's shoes as well. If these people who have backslidden & been excommunicated had been real good or nearly perfect people, they wouldn't have backslidden & they wouldn't have had such serious problems. Almost all of them have had some pretty big problems, but it's true that in many cases the poor leadership was in some ways too immature or too young, & just didn't quite know how to cope with it. So, sad to say, they frequently mishandled things.

2. I wouldn't say it was because the leadership's motives were wrong. Maybe in a few rare cases there was someone who was jealous or wanted the guy's wife or something, but normally it was just because they were young & immature & rather unsure of their own position. Basically, they just didn't know what to do with some of these problem people.—People that in many cases were actually much smarter & more talented than they were, but perhaps were real stinkers, real rascals, real self-righteous & critical as well.

3. So some of our poor little leaders, they just didn't know what to do with them! They should have done a lot of things, but in many cases, they just sort of did what was human.—They

felt frustrated & unable to cope with the person's problems so they got rid of the problem by getting rid of the person. They just did the natural thing, when what they should have done is something a little bit more supernatural if they'd really been depending on the Lord & desperate with Him! That's what made them immature, young leaders in the first place, they weren't utterly dependent on the Lord & desperate with Him for the answers!

4. When you have some of these super-duper whiz kids & smart-alecks, they're usually not very easy to handle. They often want to be the leaders themselves, & think they should be, or at least they want to be "armchair generals" of some kind. They don't exactly always want to do all the hard work of a leader, but they would like to be in some sort of an advisory capacity, & therefore it's difficult for people to deal with them.

### **WINNING BACK BACKSLIDERS!**

5. We have to look at both sides of these situations, & there's a certain amount of blame on both sides. But when we realise that a serious mistake has been made & perhaps someone has been excommunicated who maybe shouldn't have been, I certainly think somebody should try to rectify it. We should try to win & restore our brothers when we have offended them, though like it says, it's usually pretty hard to do.—Pro.18:19. But it doesn't say it's impossible, & we have won a lot of brothers & sisters back into the Family.

6. Of course, they loved the Lord, & they knew that the Word was right & that the Lord had not failed them. A lot of them probably realised that their being out of the Family had a lot to do with the immaturity of their former leaders. But they still knew that the Lord & the Family were right, & they were willing to forgive their leadership, as well as repent of their own sins.

7. But not everybody should necessarily go out & try to win these backsliders & former members back into the Family. Often, they're full of all kinds of doubts, & you have to sit there & listen to all their complaints & grievances & bitternesses poured out about everybody, including the top leadership. It's a tough job to win such folks back, & it should be done with team-

work & prayer & counsel & permission. "We then that are strong ought to bear the infirmities of the weak!"—Romans 15:1.

8. Usually you've had some kind of indication that they want to return to some amount of fellowship, or they've reached out in some way before you try to win them back. We usually have some hope that they can be restored, or the Lord will lay them real strongly on somebody's heart.—Or maybe you see them on the street & they act real friendly & they show a sincere interest in the Word. There's usually some indication that there's at least some spark of life there. We just can't start going down the list of all the backsliders we've ever had & checking them out one by one! I think to save all our time, the Lord would lead us to certain people who He wants to at least give another chance to, or who deserve an apology.

9. Some people just can't seem to survive in the Family, not because it's so much their fault, but it's the fault of others. I don't know if I'd have survived & made it in a lot of our Homes! Let's face it, to survive in our Family takes a lot of courage, a lot of conviction & a lot of guts!—As well as a lot of faith & willingness to do things sometimes that you maybe don't even know are of the Lord!

10. I hope I'm not being too hard on our leadership, but that's been my impression some of the time. Our people have to go through an awful lot to live in the Family! So in some ways, I don't blame some of them for not wanting to live under some of our leadership.—Particularly some of our past leadership, like the Chain! A lot depends on who the leadership is & what Home they're in.

### **WHAT TO DO WITH INDEPENDENT PEOPLE!**

11. Back to what I was saying about why some of these people have left or been kicked out of the Family: Some of these high-powered independent personalities have caused a lot of problems!—And as a result, their leaders haven't always quite known how to handle them. Many times the people were actually good people, they sincerely wanted to serve the Lord & they loved the Family, but they just had problems living under their

leadership—living with & relating to other people.

12. Well, it seems to me that with some of these cases, the Lord's Work would be better off & we'd all be able to do more for the Lord if they'd just stop all the bickering & the contention, & get out on their own, & everybody would be their own boss!—In other words, if they really want to serve the Lord, but they can't get along with other people or with their leadership, separate!—Let 'em strike out on their own!

13. Dad has always said this: If you can't live together, live separately! And if they can't get along living under their leadership, then let them be their own leadership! They'll either have to be in a Home with others who can live under them, or they'll have to be by themselves somewhere & simply be their own leaders. Why condemn them? It causes a lot more problems trying to constantly battle the difficulties & obstacles that come up when people are living together who can't get along with each other than if they would just pull out & live on their own.

14. Let's do the Lord's Work!—That's the first & most important thing, seeking first the Kingdom of God, not just seeking to try to battle our problems & overcome all our shortcomings & weaknesses! If trying to make certain people cooperate & work together is going to be the major battle, our major work & take most of our time, then we're not going to get the Lord's Work done!

15. So why not just let such people go out & "do their own thing" & serve the Lord the way they want to!—At least they're going to be preaching the Gospel, they're going to be serving the Lord. They may do it in their own way, but at least they're still doing it, & that's the main thing! If we, like the churches, get so busy trying to perfect ourselves, trying to get the victory over all our personal problems, & we wind up spending so much time & effort on that, we won't get the Lord's Work done!

16. Of course we should try to get along, & we do try to work on our problems. But people that have just too big a problem along that line, & constantly wind up in contention with others & fighting each other, let's not let that go on for too long! Let's just let them get out, be on their own & be their own leadership, if that's what they want. As long as they're doing the

Lord's Work, winning souls & getting out the Message, why not? It's like I recently said about separations being the solution for some of these problem marriages. (See "Separations" by Maria, FSM 82)

17. If you can't get along after such a long time, if it doesn't look like you're going to be able to get the victory & make the grade, & you've tried everything else, then why stay together & both be ineffective?—Why not split & hopefully be effective? If that's the answer, why don't we do it?

18. The be-all & end-all isn't just to have everybody join up & live communally with 30 or 40 people in one Home! If they can do it, of course it certainly has its advantages for the people who are willing to work in cooperation & harmony together.—Living together has lots & lots of advantages, & that's why we do it. But if some people simply can't work that way, then let's not make that our major work to overcome their problems of not getting along with others! Let's just let them go on their own, & not condemn them. Let's be thankful that they want to serve the Lord & preach the Gospel!

19. We've got quite a few pretty independent people, & they're usually real high-powered people, & maybe self-righteous as well, & they're usually pretty intelligent & talented.—This is one reason why they sometimes have a hard time living & working under leadership that they can find a lot of fairly obvious faults in, because the leadership isn't as smart or talented or whatever as they are. Of course, the leaders may be more spiritual, & we hope they are. But it's often sort of difficult for the strong, talented person to see how that is going to help much when the poor little leader doesn't have a lot of talent or ability, & perhaps isn't even very mature or very wise.

20. Some people just can't stand to live under such circumstances! So my goodness, why should we try to force them to live under other people if it just ends up in bickering, arguing, contention & hurt feelings? If people just can't do it, let's forget it!—Let's let them get out & do what they can do, & what they're supposed to do, & that's preach the Gospel to every creature!

21. Of course, Dad has already told them that that's what they're supposed to do, but I think a lot of them get condemned

if they leave under circumstances that are difficult like that, they feel very condemned, & they often are condemned by others as well. Even if they're not excommunicated, they might wind up being bad-mouthed or spoken against in some way. I don't know exactly how it happens in every case.

22. I just think that this has been the problem in some cases, & has resulted in a lot of people leaving the Family. They felt they couldn't make it living with or under others, so they felt they were on their own & didn't really belong in the Family.—Or sometimes they haven't felt that, but their leadership has, & has labelled them as incorrigible & independent & not deserving of being in the Family.—Which I don't think is the right attitude at all!

23. For God's sake, we don't want people in our Homes who can't get along with other people!—But we do want them in the Family if they sincerely love the Lord & want to preach the Gospel, & they comply with our basic rules. Either let them be the leader & find some people who can live under them, or let 'm go off on their own & be the leader of their own little family! For goodness sake, we don't want a lot of squabbling & contention in our Homes, we want to work together to preach the Gospel! So we should almost be thankful when such people leave.—Try to help them! Help them to do the job where they want to be & where they'll be happy! Don't just condemn them for not being able to live under somebody!—After all, maybe the problem is you, & you're impossible to live with!

24. I don't think we should try to force anybody to live together, or condemn them if they can't! Like some of our so-called backsliders: Many of them didn't want to be backsliders, but they just couldn't seem to make it in the Family Home, so they figured where else did they have to go? When they left, they were considered backsliders, but actually, they probably wouldn't have backslidden if our people would have given them their blessing: "OK, you can't make it here, we understand.—So go & start a Home over there & live by yourself & we can fellowship together sometimes! Just keep serving the Lord & tithing & we'll give you the lit!"—And everybody could have been happy.

25. Why should we try to corral everyone & make them feel like they have to live in a combo Home of 20-40 people just to be able to say they're in the Family? Of course, in Europe & North America, a lot of our folks do live in little one-family Homes, little families on their own, so a lot of them are already doing that. But on the mission field, if we have people do that, I think they're often condemned, feeling like something is really wrong with them. Well, I'm sure some of them do have their problems, but if that's what they want to do & they feel like they can serve the Lord better that way, for goodness sakes, they probably can! So let 'm serve the Lord better their own way if that's how they feel they can do it! Our Homes are so big anyway, why do we want to crowd 40 people into one Home if somebody wants to live on their own in another Home??!

26. So if they want to leave, let 'm! If they're friendly & want to keep preaching the Gospel, winning souls & serving the Lord, but they just don't find themselves compatible with certain personalities, why should we condemn them? God bless them!—Amen?

#### SENDING PEOPLE BACK TO THEIR HOME FIELDS!

27. Of course, when someone has had some pretty serious problems on the field & they're really not doing very well, their leadership can be perfectly justified in suggesting that they go back to their Home field. But this doesn't necessarily mean that they are excommunicated.

28. Even to send people back to the States doesn't necessarily mean excommunication, unless they're doing something really bad. As usual, each case has to be decided individually. If it's a case where they're breaking rules, they're weak, & they're on a field where things are difficult, perhaps the change of going to an easier field where there would not be so much pressure on them for funds & for everything else will help them to get the victory.

29. There are a lot of problems with languages & finances & all kinds of other difficulties on the field. So if they can go to a Home field where they can still be useful to the Lord, still

witness, still tithe, & where they wouldn't be a security breach, why not encourage them to do so?—Why should they be excommunicated when a transfer to an easier field might help them get the victories they need, & where they can continue serving the Lord & being a blessing to others?

30. If they've really misbehaved & had some serious problems or disobediences, maybe they'll have to be put down to babe's status. But in most cases they can still be part of the Family, & they can still witness & serve the Lord. Maybe there's an entire family, & maybe the problem is just one of the mates, which granted, is a big problem, & on a tough pioneer field such problems are amplified. But if they were to go to an easier Home field, hopefully they can sort out their personal problems there & continue to serve the Lord. Even if one of them is very weak, do we really want to excommunicate them?

31. Each case really takes individual thought & discussion & prayer! Recently, one of our leaders confessed to our Ambassadors that he had been having some serious problems.—Problems for which others have been excommunicated by him in the past. Well, I didn't even consider excommunicating him. I just considered telling him, "You had better stop that right now!—That's not of the Lord at all! You get the victory over it, & if you don't, you're not going to be able to hold the leadership position we've entrusted you with!"

32. But excommunication never even entered my mind! I just realised that that was his weakness, but I believe his heart is more or less in the right place. I don't think just because someone slips or falls & then confesses it, that we should immediately excommunicate them!

33. A lot depends on exactly what the situation is & what kind of damage the offender is doing, how much influence it's having & upon whom. It depends on how bad it is & who it's affecting, & especially where their hearts are really at, as well as their motivation & desire to get the victory or their lack of desire. You have to prayerfully take all of these things into consideration in order to decide whether it's necessary to completely excommunicate them or put them down to babe's status or just chastise or penalise them by sending them back to their Home field

or whatever. There are actually quite a few alternative choices.

## WHEN TO EXCOMMUNICATE!

34. In a serious case where their heart definitely is not in the right place & they're very rebellious & reprobate, when they've stolen things & they've seriously endangered the Work in any way, we certainly don't want to be overly merciful.—Such serious cases need to be dealt with & quickly! When someone is really out of control & causing serious problems that could harm the Work, we need to be able to tell the System authorities, "Look, this guy is out of fellowship with us. We do not agree with his behaviour & actions.—He's not one of us, we've excommunicated him! We are against what he is doing as much as you are, & we no longer even have any fellowship with him. Whatever he says, he is not a part of our organisation, & we've asked him to leave & go back to his Home country!"

35. Really serious crimes & offences that could jeopardise our Work should definitely be excommunicated! Like Dad says, it's, "Get the victory or get out!" Well, we can modify that according to each situation, but when they are rebellious & reprobate & obviously are not even trying to yield & get the victory, they aren't trying to do their best, then the sooner we get rid of them the better!

36. Another reason why it might be better to simply suggest to some people that they go back to their home field is that it might help you to avoid all kinds of terrible problems if you excommunicate them & they decide to turn on you & start waging an aggressive war of revenge against you on the field. By letting them stay in the Family, but on their Home field, it's giving them another chance.—And if their serious problems continue there, then they could be excommunicated. But we should give them a little bit of time after they get back to see if they're going to straighten up.

37. Because most of our former Chain leadership was pretty unmerciful, when our Ambassadors go into a new situation, they almost have to bend over backwards & go to the other extreme of showing the people a lot of love, mercy & forgiveness.

But once they've established all that & the people are sure of their love, then they can start cracking down & really taking care of the problem cases & getting the rotten apples out of the basket.

**38. There has been so much mishandling of people in the past, & people have been so hurt & wounded,** if our Ambassadors were to just automatically start cracking down on everybody first thing, the people wouldn't have a chance to feel that their leadership really loves them. People misinterpret things sometimes, & in spite of all their problems, they need to see that we really love them, & that we are going to try to have mercy on them. But we can't do that forever if people persist in their waywardness!

**39. We just can't let serious problems go on & on.**—And our leadership needs to have that conviction in those cases that really deserve & warrant it, to give it to them & get rid of them! And our people need to realise that it's not just because their leaders are tyrants.—It's not their idea, it's in the Letters, & is what needs to be done! Anybody who doesn't live up to the Word, to our basic rules, & thereby endangers or hinders the Work security-wise or otherwise, they really need to be dealt with.

**40. Anyone who either slows down & hinders the Work or endangers the security of the Work in any way,** Dad has already given us the Word in the Letters to get rid of them. If you'd ask Dad about some of these specific cases of troublemakers, he'd crack down on them immediately! So for our leadership to get tough & to purge out some of these severe problem cases is not because they're tyrants, it's what's necessary & what is going to help save the field! So don't feel overly sorry for some of these poor problem people.

**41. What's more important?—To have too much mercy on a few problem people, & possibly lose the field?—Or to rid the rebels & hopefully save the whole Work?**—Thus enabling the majority of our people to safely remain on that field so our work of winning souls can continue! Just because we have to sometimes be a little hard on some people, it's far better that we be hard on a few & leave the field open for the many.

## EXCOMMUNICATION MISTAKES!—ROMANS 8:28!

**42. Even if our leadership sometimes makes a few mistakes, even if we possibly misjudge the situation in some cases,** it's better that we do that & we're sure that we've gotten rid of the real serious problems, even if along with them we might lose a few that maybe aren't that bad a problem. It's better we go to that extreme than going to the other, & leaving too many problems on the field, & as a result losing the entire field or greatly hindering the Lord's Work!

**43. We all make mistakes, so maybe somebody will be asked to leave that shouldn't have been,** but "all things work together for good".—Rom.8:28. We certainly trust & hope that our leaders are going to use love in doing it, & we're sure they'll try to use lots of wisdom & prayer, but we can't say they're never going to make any mistakes, that they're never going to accidentally accuse somebody falsely. Hopefully they won't & they're going to try not to, but even if they do, our people need to remember that the Lord doesn't let anything happen that isn't going to work out for good for His children. So if that happens, well, there must be some lessons to be learned in it for those involved.

**44. We've had some people who have written us after they've been excommunicated & they've said,** "Well, we still don't really see the reason for it, & we don't really believe we were justifiably excommunicated. But we must confess, we see why the Lord allowed it, to teach us lessons that we certainly needed to learn. We had a lot of self-righteousness & pride & criticism."—Which, of course, almost proves that maybe they were at least a borderline case.

**45. They've said, "We had problems with these various things & we needed to learn some lessons.** We needed to get desperate with the Lord. We needed to not take the Family for granted any more & to see how much we needed the Family, which we never would have realised as clearly if we hadn't been excommunicated! We needed to value the Lord's Word more, & now that we're not getting it, or not getting it in such abundance, we value it more than ever!"

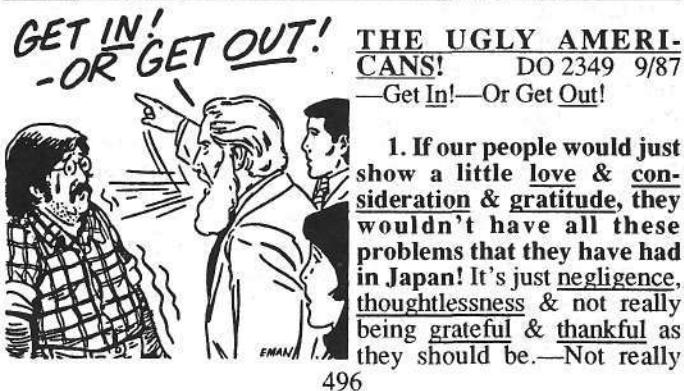
**46. If people really love the Lord, there are a lot of good**

lessons to be learned even through excommunication, or through being demoted to babe's status or sent back to the Home field or whatever the case may be! It's not going to make the people who love the Lord & whose hearts are in the right place backslide & become bitter enemies. The Lord will use it for good & not for bad.

47. Even if maybe they were a borderline case, maybe there was a question & maybe they shouldn't have been excommunicated or should not have been sent back.—Maybe the leadership did make a mistake. But the Lord didn't make a mistake, & that's where faith comes in, faith to believe that He has His hand on our lives & won't allow anything to happen that's not somehow within His Will & plan.

48. In other words, we certainly could make such mistakes, but in the Lord's overall general view of things, He doesn't make mistakes, He allows things to happen & promises that all things work together for our good! Sometimes He even uses our mistakes to accomplish His purposes. PTL!

49. So Lord help us all to look not only on the outward appearance in our dealings with others, but to look on the heart, like the Lord does! (1Sam.16:7)—And better yet, may we always look to the Lord for His wisdom, discernment & Love!—Amen?—Do you? GBY!



being loving & kind & considerate like they ought to be!

2. (Maria: Many of those Japanese customs are for some good purpose.)—Customs which they consider part of their culture. It shows what a wonderful culture they have, all of those little customs that are so thoughtful & kind & appreciative. (Maria: And clean too!—Like taking off your shoes before you go into the house.) Yes.

3. Our missionaries just need to be more Christ-like, that's all! What would Jesus do?—He would do His best not to offend the Japanese, & to show appreciation & gratitude & thanksgiving & thoughtfulness & kindness & consideration. These things should just come naturally to Christians, to those who love the Lord & love others!

4. (Maria: If our people were courteous & well-behaved, even if they did unintentionally break some of their host country's rules & traditions, their love & consideration in other areas would more than make up for it, & they'd probably be forgiven for a lot of their mistakes.) Exactly. (Maria: But it seems like so many of them are just so pushy, so impolite.)

5. It's selfishness! That's what it is!—It's selfishness! They just need to have love, that's the whole thing! If they had as much love as they should have, they wouldn't have all these problems. They'd be thoughtful & kind & considerate & courteous & polite & grateful & clean. (Maria: And here they've had experts for years that wanted to teach them all that, a precious King & Queen, actual Family Members who wanted to help them in every way, but they just almost slapped them in the face, refused their help! They've had wonderful, wonderful people to help them.) Amen, God bless them!

6. God bless the dear people who have been willing to put up with our Family members in Japan all these years! It shows the patience of the Japanese. (Maria: Yes, it's a real miracle!)—The kindness & mercy of the Japanese people. PTL!

7. Well, I just want to say that they had better perk up and toe the line and straighten out, or we'd better throw out the ones that don't!—Those who think that they are some kind of smart-aleck know-it-alls who don't have to conform to anybody else's culture! It's one thing to be a rebel for Jesus & a revolu-

tionary Christian, but that doesn't mean you have to be discourteous & impolite & inconsiderate & thoughtless & unthankful, & just go bulldozing your way right across other people's culture, contrary & counter to their culture!

8. We may belong to a counter-culture against the American type of society, but it looks to me like the Japanese type of society is far more ideal, so we don't have to be counter-culture to Japan & to the Japanese! And our people in Japan had better snap out of it & straighten up! I gave a talk along these lines once before about some of our Americans in South America. (See "Face Up, Dress Up, Trim Up, Straighten Up!—Or Out You Go!", No. 1202.)

9. When in Rome, do as the Romans do, when in Japan, do as the Japanese do! That's a general rule of thumb for all Mankind. When in Latin America do as the Latin Americans do!—Behave yourself! Try to fit in! You don't have to compromise your faith or your belief, to fit into a culture & conform to their customs!—Especially when they're good customs & they show thoughtfulness & consideration & courtesy & love! Maybe they've become formalised, but at least it's a good form! It's certainly a Heaven of a lot better than the Hellish form of the Americans!—The boorish, clumsy, bulldozing savagery of the Americans!

10. No wonder they've turned around & called the Americans the "ugly Americans"!—Compared to them, they are ugly! Americans are ugly, boorish & clumsy! I just can't think of enough ugly words for them, the selfish, ugly, inconsiderate, unkind, cruel & savage Americans!

11. To think that they'd go to the beautiful, lovely, artistic, wonderful, civilised culture of the Japanese & throw their weight around & act as ugly as they do at home is just horrifying!—Absolutely horrifying! I shudder to think of it! I'll tell you, they'd better straighten out & behave, & learn something from the Japanese for a change, look up to them & admire them & want to emulate & be like them!—Or get out!

12. (Maria: If we hear of any more cases of offending the Japanese, we'll have to throw them out.) Right! Absolutely! Any of these ugly Americans that are caught misbehaving there

any more ought to be absolutely excommunicated!—Especially people who are so ungrateful to people who have been so good to them!—The Japanese & the Latin Americans & God knows, everywhere! These so-called "foreigners" have been very good to those who, to them, really are foreigners, the Americans mostly!

13. And any members of our Family who don't know how to toe the mark & toe the line & straighten up & straighten out & behave like civilised people do, in places like Japan & Latin America & the Orient, out they go! We'll have no more of that kind of behaviour again! We're not going to tolerate it, we're just not going to stand for it, that's all! Now you just tell them!: Straighten up or get out!

14. I'm just amazed that those leaders have let them get away with what they've gotten away with! It shows the low quality of their leadership! (Maria: They rarely get places on time. They don't take care of their vehicles, they let them sit & rot. They provision thousands of Dollars of goods & let them spoil. They live in the homes of their kings & let them fall into a state of disrepair. They "borrow" things from their kings & don't return them. They offend their neighbours because they refuse to conform to local custom. The list is endless, it goes on & on & on!)

15. Well, we're going to get Japan cleaned up, I'll tell you! I'd rather have half as many people, but decent, well-behaved people, thoughtful, considerate, loving, kind, grateful people, than a bunch of those boors! We're going to purge the ranks!—If we have to have a pogrom & just get rid of these ill-behaved, misbehaving little savages, juvenile delinquents! I'd rather have Gideon's 300 than some of these places' 3,000! We've always had that principle. I'd always rather trim them down & boot 'em out & get rid of the troublemakers & the people who set a bad example & are ill-behaved & offensive! I'd rather get rid of them any day! We're not for numbers!—We're for quality! Numbers mean nothing if you don't have quality!

16. We're for real Christians who act & behave like Christians & treat others like Christians should!—Not just a bunch of hippie communes where they live like Hell!—Dirty, impolite,

discourteous, inconsiderate, just ignoring & flouting the sweet & beautiful customs of superior cultures!

17. And our kids had better straighten out & not be ugly Americans any more or they're going to be out! I'm just furious about it! I want you to get Japan cleaned up & cleaned out of all those ugly people who can't conform to a beautiful, cultured, courteous & polite society that is built on consideration & thoughtfulness & gratitude! (Maria: Yes, & industriousness & diligence & faithfulness in the little things.) And cleanliness, frugality, being saving & not wasteful! Boy oh boy oh boy! If they don't get straightened out quick, they're going to be sorry they ever went there to be such pitiful, horrible examples of Christianity!

18. Well, I'll tell you right now, if they don't straighten out, Japan will be better off without them!—And the Family will certainly be better off without them! So they'd better get out or get in!—Or get in or get out, one or the other! They'd better melt in & fit in & get in or get out! (Maria: Yes, & treat our Japanese disciples with a little respect & a little love & not as second-class citizens!)

19. The Americans had better wake up to the fact that the Japanese are today the best people in the World! They're outwitting & outdoing the Americans on every hand in every way! The ugly Americans ought to be ashamed of themselves, look up to the Japanese & learn something from them. They need to! I think that would be a good title for this, "Get In!—Or Get Out!" Praise the Lord! So get in or get out!—Amen?

---

## SUMMARY OF AIDS RULES & POLICIES!

9/87

—By WS Staff & Dad.

All new disciples must take an AIDS test before they are allowed to move in with us! If their test proves negative, they may move into our Homes, but they must abstain from sex with others for their first six months in the Family, after which they take a second AIDS test to make sure they are clear. It is absolutely crucial that our babes refrain from sex during their first six

months, & that our older members lay off of them sexually!

Anyone who indulges in sex with a new disciple who has been in the Family for less than six months & has not passed a second AIDS test, is not only disobeying the Word & the Lord by such indulgence, but are putting themselves, their mates, children & anyone else with whom they have contact, at risk! Therefore sex with babes is now an excommunicable offense!

No-sex-with-babes means just that—no sex! Not even mutual masturbation, oral sex or whatever, & not with condoms either! The counsel regarding using condoms to avoid AIDS is to our folks who have sex with well-known close friends who live outside.

All sex with outsiders is now banned!—Unless they're already close & well-known friends!—We're now DFing instead!

—Which means ESing with sex is now out!—It is too dangerous for our girls to deliberately put themselves into contact with the high-risk people who make use of such services! ESing involving sex is now unequivocally banned to all Family members, but hostessing without sex is okay!

All "high risk" Family members should take an AIDS test!—Especially those who have fairly recently come out of a background in which sodomy, intravenous drug-taking, prostitution etc. were involved! Also, FFers—ESers particularly—who have had a lot of frequent contact with outsiders are also advised to take the test if they wish to continue to have sex with other Family members! If your last "high risk" contacts were over six months ago, then only one test is necessary. However, if you have had such contacts more recently, after your first test, you should abstain from intimate contact with others until you have taken a second test, 6 months after your last "high risk" contact. Sorry, but it's better safe than sorry!

And beware of needles!—Hypodermics, as well as those used to  Pierce ears! In many places, particularly in the poorer Third World developing countries, doctors, nurses, dentists etc. are not always as cautious as they should be when administering drugs, medication etc. with hypodermic needles. Needles cost money, so they are frequently reused. Therefore, Family members should beware of this danger, & should not get shots or undergo the use

of hypodermic needles unless they absolutely have to!—And if & when they do, make sure they are new, disposable syringes, possibly even purchasing their own from a drug store or pharmacist.

**It goes without saying that blood transfusions should be avoided!**—And if the doctors tell you that it's a "life or death" necessity to take one, then you'd better count the cost, that it could very well be your life or death by AIDS if you receive some unknown infected person's blood into your body! Besides, to "drink", or take someone else's blood into your body is absolutely unscriptural!—Lev.7:26.—But in some places like the U.S. it's against Man's laws not to, if the doctor orders it!—So pray!

**Oral sex must also be avoided with outsiders**, as the AIDS virus can enter the skin & mucous membranes of the mouth, as easily as those of the vagina!—Particularly if there are any slight cuts, scratches, lacerations, sores etc. on your mouth, gums, lips etc.!

**If someone has been possibly exposed to AIDS**, they should discontinue all sex with others until they are cleared by at least two AIDS tests! To reason, "Well, we can continue making love, because if I have it, the person I share with would already have it also", is absolutely wrong! Just because you happen to make love with someone that has AIDS does not necessarily mean that you've contracted it, as it usually enters the body through slight tears, scratches or abrasions in the skin or tissue. However, the more contact you have, the greater the risk of infection! So to continue to make love with someone when you know you have been exposed to AIDS, & haven't gotten your second test, is putting the one you're with at great risk!—Not to mention anyone else that they share with as well!

**So if someone has had direct sexual contact with someone else who turns out to be an AIDS carrier**, the least they should do is to immediately get their first test, & then abstain from all sexual activity with anyone—even their mates—for six months from the time of their contact with the carrier, at which time they can get their second test to confirm that they are free from the virus! They should then abstain from all intimate contact with others for an additional 6 months—or a total of one year from

their last contact with the AIDS-infected person.—The reason for this is because recent researchers report that the AIDS virus can remain undetected for up to one year. (See WND 200) This should apply to second & third & fourth parties as well; if someone made love to party A, & party A turns out to get positive results on an AIDS test, then it is imperative that party B immediately get a test & abstain from further sexual contact with anyone for one year, as well as party C & D etc.!—Let's isolate it!

**Also, any new disciples who have come from a background of intravenous drug-taking, homosexuality, prostitution etc.**, should also abstain from having sex for a one-year period! Others, who come from a fairly "safe" background, if they successfully pass an initial AIDS test before moving in & joining the Family, & then pass a second AIDS test 6 months later, can still be allowed to have intimate fellowship with others. "According to your faith be it unto you!"—Mat.9:29. Even after successfully passing two tests & 6 months' abstinence, you still need to make sure you have the faith before sharing sexually with new disciples!—Pray!

**Although we're trying to do all we can to protect the Family from this plague, we cannot rely solely on our precautions, rules, regulations etc.!**—Our trust must be in the Lord, & we should all desperately pray for His merciful protection & safekeeping! So let's all obey & do our best to do what we can, & trust the Lord to do what we can't! "Salvation is of the Lord!"—Jonah 2:9.

**If anyone does turn out to actually have AIDS, we must isolate them & take the necessary precautions.**—But this does not mean that they cannot be miraculously healed by the Lord! "His arm is not shortened that it cannot save!—Is anything too hard for the Lord?"—Isa.59:1; Gen.18:14.—No!—He can heal anything!—Even AIDS!

**But such a person must continue to be isolated until his or her healing is confirmed by further AIDS tests!**—So earnestly seek the Lord & have desperate united prayer & trust Him for a miracle! He's the same yesterday, today & forever!—Heb.13:8.—So don't leave Him out of the picture! Amen? PTL! GBAKY!

## MORE AIDS PRECAUTIONS!

9/87

—By WS Staff

(In light of the new "Beware of AIDS" policies & precautions, we felt it would be helpful to review what Dad said almost five years ago in "Ban the Bomb!" (ML 1434). So here are some pertinent excerpts from this Letter:)

**"The old fear of being able to catch VD from the toilet seat is not so impossible if the toilet seat is still warm & moist!—VD is extremely contagious! I don't think restraint is too much to ask. I just don't think the alternative risk is worth it!"**

**"Anybody who refuses to have sex with a member of another Home should not be condemned or criticised for it. It's their perfect right to keep themselves free of the danger of communicable diseases! The dangers of communicable diseases today are getting worse all the time, & are certainly not worth the risk for a few moments of sexual pleasure!"**

**"I therefore charge you to ban all inter-Home sexual contact!** Rampant sexual promiscuity & spreading of sexual diseases to epidemic proportions could destroy us! I'm sure the Devil would love to do that!: If he can't destroy us spiritually, he'd like to destroy us physically, & that would certainly hamper our spiritual ministry! So keep your sex at home! Don't insist on giving your diseases to other people who don't want them!—And you who don't want other people's diseases insist on flatly refusing to have such contact with anybody outside your own Home! (—Or even with anyone in your Home if you are not sure of their health & well-being.) That's your right, & you have a right to your own personal freedom & freedom from disease.

**"I don't think we can leave it up to the Lord as to whether we catch VD or not!** A lot of that depends on us & our sanitary measures & keeping ourselves clean & free of contacts which can possibly incur contamination! It's always been a risk with our FFing, but that's part of the sacrifice involved. (But now with the no-sex-with-outsiders-without-condoms rule, the risks are greatly reduced, TTL!) But these FFers should be particularly careful that they don't bring anything Home & pass it around to the Family!

**"It would be wise to ban all sex between Homes, to try to limit the spread of these communicable sexual diseases which are reaching epidemic proportions in the World! Let's keep our sex at home & keep ourselves free from the sexual pollution of indiscriminate sex between Homes, just in case anybody should have something, whether they know it or not! Don't take a chance on it, folks, just refuse! Stop it!—Period! No more sex with non-Home members, except for FFers, & please you be careful, & be careful with your FFers as well! (Use condoms!)**

**"Anyone violating this rule is risking not only reprimand & exposure but also total excommunication from the Family if they flatly refuse to obey this rule & insist on imposing themselves on others along with their diseases!"**

**"Ban the bomb, the sex bomb!—VD!—At area fellowships or anywhere with anyone outside of your own Home, except for FFers! —And they had better be mighty careful & prayerful! (And obey the new condom rule!) Please don't bring it Home with you & infect the whole Family! Stick to your usual sexual partners. God help you to have real love & concern for others, & try to protect each other from these dangers, in Jesus' name, amen!—Amen?"**

+++++

**The above counsel from Dad is a timely reminder to all of us of the importance of sticking with our regular sex partners & not risking life, liberty, limb & future service for the Lord by indiscriminately indulging in extra-curricular sex!**

**To help ensure that we are free—& stay free—from AIDS, we wanted to share the following additional counsel: If your NO, NAS or their authorised representatives recommend that you take an AIDS test, for God's sake & the Family's sake, please cooperate, & be absolutely open & honest with them regarding the results! (Get a written result!)**

**Family members coming to the field from "high risk" areas such as the U.S. & Europe should take an AIDS test in their home country before leaving for the field, bringing the written certification from their test with them to prove that they are clear. If such individuals have had any questionable contact with others within the last six months, after the first test, they should**

abstain from sex until six months more have passed since their last questionable encounter, & get a second AIDS test & clearance certificate before arriving at their new field. If they've had intimate sexual contact with a "high risk" individual, such as an intravenous drug addict, Sodomite or anyone who is a suspected AIDS carrier, they should abstain from sex for one year after their high-risk contact!—And make sure they're cleared by an AIDS test!

If new personnel arrive in a field without their AIDS test certificate, the local leadership of that field has every right to insist that the new arrivals take an AIDS test immediately.—Before integrating them into intimate fellowship & sharing with those already in that field! New arrivals should not hesitate to cooperate in this regard.—And to abstain from sexual contact with any new partners until they are cleared. (For 6 months, or 12 months if they've been with an AIDS carrier!)

It would be much better & cause a lot less trouble on the field if our travelling missionaries get their AIDS test in their home country before arriving on the foreign field. In the U.S. & Europe particularly, AIDS testing is very common & readily available.—And because you would be taking the test in your own country, they consider you one of theirs, & are not likely to interrogate or deport you, as could happen in a foreign field where they're already very wary of non-nationals!

Many countries today are very sensitive regarding foreigners in the first place, particularly if they suspect that such foreigners could be carrying AIDS!—Therefore it is very important that we avoid unwisely alarming the authorities or ruin the Family's reputation in such countries by causing them to suspect that any of our people are carriers of this affliction! Because the System's rules, regulations, restrictions, medical procedures etc. differ greatly from country to country, it is expedient that you follow your NO's advice & counsel regarding any such AIDS testing or related procedures. By the time you receive this, your NOs should be able to provide you with any information, instructions, advice or precautions you may need on how to go about getting AIDS tests in your country.

If anyone's test turns out positive, meaning they are actual

carriers of the AIDS virus, they should inform their leadership of their situation immediately! For the protection of the rest of the Family, isolation of such cases is imperative!

For any victims of the virus, or for any new converts who desire to join, but turn out to have AIDS, perhaps we could organise & establish special AIDS Isolation Colonies (AICs!) wherein such folks could serve the Lord to the best of their ability.—Of course, we hope such a need does not arise, but if any of our members did turn out to have this affliction, hopefully we will be able to make some kind of provision along these lines for them. Please keep your NO abreast & well-informed of any problems or questions you may have along these lines!—And pray & trust the Lord! PTL! GBAKY! And remember:

Avoid sex with outsiders, or use condoms! No sex with new members without an AIDS test & 6 months wait & a second test! Better yet, stick to your usual mates!—Happy sex!—D.

---

## THE "TRUTH REVOLUTION" SERIES!

6/88

Dear Family,

GBY! The following Letters which make up the "Truth Revolution" series took place back in 1979, & although they will probably bring back painful memories for those involved, we wanted to publish them now for the benefit of the entire Family. So when reading them please remember to look for any lessons that you might be able to apply to yourself, rather than pointing the finger at others, who have gone on from that time & made progress. As Sara commented in "The Truth Revolution!" ("The Story of Our Children"—TSOOC 90), "They deserve a lot of credit for having made it through these very trying times, unlike many others who haven't made it. We do hope these lessons learned the hard way will be ones that will benefit others & make of us all mightier men for David, more obedient & submitted to every request & new Letter, as we're without excuse! Lord help us & make us all a blessing, & obedient blessings at that! In Jesus' name, amen!"

The portion of Sara's Letter ("The Truth Revolution!") which

follows is to give you the background of the story:

We had beautiful crispy fall weather that October in Southern Europe & all of us were excited beyond description about the arrival of six new Family members to our staff! It was an absolute first that a married couple, actually a threesome with their three children, would be joining Dad & Maria's personal Staff, which was then living apart from the Folks, but still near their apartment location. All preparations had been arranged for several weeks as this precious team had been very faithful to raise over \$3000 to cover their travel & landing funds before coming to Europe, & Maria herself had been on the phone several times checking on their progress, making sure their health was suitable for joining our Home soon, & helping them sort out any problems they had in trying to get overseas to join us as soon as possible. Dad was especially anxious to have Don, the male member of the team, as a tip-top mechanic to help work on our caravans & cars, & Liz, the mother, helping with domestic oversight, sewing, cooking etc., & Jill the second wife & helpful childcare worker as well, to help with their three children, Tamar age 6, Ted age 4 & little Johnny, only 20 months old.

This new team had been in close correspondence with Dad, Maria & Peter, reporting on themselves, their talents, their history in the Family, testimonies & all, but yet never suspected that they would be living in the Staff Home, rather expecting to join some European WS Unit. Maria stressed to us that she was hoping that this team could newly oversee our Staff Home & that Liz, the mother, would possibly even be able to help on our Childcare writings! The Staff Home was certainly in prayer to be sure that we'd make this team very welcome & happy, getting adjusted for the first time to living in Europe & also the fact that they would be living quite selah & doing behind-the-scenes work, as opposed to the front-line battle & life of faith that they were used to over the past years! We were certainly hoping & praying for the best & expecting this team to be a tremendous asset to our growing Family!

Dear Dad & Maria had the very highest expectations for this incoming team, as we had heard nothing but good news about

them from all reports received. Dad & Maria with Sue, Dora & little Techi, drove all the way to the airport to greet this new team personally, which was another first! As usual, our newcomers' first week or more of getting adjusted included their writing their daily reactions to coming to our house, reading the newest Letters that were in production, & reporting to Dad & Maria as much as possible their past experiences on the field—reacting with any kind of observations, whether positive or negative, about coming to join us. They had every opportunity to be honest & open in acquainting themselves with Dad & Maria on paper, knowing how very interested the Folks were in their personal lives!

Dad even gave this team a second-hand car, several years old, which we had purchased used just before their arrival! Because Don was an expert mechanic & had experience in repairing almost every kind of vehicle in the past, Dad knew that his gift would be a great blessing to this team & any repairs could be done by Don himself! Because Liz was soon to oversee the household, shopping, sewing etc., she was not to do any dishes, cooking or shopping herself, but rather oversee the house in full so that hopefully I would have more time to write the Story of Davidito. We were all very thankful to receive this new team, so happy to have another couple help, with so very much pub's work to be done, & we certainly got along well & learned to love them dearly in a very short time.

---

#### **"ACCORDING TO YOUR FAITH!"**

— "The Truth Revolution", Pt. 1

France, 10/79

DO 2456

1. (Don & Liz had been with us for one week when their children came down with what seemed to be a serious type of laryngitis. They had been in bed all day for two days before this, when one night they called Sara upstairs to their room to check on the boy & see if she thought he should be sent to the hospital right away. His condition was serious & he could hardly breathe at all & was kept under a vaporiser tent in the bedroom. Sara called Dad & Maria for prayer. Dad prayed on the phone:)

2. Lord, please touch this child! "When the Enemy shall



come in like a flood, the Spirit of the Lord shall lift up a standard against him!"—Isa.59:19. We resist you, Satan, in Jesus' name! Lord, deliver him & heal him of all his iniquities & all his diseases! You said, "I am the Lord that healeth thee!"—Exo.15:26. In Jesus' name!

3. **It's up to them & their faith!** If they want to rush to the hospital, it's up to their faith! (Sara explained that they had made a homemade vaporiser under a tent in the room & Dad said:) Ugh! No wonder the poor boy can't breathe! I hate those things! (Maria: Aren't they supposed to help you breathe better when you're all stuffed up like that?) Who knows? Who can tell? They must trust stuff like that. The Devil is really attacking!

4. **That must be where their faith lies, & if so, they should go ahead!** Tell them we've all agreed together, we've prayed, now we'll let the Lord handle it! The Lord must be waiting on their faith to see what they're going to do. They mustn't do what they think they're expected to do, they should do what they have the faith for!—But it doesn't sound like they have much faith for it! It's up to you there to judge.

5. "Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace whose mind is stayed on Thee, because he trusteth in Thee!"—Isa.26:3. It says, "The Lord giveth his beloved rest."—Psa.127:2.—They don't weep & cry & worry about it! Well, they may weep some-

times, but not over such a thing as this! This is certainly an attack of the Enemy! I guess this is their weak spot. They've got terrific faith for finances & they seem to have faith in other areas & were tested in every other area except for this one!

6. (Maria explains that Liz seemed to talk on & on about her immaculate cleanliness, how she disinfects everything to try & get rid of germs & sickness etc.)—The arm of flesh! They must be strong on that, & that's where they put their faith, in the physical. If they want to take him to the hospital, then they should go, but it's completely up to them. "According to your faith be it done unto you."—Mat.9:29. Let them do what they want to do. This must be their weak spot, & that's why the Devil hits them there. If they are talking about the hospital & considering it, that's probably where their faith lies.

7. **If the parents freak out & worry, hovering over them crying & worrying, the kids see them, & of course the kids are going to freak out too!** Fear communicates! Tell them it's an attack & a test, that the Lord is dealing with them as parents & testing their faith! They should decide what to do. Ask them: "How much experience have you had with the Lord's healing? How much miraculous healing have you seen in direct answer to prayer?" Maybe they haven't had any!

8. **Apparently they haven't been tested along these lines very much!** Make sure they do what they have the faith for & tell them not to worry about what we might think of their faith or their decision. The Lord lets the Devil attack & test their faith, & this is a real test! Do what you think you should do. And you, Sara, should do what you sense they want to do! Tell them we love them & are praying for them!

9. (Later on Dad was asking the Lord why they got this terrible sickness. They had been isolated for three weeks before they came & we just couldn't figure how they got it. Right away in a flash he got:) The Fair!—The outdoor Commercial Fair that Alf had taken them all to a couple of days after their arrival. The whole reason was that dirty place & being in contact with other people. Of course, it's also the Lord dealing specifically with them, but it shows how prayerful & careful we must be about going out & praying things through before we decide to go.

## ANALYSIS OF DON & LIZ!

— "The Truth Revolution", Pt. 2

11/79

DO 2457

Introduction from "The Truth Revolution!" (TSOOC 90), by Sara:

Near the end of October, not only did Alf, myself & the two older kids move as planned to a nearby campground with our caravan, but the Folks suggested that Don & Liz's team join us as well, & this way their training could continue under us, & the children could all be together. Dear Dad & Maria chose the very plots for our caravans & even drove out to see us set up the day we moved, being the concerned, sweet Shepherds that they are! GBT! Don & Liz's team were parked just across the street from our caravan, as they had chosen a very nice second-hand caravan which the Folks had actually recommended they buy with their funds.

Our whole camping team, Don & Liz's family, together with Alf, myself & the kids commuted to the Staff Home every other night for dinner & to work together on various pubs projects. We grew to be very close to Liz especially during this time, whereas Don, although we also loved him very much, was obviously having quite a lot of trials, which showed in his day-to-day countenance & behaviour. Maria requested daily reports from our camping team as to what we accomplished hourly & personnel behaviour etc.

After reading our first few reports, Maria pointed out that it was our duty to correct any situation that was not going right, especially with newcomers, as people always go on from our house to represent Dad & Maria & their sample, & this representation always carries so much further than we'd ever expect! She encouraged us that Peter & myself should talk specifically to Liz, who was obviously the spiritual leader of the group, & very openly & lovingly bring out the points that we thought might need correction in her team so as to help them improve & be able to do more for the Lord.

Knowing that this would actually help & even encourage Liz & really be a breakthrough for our new team, we pointed out these few areas, such as diligence, less open criticism, more

team unity etc. to Liz, & she took this opportunity to pour out her heart & explain more about their personal lives together over the last several years. She described her husband as being so "very sensitive" they never quite knew how he would react to things. He had such a "broken heart" that he'd cry easily, stay up at night worrying & talking about his trials, & would resort to drinking to settle his problems! Both the wives were scared to ever say anything derogatory about his mannerism, attitude or bad habits, as he would flare up in a violent temper & usually blamed Liz for most of his problems, as she had had a brief interest in another brother sometime before, which she had had to stop because of Don's jealousy, but for which he never "forgave her". In fact, he strongly believed that Liz had stumbled him & weakened him because of her friendship & interest in another brother. She admitted that she knew that he would be furious that we had "separated" her from him in order to talk to her, & that he would definitely not receive it that Maria or anyone considered her the spiritual leader of their team, as this was just what he'd been fighting against all these years.

Sure enough, as soon as we finished our prayer & discussion with Liz, we all noted that Don was completely embittered & obviously fuming with fury that we had counselled primarily with Liz. He complained openly that the way we did things "smacked of the old ways" & "I just don't agree with the way you go about things here!"

Next we explained to both Don & Liz that Dad & Maria always prefer to hear both sides of every story, as you can never fully judge by any one person's story on anything. So it was our turn to talk with Don, as Maria had suggested we do at this point & she had given us the specific questions & notes to cover, which of course we expected would be understood by anyone working within our household! She also suggested that the rest of the Family fast & pray that day, everyone knowing about our talk with Don, as he was quite spiritually weak & obviously bothered by this confrontation.

In this meeting Don sat between his two wives, Liz & Jill, each of them with their arms around him, but who remained quite silent the entire time & let him do the talking. In spite of the points

brought out by Dad & Maria for Don, he replied, "I'm not having any problems! I've already got the victory! There's no need to cover this. It's just that I don't agree with the way things are done here!"

**Lord help us! What to do now? Dad had already sensed previous to this that things were just not going right with our new team & cautioned us that we were sitting on a very serious situation, & to be sure not to get involved with any challenging statements & to proceed with caution & prayer. He also was very disappointed & even discouraged about it all, but both Dad & Maria kept real faith that it'd all work out!**

Having viewed the movie "Tess" & having gleaned many good lessons from it on selfishness, bitterness, selfish love & pride & how revenge can ruin your life, Dad & Maria suggested that all of our team see this movie, as it had many good lessons for us to learn & apply. He gave a talk at dinnertime beforehand explaining the movie to us in full, directing it more or less to Don & Liz, who were there with the Staff Home this particular night that Dad joined us there for dinner. In spite of Dad's beautiful comments on the movie & relating it to us as needed lessons of love to learn, Don commented after seeing it that it was a misery to sit through & that he disagreed with the way we interpreted it! He was mad that we had all enjoyed the movie & that Dad had made those comments, which must've made this hit dog howl!

Dad severely warned Peter, Alf & myself in a security talk, that Alf & I would have to stay away from the house from now on so as to keep a watchful eye on the other team, keep them busy & try our best to help & train them while they were still with us, as he was sorry that they had even come & that we had not really interviewed them & "felt them out" first, or tried them out some other place before coming to our own house! Still, Dad & Maria showed so much mercy & understanding, wanting to do their best to help them in this difficult time & continually hoping for the best.

Maria suggested that everyone in the house write a report covering in detail these points: "1) How I do not agree with the way we do things, 2) How I could get more done, & 3) Answer this question, 'Are you really happy & fulfilled?'" Can you im-

agine the Folks even feeling like we wouldn't be happy in their Home, that we would disagree or that we would have any complaints against them? It was almost an unbelievable situation! LHU all, & we could hardly imagine it was really true that people could actually feel that way, & what's worse, that others could support them in their feelings rather than stand up for the truth & for the House of David!!

Maria also had Liz write a detailed personal report describing every problem that she had ever encountered with her husband, answering mainly the question, "Who are you loyal to?" More & more information came out about Don losing his violent temper & slinging around his wives in their bedroom, giving them third degree quizzes on any other sex life, FFing, or witnessing activities with the male sex, which was very limited, & bad habits with drinking, listening to System music etc. It seemed the more we encouraged Liz to be honest & tell the truth, the more "shockers" we'd hear about, but she was so liberated just to be free about telling all with an honest heart!



(After reading Don & Liz's reports they were asked to write, Dad commented:)

1. **He doesn't get specific!** I keep wondering, "Well, what is he talking about?" It's erratic, he contradicts things all the way through. He says one thing & then he turns right around & contradicts it! There are only two things that I can remember from

his whole report that he didn't like: He didn't like them telling him not to chew gum, & he didn't like 11 people in the diesel. (The used car bought for Don's family.) And neither one of those things were the big problems that he's been having.

2. In other words, he doesn't really come clean! He's not honest about it, he doesn't tell you what his real problems are. He picks out ridiculous little things, something in which he was really justified, like 11 passengers in the car, or something that he feels was really unjustified, quibbling over chewing gum!—Both of which he figured he could get some sympathy in.

3. But he doesn't even mention his main problem at all & the things that have caused the most trouble! He just talks in generalities & he doesn't really tell what he is talking about, & he just keeps contradicting himself. It's pitiful. Poor fellow.

### "ILL-STARRED!"

4. (Maria: What do you think "ill-starred" actually means? I looked it up in the dictionary & it says, "Born under an unlucky star", but I can't find what it means exactly. It must have some kind of actual astrological or scientific meaning, not just "unlucky" like we use it. There must be something about it that's actually valid.)

5. The Bible says, "Shall the thing formed say to Him that formed it, why hast Thou made me thus?"—Rom. 9:20. But you see, the point is, if you don't like the way you're made, give Him a chance & He'll remake you! These people who defend themselves & defend the way they're made, how are they going to have a chance to be remade when they don't even want to be remade? They say they want to change, but they don't really. They only say that because they know they should try to please.

6. Paul talks about it when he's talking about Jacob & Esau! God said, "Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated."—Rom. 9:13. "Esau sought a place of repentance & he found it not, even though he sought it carefully with tears."—Heb. 12:17. He couldn't change what had happened. So it seems like there are some things that are just that way, that's the design, there's no way to change it.

7. It's almost like your sign, you might improve & you might stay on the good side, & I may try to get the best out of mine, but I'm still an Aquarian! You're still you, in other words, but it's what you do with you that counts! In the movie "Tess", she was just obviously born stubborn & proud & selfish, extremely selfish!—Extremely proud & extremely stubborn.

8. (Maria: I didn't quite understand what you said about Sisera—"The stars in their courses fought against Sisera."—Jud. 5:20.) Well, there are all kinds of interpretations of that, but the usual interpretation was that he just couldn't win for losing, because the stars were against him, the signs were against him. And of course God designed the signs & ordains the stars & guides their courses, & God was against Sisera because he was an enemy of His people. He lost the battle & he was on the run & he couldn't even find any place to hide. He thought he had, but he lost his life.—What you call a born loser all the way around, like that girl, Tess.

9. (Maria: But why does God make people like that?) Maybe to be dandy bad examples. (Maria: But what if they couldn't help it?) Oh, Honey, that's their proclivity. They can help it! God gives us choice. He didn't force Adam & Eve to eat the forbidden fruit, He just made it possible & gave them the choice, & they made the wrong choice.

10. I don't believe in that extreme predestinarian view that you can't help yourself, that you're just destined to be saved or unsaved, or lost or whatever & there's nothing you can do about it. I don't believe that's so! That would destroy free will entirely, & the whole plan of God is built on free will, within certain limitations, of course. He's not going to let Man go too far with his evil, & Man has a choice up to certain outside limitations of what he can do, but he does have a choice! He can improve & overcome his sign & his weaknesses if he strives hard enough with the Lord's help.

### "TESS" & SUN SIGNS!

11. But Tess never even tried to overcome, she just kept yielding to her baser instincts, which was not sex but her damn

selfish pride! She just always made the wrong decision. (Maria: So a little rundown of the movie in just a couple of sentences would be what?)—Pride, stubbornness, selfishness! (Maria: You said that in the movie you never saw so many people that were so proud & selfish & wrecked their own lives!)—Stubborn & self-righteous!

12. I agree with Don on that, he said it was a rather torturous & unpleasant movie, but it was certainly true to life! (Maria: And the only good person in there was a supposedly bad person.)—Exactly! The good people were the ones who were bad, & the bad one was the one who was really good. The supposedly bad person was the only good one & the supposedly good people were the bad ones!—A contradiction of people's usual assessments & appraisals of personality.

13. The religious were the most self-righteous & unforgiving & unmerciful! Even the old drunk had a few good traits & showed a little mercy. Maybe that's one of the secrets of the story, that he was giving the girl her own choice. He didn't force her or make her, but obviously he knew how to handle her, because if he'd told her to go, she would have probably stubbornly refused! But because he let her make her own choice, she had to do what she pleased. That's probably why she was that way, because he spoiled her, letting her always have her way. It's sort of surprising that he made a picture that honest!

14. (Maria: What was your question when you got that answer about being ill-starred, what were you asking?) How could anybody have so much trouble & make so many wrong decisions & be such a mess?—I just got "ill-starred"! (Maria: But that probably pertained more to all the misfortunes that she went through than what she actually did with them, don't you think? But even if she was ill-starred, she could have risen above it & not had to wallow in all that.)—Right, regardless, even if we're born under a sign that's not one of the best.

15. (Maria: Do you think some signs are really better signs than others?) Well, each one's got its purpose, I'm sure. The Lord's got purposes in each one & each one has certain strengths & each one has certain weaknesses, but it's what we do with the choices we make that matters. Some might say, "Why hast Thou

made me thus?" Well, He has made us thus, but He can help us, & make the best of it! Tess made the worst of it all the way through. She almost always did the wrong thing, almost like she was cursed from the beginning. Sometimes children suffer for the sins of their parents.

16. (Maria: But in her prayer when she was praying about the baby, she said, "I know I've done wrong, but have mercy on the baby.") She asked for forgiveness, it was like she was admitting that it was her fault. Of course, I don't know if that was a sincere prayer, whether she really felt that way or not.) Honey, that kind of a prayer reminds me of this kind of a so-called confession: "I know I've done wrong, but..." or "I know I'm a problem & I want to do better..."

17. They mean it at the time, but they turn right around & keep on doing it! She knew she'd done wrong, but she kept right on doing it. If she knew she'd done wrong, why didn't she stop it? In a way, that kind of confession isn't even sincere or honest. It's only like, "Well, I know I've done wrong because you say I've done wrong, but all the time, down in my own heart, I know it's okay to chew gum & I was right about how many people were in the car" etc.

18. It's like when you're spanking a child & they say, "I'm sorry! I'm sorry I got caught! I'm sorry because you say I ought to be sorry, but I'm not really sorry!" It's pitiful! If he heard this, he would be hurt, especially, because he is the kind that is so sensitive & so easily hurt, & that shows how proud he is.

#### LIZ'S LETTER!

19. Some people are actually proud of being sensitive & think that being sensitive is a good thing! (Maria: You know how he took that Letter "The Secret" (No.845) where you said we should be emotional & not intellectual & cold & cruel & calculating? Because he is so emotional, he took it that having spells & tantrums & hurt periods & everything is the kind of emotion you mean!) That's the worst kind of emotion! I was talking about love & being led by your heart, it wasn't talking about temper tantrums & little fits!

**20. He's selfish! He's more concerned about himself & his own problems:** "Am I doing well? I'm trying to please!" He shows very little outgoing concern. Some people are not really sincerely concerned about others, they're only really concerned about themselves & what you think about them. He's constantly just talking about himself & his battles, with obviously very little concern about others or what battles they might be going through. (Maria reads Liz's report:)

**21. (Maria: Liz says, "I do love Don a whole lot & want to be a good wife to him & a good mother to the children & a good sample to Jill, but my first & foremost love is the Lord & you, & I would do anything for you as I love you so so much & need you & want to be a blessing to you most of all."** It sounds pretty good, but we might want to put her to the test.) Yes, that remains to be seen. People really do want to be that way, that's the way they really feel, but when they have to do it, then sometimes it gets a little different. "Let not him that putteth his armour on, boast as him that putteth it off!"—1Kg.20:11. The Lord will soon see if she really means that! Sometimes people really think they mean it & they want to mean it, but when it comes down to the crunch, the real test, well, they can't make it.

**22. (Maria: Liz says, "If someone says I have some complaints, I can't really think of anything other than a few little things in the way Don & I communicate, or I should say, in the way we don't communicate sometimes. He may get mad at me for talking about him, because he never wants me to say anything about him, because he says it's nobody's business but his. I disagree & I've told him before that I think he should talk more to people & give his opinions. He is one to keep quiet, even if he disagrees with something or doesn't understand something most of the time." That's hypocritical!)**

**23. If he would look in the mirror & see himself as others see him, maybe it would wake him up!** He's selfish, proud & hypocritical! (Maria: He won't say anything.) And he doesn't want her to tell anybody anything. In other words, he doesn't want to be exposed, & that's the hypocrite. The greatest fear of the hypocrite is exposure! (Maria continues reading Liz's letter:)

**24. ("I need someone to help keep me in check & he really**

**hears from the Lord more than I do, I feel.")** At least he's got her convinced of it anyway! (Maria: Yes, he's really got her convinced! She says, "I'm pretty stubborn & hard-headed & can be unloving at times, not because I don't love or have love, but I guess I'm awful proud.") Ha ha! I can just hear him!—The pot calling the kettle black!

**25. (Maria: She says, "I know the Lord & you love me very much or I wouldn't be allowed to be here, & I know the Lord knows what He's doing, & I want to be exposed no matter how hard it is! I want to get closer to the Lord & I want to be used of Him no matter what He wants me to do. I'm really happy about what the Lord is teaching me in my marriage to Don & I want to keep trying & keep going for the Lord, & I realise that our relationship is a blessing from the Lord.")** He's convinced her of that too.

**26. (Maria: He's clever with words! In one sentence she says, "I want to be used of Him no matter what He wants me to do", then she says, "I'm really happy about what the Lord is teaching me in my marriage to Don."—As if he has convinced her that the Lord's highest Will for her is to be married to him! She goes from one statement right into the other! It's like, "Well, I know that's my cross, I know that's my duty in life.")** As though, "If it fails, it will be my fault, not his". Or even, "If our marriage is not so good, it's not his fault, it's mine." (Maria: Oh, I think he's very convinced of that!) And I'm sure he's convinced her of that!

**27. (Maria reads: "I sure don't want it to hurt anyone though, so I know I need to work even harder to change so I can be a better helpmeet.")**—As though this was her highest goal in life! Because that is evidently the thing that he's convinced her is the greatest thing she could do for the Lord, is to help him, be a helpmeet! Well, he certainly needs a lot of help, that's for sure! (Maria continues reading: "I've poured out a lot to Sara & she really understood some of the problems that Don & I have, but I don't feel that it's anything that any marriage doesn't go through.")

**28. She's constantly excusing him & blaming herself!** She is taking all the blame & accepting all his accusations! (Maria: She says, "I do feel we're getting victories more than we ever

have before & I'm so thankful." If they're getting more victories now than ever, what was life like before?) She's yielding more & he's getting his way more!

29. He's scared to death to have her talk to other people for fear she will tell the awful truth & expose him! (Maria: He stands around everywhere, just looking in on her all the time & standing around when she's with somebody.) I don't know what it is about redheads, but it seems to me that almost every one of them that I ever knew was like that—extremely sensitive & extremely concerned about what people thought about them.

30. He is so suspicious & mistrustful! (Maria: He's not so suspicious as he is just afraid she is going to talk to people, that's the thing he's more scared about than anything.)—And expose him! (Maria: She says, "I believe that God made marriages & mates & I'm so thankful for it, but I also feel that being close to your family & being able to talk about feelings isn't wrong. I think I'm venturing out by faith by talking to Sara like I have.") Thank God she's willing to, God bless her! (Maria: It's such a victory for her! It's such a big step, she says she's venturing out by faith just to talk to somebody. Poor girl!)

31. Yes, & that's very adventurous faith that she is daring to do something she knows he wouldn't like! She has to do it in secret & hide it in order to do it. She is being very daring & bold & brave! (Maria: Oh dear! Poor girl! She says, "I don't want to cause disunity between Don & I, that's the last thing I want to do"—& that must be what he accuses her of doing all the time.) Of course, that it's always her fault. (Maria: "But it seems that in the last three years, he & I haven't been able to be very unified on our own & maybe another person's objective view would help us.")

32. He obviously blames it all on her—his confession was almost a scream! I mean, she is really open & his is such a coverup. I never could stand people like that with their hypocritical coverups! (Maria: He's also got her convinced that the reason that they disagree on things is just because they are different people, you know, or because she's wrong. She says, "He & I disagree on quite a few things because we're different people. Like the other night, I really liked the movie 'Tess' & learned a lot

from it, but Don didn't like it & he was hurt that I liked it so much." Can you imagine? He even gets hurt if she likes something that he doesn't like!) Well, it was the hit dog that howled!

33. (Maria: It's so wonderful living with you, Honey, I really have so much to be thankful for!) We have so much in common, we agree on so much! (Maria: Can you imagine somebody getting upset just because you like something they don't?) Well, it would be kind of unpleasant if you were always liking different things, but you & I like the same things! We get along so good, Honey, we just almost agree on everything! (Maria: Amen! And if I don't agree, you bring me around to your point of view! And then I agree pretty soon, anyway!—Ha!)

34. (Liz says, "He goes through it if our opinions differ because he says that it makes him feel like we're not unified—is that true?" He's got her so confused & so hoodwinked that she doesn't know. She says, "Is that true?—The way I look at it, different people look at things differently. Maybe we're so totally out of the Spirit & that's why we have differences of opinion. I'm a bit confused." She really is confused, because we tried to bring out that she is the spiritual leader, & she didn't even accept that because he's got her so convinced that she's out of it! It sounds to me very much like those old Chain leaders.) Yes, the "king" can do no wrong! (Maria: The wives were always being convinced that their husbands were the spiritual leaders...)—And were beaten down.

35. (Maria: She says, "Well, I say I don't have any real big complaints, just a few little things I thought I would dig up, but maybe I'm not facing reality & maybe I have a few complaints that I'm belittling." Now, if she can't even think of complaints, she must have some that she's not thinking of. "I sure could use your help & counsel & forgiveness if I have a bad attitude. I know where my heart's at & that's with the Lord. I never knew, though, what I was getting myself into when I got saved! Ha! The Baptists told me I'd never have to worry again & could do my own thing the rest of my life. Boy, have they got a lot to learn!") Ha! That's cute!—The Baptist doctrine! That is a scream! Boy, have they got a lot to learn, that's for sure!

36. (Maria: She says, "I'd better cut this off & I hope it's

what you wanted in answer to the questions on this little note. I'm in the victory & I'm really happy & thankful for the lessons of life & love that I'm learning.") She's the one who's really got the victory, that's for sure. Anybody who could get the victory over him has really got the victory! (Maria: She says, "I want to change & keep learning. I hope I'm not too much of a burden.")

### DAD'S CHARACTER ANALYSIS!

37. I guess Jill must worship him sort of like a little god, & that's what he wants. That's what some people want. Like my brother—people worshipped him like a god & he just loved it! He really tried to play the part. Do I do that, Honey? (Maria: No, Honey!) I like people's love, I do, but I know what a mess I am, & I know you know what a mess I am & everybody here knows what a mess I am, so I could never possibly get conceited about it. I never feel very godly!

38. That's why Eve & I hardly ever got along, because she felt so godly & so righteous & I felt so ungodly & unrighteous & she constantly rubbed it in & was constantly convincing me of how righteous she was! (Maria: Sounds like Don & Liz!) Yes! But in the end, it looks like maybe Eve wasn't so righteous after all! Ha! Maybe my kind of wickedness is a little bit closer to righteousness—like that guy in the movie! (Maria: That was really a good lesson!) He really loved her, it was real genuine love, & she couldn't receive it. She finally even killed the only man that really loved her, turned around & murdered him!

39. It's just like she couldn't stand love, she couldn't stand to be loved because it might require something of her! She was so selfish, so stubborn & self-righteous that she didn't even want people to love her! Because if people love you, then you owe'm something! (Maria: Liz says, "I hope I'm not too much of a burden on you folks, & if I am, please let me know & I'll go wherever the Lord wants me to go!") Ha! I wish he'd go instead! (Maria: Sara says she's a blessing & a help but he's nothing but a constant problem.) All I hear about him is problems.

40. It's really almost unbelievable! My brother wasn't happy with his wife. Oh, he beat her down! I almost got in fights with

him when I was living with him over the way he treated her. He just made her feel like he was perfect & there was nobody worse than she was. I saw her cry so many times! She was a rather proud sort herself, she wasn't the kind that usually cried, but oh boy, he could cut people down! He was one of the most critical guys I ever knew! He gave the impression that he figured that he was perfect & everybody else was wrong, & he could sure cut'm down!

41. (Maria: Well, Liz must be pretty humble by now!—Because can you imagine having your husband taking another woman that's just like a novice & then putting her up as a sample instead of you—"she loves me & you don't"—& having your faults & failures exposed. Liz has sure taken a lot!) Obviously Liz is not taking it all, though, she is not necessarily believing it all. She deserves some right to disagree with him. She must have a few convictions. Well, for a Leo, I would say she's certainly humble!

42. Well, no matter what you do, he's going to blame it on you anyhow, he's not going to take the blame for anything!—Just like my brother! Whew! He was perfect & he knew it!—And he demanded worship! Poor fellow, what a breaking, humbling process God had to put him through! I mean, he just practically had to hit bottom!

43. (Maria: I guess we're learning more about people all the time. Maybe the Lord brought him over here to really give Liz a chance. God sure goes to great lengths to free people & have them serve Him. I still think she should be the leader.) It's obvious she's the strongest one in character, but she's just allowed him to beat her down. (Maria: I don't know how she could have even taken it!) Honey, look how you've taken it! (Maria: No, Honey!) (Dad gives Maria seven kisses!) (Maria: Honey, you're wonderful, you're so good to me!)

44. It just shows you that that kind of a personality is extremely selfish, self-centered, egotistical, proud, self-righteous & sensitive. People like him just seem like they've got about all the bad traits you can think of, except the surface charm. When I read how he described all his talents & skills & everything else, I thought, "Boy, that really is something! He's really something!" And the thought did cross my mind at the time that, "Well, he does sound a bit egotistical & proud of himself, but maybe he's

just being honest about his accomplishments" etc. After all, we wanted to know & we asked him & so he's telling us.

**45. I didn't realise then that he was really, really bragging & it's his tendency to brag!** That's one thing about that type of personality, they do brag! They are really "stuck on themselves", as we used to say. But if you would tell them so, they absolutely wouldn't believe it. They put on a charming false modesty. But if we would suggest they would leave & go & do something else, he would probably go out & blame us for it all.

**46. That's the problem, what to do with people that we want to get rid of without causing some kind of a blow up or a security breach!** (Maria: Well, it might be worth it if Liz would stay.) Well, as long as he had those little children, he would still have a hold on her, even if he lived a million miles away! As long as he could still communicate with her, he would probably keep that hold on her.

**47. I have an idea that she's about all that holds him together**, that if he had to go off without her, he would just fall apart—in spite of Jill! Oh, Lord, give us wisdom what to do now that they're here. Please get us out of this mess!

**48. He's a pretty hard guy to keep from being an enemy!** You don't dare cross him about anything, he'll sense it.—Like the way he talks about the chewing gum: "I realise now I shouldn't have taken it" etc., & you can tell he still resents it. He still resents even the things he confesses & he still feels he is right.—Like one fellow told me, "I think you're wrong, but you're the boss!" I know that's what he thinks. He's so unspecific & so contradictory!—Almost like he wasn't too sure exactly what we wanted to hear, so he said them both!

**49. I understand he still holds some grudges against the old Chain.** People who are bitter like that will be bitter against you, too. It's because they never blame themselves, they're always blaming other people. The self-righteous hypocrite never blames himself, it's always, "I thank Thee, O God, that I'm not as this man!"—Luk.18:11. Even if he's gotta confess he's wrong, he'll say, "OK, you say I'm wrong, so I guess I must be wrong. I still don't feel like I'm wrong, but I must be because you say so. You're the boss!" So Lord help us to figure out what to do with him!

## "FAILURE TO REPORT A CRIME!"

—"The Truth Revolution", Pt. 3

11/79

DO 2458



(Introduction by Sara from "The Truth Revolution!", TSOOC 90):

In mid-November Dad warned us once again, "Better make sure those newcomers know that they have to really toe the line & really prove themselves!" Dad considered maybe keeping Liz & perhaps one child with us, but he was not going to allow some devil around at the top! "Be sure you get a daily report from her on him about any grilling, any questions, any derogatory comments he may make."

Dad was also furious that Don had bragged about being an expert body mechanic, but he had never yet proven it, but to the contrary had done nothing but openly complain about the car that Dad had offered them as a gift when they very first came! Don admitted he did not have the faith to even drive the car, as he thought it would fall apart because of problems with a rusted bottom. Dad eventually suggested that if he didn't like the car to trade it or sell it, but Don did neither! "It's hard to put faith in anybody that they're gonna make it when they have not yet proven themselves," Dad said.

The Folks then had Liz hear the tapes of Dad's talk about their team (the Letter which follows) so that she would see the

seriousness of their situation & be praying about a choice up ahead, as it looked at this time that perhaps she might stay on with us & the others move on to another field. Liz had a dream that night that she escaped from a murderer! We made it clear, as the tape requested, to both Don & Liz very nicely, that in order to get really rolling & work with us, they'd have to put in hours 8 AM to 5 PM daily, which is at least what everyone else did, & suggested that Don work harder on his car to prove that he's the body mechanic that he boasted to be. They were all three to make hourly work reports & no more drinking. Jill seemed totally in agreement, as did Liz, to every condition the Folks laid down, but whenever it came to the crunch, which was nightly in their own caravan behind their own closed door, they had nothing but fulltime trials with Don! (Dad's talk:)

1. I've always been the hatchet man! I'm usually the end of the road for these tough cases! By the time God brings it to us & it takes up my time & attention, that usually means the end! That's God's last mercy, their last chance to change before the judgments begin to fall. I'm like a father, a parent, & I begin to chaste & lay on the whip of chastening, & if our chastening doesn't do any good, then we just have to turn them over to the Lord & let Him finish it off--& that usually gets pretty rough!

2. He ought to be thankful God doesn't kill him! He usually starts taking the things away from them which they idolise & commit idolatry with—like his wife or his own God-damned ego, pride, selfishness, hypocrisy & jealousy! As I said before, it's a rule of the Family we made long ago that any man who uses violence on his wife deserves to be immediately kicked out of the Family & out of the Home until he shows very, very great repentance & brings forth fruits meet for repentance!—Mat.3:8. (Maria: Or if he can't be kicked out, the wife should leave him.)—Separate them, right.

3. But first we'll give them a chance! We'll start putting the pressure on & quit petting & pampering them & indulging in their tantrums. He's got her totally intimidated, scared to death of him, but I want to tell you, he'd better start getting scared of me!

4. Nothing infuriates me like a guy that uses violence on a poor little defenseless woman like that, the mother of his three

children!—Not once, but numbers of times! Think of it! He beat her up, leaving her black-&-blue & with a black eye one time! He's insane with jealousy & pride!

5. So he's come to the end of God's mercy & ours & this is his last stop! If he doesn't respond to treatment here, he's finished! We'll turn him over to God, & God knows how to do it, like He did with Rachel! So just put the pressure on & make him really toe the line, enforce strict obedience, exactly what we tell him to do!

6. I want a daily report from him of exactly what he accomplishes hour-by-hour!—Beginning at 8 o'clock, & going from either 8-5 or 9-6. If he wants to do it the Mediterranean way & take his 2-hour siesta, then he's gotta work from 8-noon & 2-6. If he can't work as hard or harder for God than he did for the Devil, then we don't want him!

7. I'm sick & fed up with the way she's been pampering him & catering to his tantrums! He's got both of those women scared stiff of even slightly offending him or hurting his feelings. I've seen very few redheads that weren't God-damned sensitive, going around with a chip on their shoulders just daring you to knock it off! They are about the proudest people you'd ever want to know! There may be some exceptions, but I very seldom met any.

8. He's a dandy bad example & has been, apparently, for a long time! Too bad we never got any reports from anybody else about them, instead of his own glowing reports! (Maria: He must have covered it up so well that only Liz knew, & she didn't tell!) Well, this is the end of the line! But even if it endangers our security, we've got to give them one last chance. Put the pressure on so when he goes he'll know that God has given him every opportunity.—Like Adam & Eve in the Garden, he's had every chance, & he's muffed the whole thing & he's going on his own.

9. I want you to put him to work, & I mean hard work! You should have seen him boasting & bragging about what a great body man he was & mechanic & everything. Well, now's his chance to show it! God's given him about the worst kind of auto body he could possibly work on, let's see what he can do with it. The Lord's been awfully good to him to give it to him, & for him

to start complaining about it is really ungrateful!

**10. I told him right in the van, "You'd better not look a gift horse in the mouth, Buddy!"** And he kind of quick covered-up & apologised. I told him that if he wanted to have something else he could go out & trade it in & buy it, he's got enough money left to do it, but I notice he didn't.

**11. Tell him Dad wants him to work eight hours a day on that trailer & car, & then any time anybody has to go out there, I want them to check on him & see what he's accomplished.** And you'd better warn him he'd better take it easy on the wine or he won't be able to get his work done. Tell him we're going to have people coming out there checking on him to see how he's doing.

**12. Tell him Dad might drop by himself to take a look & see how he's doing!** Of course, some of these problem children want that to happen, they love to be problem children & take up your time! (Maria: Yes, he was so talkative the other night in the van, when he started talking about his trailer you could hardly get a word in edgeways.) That's how they cover. They feel it's safer for them to be doing the talking than you!

**13. If Liz has any trouble, if he's drinking too much, I think she ought to report it immediately.** These are orders you should give her! If he even threatens violence, throws one of his insane tantrums or drinks too much, she's to report it. Failure to report a crime is a crime, & you tell her so!

**14. She's covered for him too long & she's endangered the whole work & our security by bringing him here right into our midst in that condition without giving us any forewarning whatsoever!** She's on probation too & it depends on how she handles the situation as to whether we can even use her—unless she levels with us & reports every little move, every change of attitude, anything she knows at all that we'd be displeased with.—Daily!

**15. If he steps the least bit out of line or says the least thing out of line, I want it reported right away!** And if she doesn't report it, you tell her God is going to hold her responsible & God is going to show it to me. We'll know whether she's being honest with us & levelling with us or not! And God will not give her another chance, this is her last chance!

**16. It will be like the Army now, toe the line, & be on his best behaviour & show real repentance!** And we're not going to tell him why or expose her so that he'll have another excuse to tromp on her! These are perfectly reasonable requests—or you can tell him orders if he doesn't take the request idea—that for security reasons some of us are going to have to move away, probably them, & he's gotta get his trailer & car fixed up as fast as he can.

**17. If he shows great repentance & makes himself so useful he's indispensable & we can't do without him, there is a possibility we might consider letting him stay.** But under the circumstances, he's going to have to really show some repentance! Usually you have to give them time out & away to produce works meet for repentance before you can dare take a chance on taking them back again.

**18. Liz has covered for him too long & it has not done him any good!** Pampering him & humoring his tantrums & fits of jealousy & his violence has certainly not helped him. It might have saved her a few more beatings, but it certainly hasn't helped him any! So even for her own safekeeping, we're gonna keep her at the house, & because we need her help with the housekeeping & all.

**19. The best thing he can do**, since he's such a tremendous terrific mechanic & body man & all that he said he was, is to demonstrate it on that car & his trailer! After all, it's his own stuff, he ought to be able to work hard on it & get it in top-notch shape, & he is to pay those expenses out of his money. We'll take care of his trailer rent & his room & board while they're here, which I think is sufficient, & then we will wait & see how well he takes hard work & discipline & obedience & particularly as much separation from her as possible.

**20. We'll see how he responds & gets along & how she gets along—& how honest & open she is in constantly reporting every day.** I want a daily report from her to you about everything he did last night: How much love did he make to her? How much did he make to Jill? How did he treat her? How did he treat the kids?—A complete report!

**21. She's covered for him too long, now she's going to have**

**to make up for it by reporting everything**—every look, every word! God's Word says we'll have to give an account of every deed done in the body & every idle word!—2Cor.5:10; Mat. 12:36. So any words he utters that aren't necessary are idle words! He has no right to grill her & demand explanations or to get any kind of report from her whatsoever from now on!

**22. She is absolutely forbidden to reveal any kind of goings-on at our house** or any kind of instructions we have given her, any kind of revelations she's given us, & she's forbidden to tell him that she's reporting on him to us! It would only cause her trouble anyhow. It's better that she doesn't tell him anything & he doesn't know, even if he gets mad that she doesn't tell him anything.

**23. We're not asking anything unreasonable of her in reporting, she's making up for lost time.** We're not asking anything unreasonable from her in the way of work, that's what she's here for. We're not asking anything unreasonable in the way of separation, nearly all husbands & wives are separated in the daytime while the husband's away at work, or the wife, or both. They've both got jobs & I want to see them do'm! And they're not to have any complaints, either one of them, about being separated. They can be thankful they're able to be together at night & on the weekends.

**24. I think maybe since it's an emergency, we ought to put the pressure on & not require 5-1/2 days of work a week, but 6 days of work a week!** The less time she spends with him, the better for her & the better for him. So Saturday will be just like any other day of the week, but she can go out to the campground on Saturday night & they can spend all day Sunday together, & I suggest you folks do the same!—So you can keep an eye on them, particularly his behaviour & treatment of her. Because that's apt to be the time when he's not working, & idleness is the Devil's workshop!

**25. If he gets to drinking & abusing her, & you can't put a stop to it by warning him & scolding him or whatever it takes, then call us & we'll have Peter come & help you deal with him.** And if we have much more trouble with him, that's it, we have had it, period, & we will simply cut him off completely! If he

refuses to obey, if he complains about it, if he has any further murmuring or tantrums, any further torture of her, any problems whatsoever, then he forfeits his privileges of coming to the house at all, & he's fired as far as I'm concerned, he's finished, right where he sits, & he can take care of himself & his own family from then on! The only one that we will offer to assume responsibility for at all will be the useful one & the one that behaves herself—that is, if she wants to stay. And if she wants to go with him, praise God!

**26. (Maria: I think she needs to be told or convinced that everything that happens isn't her fault!)** Yes, he's really got her buffaloed & convinced! He's persuaded her all these years it's all her fault & she's to blame & she's got all the faults & he's the little god who's done nothing wrong, & that she even deserves his beatings & blah, blah, blah!

**27. Well, she'd better snap out of that real fast & wake up to the fact that she was right & he was wrong!**—And she has been wrong by tolerating it, putting up with it, indulging in it, pampering him in it & letting him get away with it!—And particularly covering up for him & not telling us about it!

**28. She owes him no further loyalty!** He has forfeited his rights & privileges, he's forfeited her allegiance, the whole works, by the way he's treated her, & she doesn't owe him any further loyalty except love in the Lord. And if she is speaking the truth & she means it, that she realises her first loyalty is to the Lord & His Work & us, then I want her to prove it! I want her to start right now, & her first confession on paper was a good start. Praise God! She needs to open up, she's been closed up too long. She's been just like his prisoner!

**29. So she should show up bright & early on Monday morning on the bus!** They don't have to have a car bringing them back & forth all the time. He doesn't have any car out there but that second-hand diesel & he will have no transportation unless he gets it rollin'! And any repairs or whatever he does with that car is up to him. It's his car, we gave it to him as a gift, & I think that was quite a gift! It cost us \$2,000, & some repairs since then, so he should be very thankful. And if he doesn't like it, he can trade it in & get something else. He's got enough money to get some-

thing he likes better.

**30. I don't want to hear any complaints about the gift horse or about its bad teeth!** That's where the old adage "Don't look a gift horse in the mouth" comes from! You tell a horse's age by its teeth & its physical condition. So here you give somebody a horse & they start looking in its mouth & telling you, "Well, it's pretty old & it's pretty decrepit & it's got some bad teeth!" What do people think of gifts, anyhow?

**31. They brought themselves over here—they wanted to come & we offered them the opportunity—now let's see what they do with it!** And if they take themselves out of it, then it's their responsibility what they do from there on. If he doesn't respond to treatment & obey & show a good attitude & behave himself, he'll have to go, & if she doesn't keep honest & leveling with us & reporting constantly on his behaviour & attitude, then she'll have to go with him!

**32. But if she does & she stays honest, then she'll have a chance to stay regardless of what happens to him.** She'll be welcome if she shows the proper attitude & she shows where her loyalties are, first to God & His Work & us, & last of all to her husband! That's spelled out time & time again in the Letters, particularly in "One Wife" & a few others, & I suggest she read some of those over again, particularly those references we made about violence!

**33. We said before that if anybody failed to report a crime, it was a crime!** She's been committing crimes by failing to report his crimes, & she's absolutely guilty for covering for him. Well, now she's going to have to redeem herself, because she has endangered us, God's Work, & my personal security by letting him come here in that condition. The only thing I can think of is that it was the mercy of God to try to salvage her—& maybe him, I don't know, it depends on what happens.

**34. You can give people mercy on a few mistakes & a few little things, but if he continues in the same behaviour, in the same attitude & the same treatment of her & grilling of her & giving her the 3rd degree, wanting to know everything that happened & what she's been telling us & blah, blah, she should just tell him that what happens between her & us & at the house is**

none of his business! It is her job & her work & we have given her absolute instructions & forbidden her to report anything from the house whatsoever.

**35. And she must remain loyal to the Lord & His Work & us & these instructions & keep them to the tee, not covering-up for him or hiding anything again!** Let me tell you, God is faithful, it always comes out! "Be sure your sins will find you out!"—Num.32:23. I sense it in the Spirit, I know it's happening somehow even if I haven't got a thing to show it to me! If you're not in harmony & right with the Lord & something's wrong with your spirit, the Lord shows me, I'll sense it & we'll know it!

**36. If she toes the line & obeys all of these instructions & keeps a careful watch on him & reports faithfully, & proves herself very worthwhile & useful & dependable & faithful & helpful & a real blessing to the Home, then we will definitely consider keeping her. Then she will have to consider—depending on what's happened to him—whether she wants to stay without him or not, in case he doesn't make it.**

**37. God's giving them their last chance with us as far as I'm concerned.** If people couldn't work with us, we've very seldom found that they've ever been able to make it any place else! But we'll just hope that they're going to learn their lesson & maybe they'll both make it!

**38. And helping him make it is not covering for him!** Deceiving us or lying to us or not reporting to us is not helping him make it! To report to us everything he does & says & his attitude & his looks & everything else, that's now what she owes us for having failed to tell us for the past three years!

**39. If he doesn't make it, then he's cut off & he doesn't come to the house any more.** Even if she's working there, he's forbidden to come there. That's our property & it will be off-limits to him. He'll have to stay out at his trailer & do something else. If she wants to still go out there & live with him, even if he doesn't work out, we might consider a compromise where she could stay with him at night.

**40. But if they live on the outside & they've left the Lord's Work, how can you be unequally yoked together with unbelievers?**—2Cor.6:14. He may be saved, but he's an un-

believer as far as obedience & loyalty & all the rest is concerned if he doesn't work out. If he doesn't make it, I never found that the husband could hang around very much without being a trouble-maker. She has to know the price that if he goes & they are separated, it means complete separation, no further communication whatsoever with him or the children or about the children, nothing!—Because that would just constantly be a source of trouble & anguish to her etc. It's better that she hears nothing.

41. **It may seem extreme or harsh to some, but that's the way the Lord does things if people don't work out**, that he's divorced completely & he takes those children & she keeps one, whichever one she wants.

42. **We'll just look to the Lord as to how long this grace period is gonna last**, & it will depend a great deal on them & their response & their attitude & his improvement, or disimprovement. When it gets to the point that I have to take my valuable precious time to deal with somebody who is supposed to be a help, but instead of that has become a hindrance & a problem case & an actual security hazard, then it's time for me to start getting tough!

43. **I'm usually pretty soft & a pushover with some things & some people**, but when they get to the point he's gotten to where he's a real problem & a constant source of anguish & fear & trouble & everything else, & I have to take my time to sit here for an hour & make a tape, & hours reading reports & discussing it, then it's too much!

44. **If she gets fed-up with his behaviour & he gets rough & in a bad temper again, I suggest she stays at the house to teach him a lesson!** Any time she wants to stay at the house overnight she is welcome to! Or any time you think she should stay at the house—considering his condition or his attitude or there might be some danger to her—then I suggest you recommend to her that she stay at the house.

45. **Our suggestions really are orders!** The king's wish is their command, & you are my officer telling them my wish, so if they don't take the suggestions & they continually insist on their own way, or even if she thinks she ought to go anyhow, well,

we'll see whether she's going to work out or not.

46. **I think you'll be able to tell where her loyalty is very soon** & whether she is going to respond to the treatment & continue to be loyal to him or to us. Because if he is not loyal to us, she can't be loyal to him & us both. "You cannot serve two masters! You're either going to hate the one & love the other, or love the one & hate the other."—Mat.6:24. You cannot have a divided heart & a divided mind, you have to be single-eyed & single-hearted. Anybody that wavers between the two, God's Word says, "Let not that man think that he shall receive anything of the Lord! For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea when it's tossed."—Jam.1:6,7. We shall see! Let's hope for the best!

47. **Now Lord, in Jesus' name, we ask Thee to help in this very serious situation that has required so much of our attention & time & concern & literally endangered our security!** We ask Thee to give these officers of ours wisdom in handling this problem case. It's been a problem for years, but has just now come to our attention because it had to. They're both problem cases in a way, Lord, because she failed in her duty to be loyal to You & the Work & us by not revealing his horrible condition. So we ask You, Lord, in Jesus' name to give her the faith & the love for You & Your Work & us, the loyalty & the honesty to level with us & reveal everything from now on to make up for her past failures & her past criminal cover-up! In Jesus' name, amen.

---

### SPOKES OF LIGHT!

DO 1399 11/79

—"The Truth Revolution", Pt. 4

(Introduction by Sara from "The Truth Revolution!", TSOOC 90):

**The Lord spoke to Dad with a beautiful dream called "Spokes of Light!—The Truth Revolution", & the entire Staff heard the 2-&-1/2-hour tapes of a beautiful encouragement on how God rewards honest, true reporting & hates the abomination of deceitful hypocrisy, as well as how the Devil backs away from facing the Light, how he fights truth & revelations of God but cannot stop them! PTL!**

Dad then suggested that Don, who was absent, also hear the tape the next night, & immediately afterwards record his first reaction back to Dad on tape. Dad also clearly laid out several rules that Don was to follow if he was to continue with us: No wine, no arguing, no violence, more work hours & sharing his wives! We all had group prayer with Don with the laying on of hands to cast out any hindering spirits of jealousy, bitterness, pride, contention, violence & disobedience etc. LHU!

Liz was instructed to alternate turns with Jill staying over-night at the Staff house, spending the night with one of our four single boys there. Liz was trying her best to stand strong during this time, but knowing that she'd have to collide with a jealous, enraged husband whenever in private, she even feared any confrontations with him. It so touched our hearts when she told us how sometimes when taking Davidito with her on the bus so he could visit Mommy & Daddy in their apartment, that she would sit beside him & just look at him & thank the Lord that she was here with us & it would just make her cry! "These really are the Days of Heaven for me I'll never, ever forget!" Liz said.

(Dad's dream follows:)

TMT



1. This is the dream about the stacks of papers full of the words of truth from Liz! All of a sudden there were these stacks of words, like we had struck a gold mine or a wealth of words! They were in these tall, tall stacks like spokes of wheels, but it seemed like they were only about an inch or so square, very long & very tall.

2. I looked & I thought, "How wonderful! At last we're getting the whole truth!"—Just like she had been suddenly liberated & like she was the hub emanating these

spokes, radiating these square spokes of words, like stacks of papers, her letters or words or stories or reports. (Maria: Yes, that's all she's been doing ever since she came!) They were really long & very high!

3. I was looking at these stacks & stacks of papers that formed these spokes of words of a wheel & I was wondering, "I wonder why we haven't had this before?—Why we didn't see this before? How wonderful! Now we've got the whole story!" There was just stack after stack! (Maria: Is that all there was to it?) That's all! It was just like, "At last!" And there was a bit of an ominous feeling like he opposed the words & he was a threat to the words, but they were being revealed to us in spite of his opposition. LIKE "THE CRYSTAL PYRAMID" THE LIGHT DRAWS YOU EVEN CLOSER TO IT & FURTHER FROM THE DARK.

4. Those spokes of words, those stacks of papers were like light! Each stack of papers, each spoke was like a beam of light radiating from this hub out into the darkness, & he was out there in the darkness fighting it, but he couldn't resist it, he couldn't stop it!

5. She had the power to radiate these words!—Spokes of wheels, beams of light, all those things, all in one, to make a wheel! What does a wheel do? (Maria: It goes around.) It goes around & what's that? Every time it goes around it's a what? (Maria: A Revolution!) Exactly, it's like a revolution of truth! Like a revelation & revolution both—of Truth!

6. We were looking at these stacks & I thought, "My, look at all this wealth & all these riches of words! We have more than enough words, all this Truth, all this light, all these riches!" And he was like a bad opposing dark influence that was fighting it, almost like he was the darkness. But her very yieldedness, her very liberation when she was suddenly emanating these words, these big stacks of papers, huge spokes of light, just absolutely conquered the darkness! WHEN YOU FINALLY GET FREEED!

7. She was so happy!—Almost like she was a mother giving birth to a child, like they're her babies. She was really happy, crying with tears of joy & happiness! She was so glad to be free, to be able to give all these words! And you & I were taking the stacks of papers & piles & we were carrying them! It was a very good dream! I was very happy, you were happy & she was ex-

tremely happy, like she had finally gotten her release or found her place or her job or something.

8. **Everybody was happy but him!** He was in the background, almost like the Devil who was blinded by the light but couldn't fight it. The darkness cannot possibly resist the light! All this darkness of cover-up & deceit & hypocrisy & deliberate lies, it's been horrible & God's been furious about it & hates it!

9. **I don't think they or even us realise how horrible it is, how it looks to God!**—The lies, the cover-up, the darkness, the hypocrisy, the deceit! It's everything opposite to God and the Spirit and the Truth and the Lord and Love. The feeling you had about the darkness was horrible, but I wasn't a bit worried about it. (Maria: It was like the Devil didn't have any foothold at all as long as she kept emanating.)—Right, as long as she kept telling the truth, there was nothing he could do to stop it! (MAGIC GREEN)

10. **If you go in a dark room & turn on a light, is there a battle for awhile?** Is there a fight? Is there a struggle for the light to manage to gradually come on & gradually push the darkness out? (Maria: No!) It's just instantaneous light! Instantaneous victory! The light has no opposition, it is impossible for the darkness to fight it.

11. **It's like he has been brought here to face the truth & to see the light & see himself, really, as God sees him, as others see him.** He has not only been able to deceive her, he's been able to deceive himself & everybody by his cover-up, his lies, his deceit, his hypocrisy. But now all of a sudden he is up against the Truth, the blinding light of the Truth & the facts & he is naked, he is stripped, he is exposed, & he is furious! But as long as she kept these papers going, everything was OK. She had the victory.

12. **So I was thinking, "Now how are we going to actually put this thing into practice, into action, in reality, not just the dream?"** And it was the strangest thing, it came to me that what they are going through is like a death experience!—Like the Letter I've been writing & editing about "Life After Death!" (See No.850.)

13. **They have been taken out of their normal natural habitat, taken completely away from it & all their familiars &**

the World that they were part of & accustomed to & where they did not have to face the facts or the Truth. And even though they're dying to one life, they're being born again into a new life!—Or she is, at least.

14. **They are being confronted with a choice, just like in these death experiences.** It's almost like a new birth, like a baby coming out of the darkness into the light & being born. (Maria: It's a shock for sure!) It's quite a crisis experience! They have left the old life, they've made a long trip, they are suddenly here face-to-face with the Truth, the review of the past, the facts, & then they must be confronted with the question: "What have you done? What is the truth? Face it now, what are the facts?"

15. **Up till now, they could avoid it, they didn't have to face it, they could hide it, they could lie about it & cover it up!** They could be hypocritical & they didn't have to be exposed. But now everything is open. They are here, face-to-face with us, & they can't hide a thing any more! Now they have to be shown the truth, to see it like God looks at it & like they really should have been looking at it all the time.

16. **They have to face the facts & face the truth & at last be honest with themselves, almost like they have to become their own judges now.** "What do you think about this? You know the facts, you know the truth, you know the law, you know the rules. What do you think should be done about it? Do you want to completely come clean & get rid of it all like a moth doffing its cocoon or a butterfly coming out of its chrysalis?

17. **"The hour of judgement has come, the hour of decision, here is the truth!"** We're all here in a blinding brilliant light of God's Truth & revelation & nothing is hid which shall not be revealed! Here are the rules, you read the Letters! You know that there are rules & that no wife-beater, no husband who uses violence on his wife or mate, who abuses his mate & strikes her is allowed to remain in the Family!"

18. **He has to be faced with the facts & the truth, be faced with the laws & the Letters:** "Here's what it said!" But she has to be faced with it too!—In other words, "Did you throw him out? Did you leave him like we said you should? Which should you have done, Liz? What should you have done, Don? Here's a Let-

ter that says you should get out or be thrown out of the Home & out of the Family until you repent & have a change!"

19. He's been judging her all the time, now he's going to be judged. "But if we judge ourselves we shall not be judged."—1Cor.11:31,32. Now if he would be honest & confess & judge himself, & repent & acknowledge the facts & the truth & confess, then there's hope that he can be forgiven—if there's a change, a revolution, metanoia, change of mind & heart, a complete change of life.

20. "Except a man be born again, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of God!"—Jn.3:3. He has got to be born again, completely changed, a new creature in Christ Jesus, a new life, totally completely different!—Or just forget it! It's like God's going to give him one more last chance—like in these death experiences where the people are getting one last chance to go back, repent & do better, or it's the end! But he has to somehow be faced with the facts, the blinding light of truth where nothing can be hid! "When morning dawns, & shadows flee away!" PTL! Hallelujah!

21. He has to be faced with it & make his decision for his darkness & his evil, his lies & his witchcraft & his idolatry & his cover-ups, his deceit, his hypocrisy to be totally burned up & destroyed by the fires of God's Truth & Word & Light! He's either got to join the Light & join the fire & the heat & the brilliance & the revelation, the revolution, be part of it, or he has to be destroyed!

22. It's kind of like that column we saw in "The Crystal Pyramid!" (See No.214.) There is no shady area in-between. There's either light or darkness, no place to hide! (Maria: The closer you get to the light, the more you're sort of drawn in.) You're either drawn or driven—drawn in or driven away, one or the other, there's no in between.

23. With the Lord's help & our enforcement he has to be confronted with the facts & the truth & exposed & shown, but she has to be the instrument, she has to be willing. In this dream it was quite clear that she was the instrument emanating the spokes, the paper, the words & revelations causing the revolution, but he didn't like it. (Maria: In a way, she's having to undo the

damage that she's done.)—Yes! She was a part of the plot, the cover-up.—Just like the Watergate affair, everybody involved in the cover-up got their judgement that day in court, their sentence & their penalty.

24. Now she has to undo all the damage & the lies, the cover-up, the deceit, the hypocrisy, the falsehood! Oh, it's horrible, God hates it! There's nothing God hates more than a self-righteous hypocrite such as he's been! And by covering for him & with him, she has also been a hypocrite.

25. But now he has to be faced with it & he has to either judge himself that he be not judged, or we have to judge him, God has to judge him! He either could be drawn in by the light or driven away by the light. (Maria: It reminds me a little bit of the Evil Magician, too, how at the end, the weeds burned up, because they yielded, & they came out as beautiful lilies!) (See "Alice in the Magic Garden", No.290.)

26. From ashes sprang forth the beauty of truth!—Out of the ashes of the lies, the evil weeds, the poison of cover-ups! Evil has to be destroyed, the lies have to be destroyed, the cover-ups & hypocrisy have to be exposed & revealed—& she apparently is the instrument!

27. There is nothing hidden that won't be revealed! What was whispered in the ears now will be shouted from the housetops!—Mat.10:26,27. God hates cover-ups, He hates hypocrisy, lies & deceit! Oh my God, what a liar he's been! Every letter he wrote was a lie to ingratiate himself & try to promote & exalt himself. MATT. 6:14,15

28. What happened to the Devil?—He was cast out into outer darkness, defeated! He lost the place he could have had. Satan could have continued to be next to God Himself, a Light Bearer, but he lost his job, got fired for pretending & trying to be more than he was, even trying to take God's place!

29. Think of it! He's tried to take the place of God to her & she's allowed him to do it! She has permitted him to make her worship him—covered up for him, lied for him, deceived for him! "Don't tell the truth! Don't reveal anything! Don't talk!" It's a form of worship! It's obeying him instead of the Lord, obeying him instead of us, obeying the Devil instead of God! (Maria: You

said fear is a form of worship.) Of course! She's afraid of him, intimidated! ( TO INTIMIDATE WI FEAR , THREAT OR FORCE )

30. She fears him more than she does God! She fears him more than she does us! She's more afraid of him than she is of the Truth & the Lord & His Will! She's falling down & worshipping on her knees before Satan himself in him!—Worshipping the Devil, obeying the Devil, cowed by the Devil, intimidated by Satan, afraid to say anything or do anything for fear of offending him! How horrible! ( COWER = TO CROUCH IN FEAR )

31. The only way you can get rid of the Devil is to defy him, resist him, rebuke him, refuse to obey him! Get up on your feet & quit worshipping him! Worship God! "Thou shalt worship God & Him only shalt thou serve!"—Mat.4:10. She's been serving the Devil in him by worshipping him, obeying him, lying to us, trying to lie to God & letting him put her up to it all! It's Satanic, it's diabolical, it's devilish, fiendish, horrible!

32. Sometimes we've got to see sin like God sees it!—A stinking, icky cesspool! Ugh!—All of his hypocrisy & lies & beautiful cover-ups, appearing as an Angel of Light when he's a fiend! And she's brought this devil right here in our midst, think of it!

33. She's the one who knows the facts! She's the one who knows the truth! She's the one who revealed it, & now she has to be the instrument of Truth & Light & words & fight. She's gotta be his "Death Angel", his Beam of Light, his Judgement, because she knows. She was just as guilty as he is for hiding it, now she's got to face it & face him & tell him off.

34. (Maria: I just don't think people realise what deceit & cover-up is, that it's really lying when they say nothing about things we're supposed to talk about!) It's an abomination to the Lord, it's abomination!—Lying, deceit, hypocrisy! (Maria: It was the outright lying of people like Rachel that resulted in the Family doing the same thing, covering up & not saying anything. The Family has been just bound by that lying spirit!)

35. Why has it so often been the wives covering for their husbands? (Maria: Well, I suppose because the men are stronger & if their wife has a problem, they can deal with it themselves. But the wives are weaker & they can't deal with their husbands,

so they need outside help. They're afraid, just like Liz, & don't do it.)

36. Her sin was as great as his—if not greater—because she knew better! She knew he was wrong, yet she let him convince her it was right! He was so deluded & deceived & totally absolutely utterly completely gone to the Devil that he almost wasn't even responsible! But she still had some light & truth & doubts & wondered & worried about it, so she is even more responsible.

37. We were carrying these stacks of papers, like we're the bearers of the words! They speak them, but we carry them. They put them on their paper, we put them in the pubs, carry them to the people. (Maria: And you also said her words are the weapons that can conquer. She has to be willing to even confess that she squealed, that she's told everything.)—Exactly! That's the only way she can really get the victory. She's exposed him, she's told the whole story. They can't hide any more.

38. My Lord, what a responsibility! What a job God gives to us, & how much we're responsible for! How much God expects of us! God help us! How much she is responsible for! She's either going to get a great blame or a great credit, one or the other. It depends on how she uses it.—Whether she reveals it & does it, or hides it & covers it.

39. I think it has to be brought to a crisis, a decision, a separation. She needs the test as well as he!—To see if she is willing to give him up, stop worshipping him, stop fearing him & stop being so worried about him.—To put God first & the Lord's Work first instead of being a slave to his whims & evil desires.

40. Take her away completely until he repents, confesses, comes clean & changes! He is completely cut off, not allowed to come to the house for fellowship! The Bible says time & time again that the punishment of the wicked was to be cut off from amongst their people.—In other words, cut off from full Family fellowship. Make him stay out at the trailer. It's a test, a trial separation. He is forbidden to come to the house until he confesses & comes clean & repents—or leaves, one or the other.

41. Why stall, why put it off? Let him know we know his game, let him in on the whole score! Sooner or later he is going

to have to face himself, face the awful truth & the horrible realities & terrible deceit & all the icky iniquity of his horrible, horrible, sickening hypocrisy & lies & deceit & pretending to be something he is not! (FALSE FRONTS)

42. She has to be put through the test right now to find out if she's going to be able to make the break from his slavery, & he has to be put to the test right now to see if he's willing to be broken & humbled & honest & confess, repent & change, be born again. They both have to be tested. If he can't make it, then he's gotta go. And if she can't make it, then she's got to go with him!—Period! PTL!

43. I'll tell you, when people desert God, He deserts them, forsakes them & they're left alone to face the music & the Truth! I've never seen it to fail. Virtually everybody deserts the backslider, the liar, the cheat, the traitor, the turncoat! Nobody ever trusts them, they don't have any friends. They're left alone in the end.

44. (The next day:) These are instructions for Peter & the others on how I want Don to hear the first tape on the "Truth Revolution" dream. First of all, I want as many men in the house as possible, just in case he has any kind of violent explosion.

45. It's almost like he has a devil, he's virtually schizophrenic, & if you want to read "Exorcism" again, you'll get the point. (No.303.) These guys who put up a false front for so long & have been trying to fool everybody for so long, sometimes when they are exposed—like the Scribes & the Pharisees—they get violent! If they don't receive it & if they don't repent & humble themselves & confess & ask God to change them, sometimes they get violent.—Or like David Hoyt, right after he was exposed, lectured & prayed for, he just got up & walked out & went straight into the arms of our enemies & betrayed us!

46. Be in prayer as he is listening & make sure that he does listen to it. I want him to listen to it completely alone, in some room where he doesn't have to put on a show or gear his reaction for the benefit of somebody else who is watching or listening.

47. Be sure there are no instruments of destruction in the

room that he can get violent with, because if he can't do anybody else violence, he might be tempted to do himself harm. So be sure there is nothing in the room with which he could hurt himself. It is a pretty serious situation he's caught in now & there's nothing the Devil hates like being exposed! The rest of this tape is personal instructions to Don, hoping he will receive it.

48. Well, Don, I would like you to listen to this tape that Peter is going to give you about a dream that I had about you & Liz, "The Truth Revolution", a very remarkable dream. I want you to listen to both sides of this tape straight through, non-stop, & then immediately afterwards please take the blank tape & record your immediate reactions, emotions & sentiments in your own words, non-stop.

49. I'm sure both you & Liz realise that you have some very serious problems, & you have now brought them to our doorstep, in fact, into our little Heavenly Home of high security, & they could seriously endanger us & the whole Work!

50. We're hoping that your hearing this & your facing the facts & the truth will help you to come around & confess & come out with the whole truth!—Not just confess Liz's faults like you did in your latest report, but tell us all the facts about your wife-beating & your violence & your horrible temper & your drinking & all the other faults that you didn't confess in your report, amen?

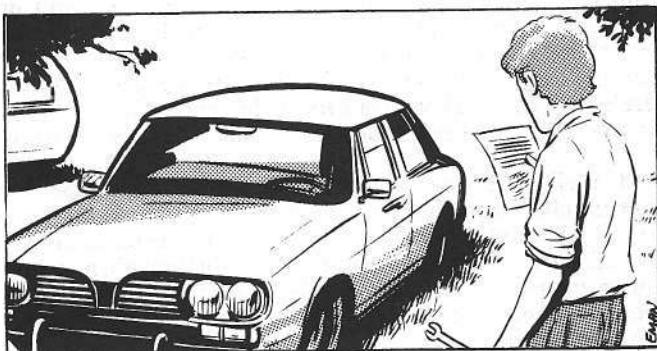
51. There's no hiding anything any more, the truth is out! We're hoping this will shock you enough to wake you up to get you to realise how horrible your sins are & to get you to confess & repent so you can straighten out & still be usable to the Lord, because this, I think, is probably your last chance! (How about you?)

---

**GOOD STEWARDSHIP!**  
— "The Truth Revolution", Pt. 5

11/79  
DO 2459

1. I think this car is another test for Don—because he broke it! It's obvious he burned it up!—Because he himself, by his own



confession, said that he left the starter switch on & it got red hot, which anybody who knows anything about a diesel ought to have known he shouldn't do!—And he was warned by the boys not to do it! (DISOBEDIENCE!)

2. It's not just the money! God gave that car to him, & he should have valued it & considered it a blessing instead of a burden & complaining about it constantly! That's probably why God let it break down, because he constantly complained about it & murmured about it & wasn't thankful for it! He didn't count his blessings.

3. He's too God-damned spoiled!—Spoiled rotten by those women & apparently by the people in the States & maybe even by the Lord! Well, we're going to get him unspoiled, & real fast, or we can't use him. He sounds just like that whole mob of the Chain, that's the way they were—used to rolling in dough & not appreciating things, like Rachel!

4. Let me tell you, when I started working on cars, I didn't know anything about'm, except from just standing there watching mechanics work on them! But I learned & I took two or three apart & put'm back together again, as little as I knew, & at least got'm running again because I was too damned poor to do anything else! I couldn't just expect somebody else to get it fixed or expect somebody else to throw enough money in my lap to get it fixed—I went to work & worked hard & did it in my spare

time & fixed it myself!—And that's something that guy needs to learn!

5. One reason we brought him here was because of his tall bragging about what a super-duper mechanic he was, so now he's going to learn to be a diesel mechanic! He's going to go pay to get that car fixed himself with his own money, & he's going to stand there & watch! It's going to be worth the course in diesel mechanics for him to stand there & watch'm while they work, & see how they do it & what they do. He's telling us to throw away what it cost to buy the car because he doesn't want to be bothered with it! He either gets the car fixed or fixes it himself or we're through with him, period!

6. I'm sick & fed-up with hearing his excuses! I never heard a guy with so many excuses, even on his confession! It's very sweet & very humble—about as humble & as honest as he knows how—but he's in such a habit of justifying himself & excusing himself & blaming things on others, that even in his confession it keeps coming out: "Well, I know I did the wrong thing, but you know, Liz did this & that." It's the same old thing! You just don't break that kind of habit of years overnight.

7. So this is going to be one of the trials God's going to give him right now! He broke it, he fixes it!—And he pays for it, or he's through! If he wants to junk the car, he can junk it & take care of it himself. It's in his name & he'll be held responsible for it by the police if they find it any place where it ought not to be. If he wants to fix it, OK, then let him figure out how to get it out to his trailer & his yard & let it sit there & work on it. If he's such a genius of a mechanic, he can learn! I know I could if I had to, & I'm that fed-up with it!—I'm just about that fed-up with him!

8. I learned a whole lot just by watching mechanics. I knew they didn't want to be bothered, they didn't even want to be watched, so I seldom ever talked to them or even asked them a question, because I knew they resented it. I just watched & kept my mouth shut & tried not to bother them.

9. He's a smart-aleck, a know-it-all! That's just typical of some people, you can't tell them anything. They have to learn the hard way, just like he's learning!—The idea of suggesting to us that he just throw an expensive car away & junk it!

10. Those damn Americans don't know the value of money or materials or anything! They are so damned spoiled, so used to having whatever they want, or wasting it! They're wasting the whole World! Rather than economise, they prefer to destroy the World! Rather than be unselfish & try to economise & help the World save, they'd rather blow it up!—Just like he wants to get rid of the car!

11. Well, that boy has got a few things to learn, & he'd better start learning them now or I'm through trying to train him! You tell him the car is his & his worry, but that if he proves himself to be that poor a steward of what God gives him, we're not going to help him with one more penny—nothing! I'm not throwing away money on poor or wasteful stewards!

12. He's going to have to prove himself & his stewardship & start repenting & straightening out & showing a whole new attitude toward life, & a good way to start is on that car that he himself destroyed! I don't need workers who come in & the first thing they do is break something that is valuable & good that we've given them—through their own carelessness & disobedience & being a smart-aleck know-it-all, refusing to listen to warning advice!—And that's obviously how he did it! It never happened when anybody else was driving it.

13. I'm not about to let him just throw that car away! For God's sake, at least we'll get it fixed enough to be able to sell it or trade it in on something else if he doesn't want it, but we're not going to throw it away! I don't think God gave us the car for that purpose. It was running fine when we got it, I don't care how bad the body is. Don't tell me there's anything in this whole World that can't be fixed, unless wasteful people just destroy it & throw it away! Of course you can't fix it then!

+++

(The following is Dad's written reply on Don's note:)

14. I'm afraid things come too easy for you guys in the States!—Money, cars etc.—We don't throw away things just because they're old or broken here.—We fix'm! You mean you want to junk it?...Cars are not cheap here, especially diesels!—That one was a bargain at about \$2,000!—You're not in the cheap ol' U.S.A. any more!—Where they throw away cars & buy new

ones!—Don't tell me to throw away that much money!—Or that that car can't be fixed!—You Americans are spoiled, Son!—We're not gonna waste God's money like that!—You broke it—you fix it!—Or get it fixed!—Or we'll not help you with another penny on getting another! It's your car!—Another test of your stewardship!!—Maybe you oughta get yourself a diesel book & learn!

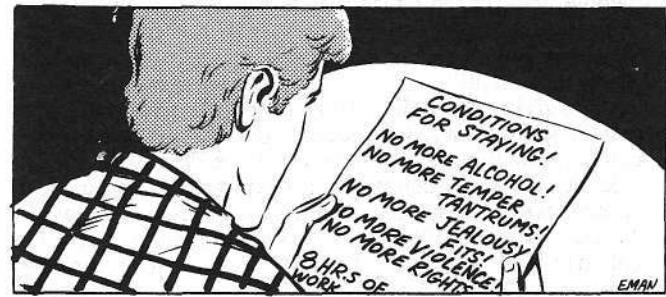
15. The boys warned you several times not to start that car the way you did, but you wouldn't listen!—One of your problems!—You're too smart for your own good, Son!—You don't know it all!—You'd better start learning! GHU!—You get that car fixed & watch'm while they fix it & learn—or do it yourself!—Sorry.—Mad Dad!

## GOD'S DISCIPLINE MAKES DISCIPLES!

11/79

— "The Truth Revolution", Pt. 6

DO 2460



1. Well, PTL! TYL! This is in answer to Don's tape of confession & repentance—we hope. Of course, we don't know what repentance is until the deeds are done. We hope it's a change of mind, at least. Well, Son, you have repented—at least it sounds like it—& confessed your sins, even though you are still in such a habit of justifying yourself & excusing yourself & blaming it on others.

2. Even in this confession you make references to Liz as though, "Well, she was to blame & deserved it, but I was wrong too" etc. It's a habit of years & it's going to be hard to get out of that & several other bad habits which you have had for some years now. But as you have said & as the Lord has shown us, this is your last chance. If you don't make it here, then you're through as far as we're concerned & your work here with us.

3. God is certainly merciful! I'm afraid if I had known of your faults beforehand, I wouldn't have been so merciful! We certainly wouldn't have brought you folks & your big family here to work with us unless we had thought you were very talented & useful & going to be a big help to the work. We certainly can't carry on much longer this way, spending most of our time dealing with your problems.

4. So I'm going to lay down a few rules for you, Don, & maybe some for Liz too. We already have & some of them have been passed on to you, but if you want to stay here & work with us & stay with the Family, you'll have to abide by them. I've often told people, they haven't reached the top when they get here, they've reached the bottom, & if they don't make it here when they have their last chance at the very end of the rope, they usually don't make it at all!

5. God's giving them their last chance, His greatest mercy & greatest opportunity, & frequently, if they don't make it with us, then they just don't make it even with the Family or with the Lord, & they backslide completely! A few people have come & been trained with us & gone on to other even higher fields of service because they did well & they just got some training under us & went on to serve the Lord better than ever. So just because they are no longer with us doesn't mean that they all failed or washed out or fluked out.

6. So whether this period of training here with us is temporary or whether you're going to remain awhile, remains to be seen. It remains to be seen in your reaction to these restrictions & rules we're going to lay down for you & how you take it & whether you are willing to follow them or not. Because I gather, Son, that you have been pretty spoiled somehow, certainly spoiled by those two women, that's for sure!

7. As I told somebody today, it seems like even God almost spoiled you, He let you get away with it for years, but I think even God's fed-up! And I know I'm just about fed-up, & if you hadn't pulled through with a good honest confession & shown some signs of repentance, you would be through now!

8. This really is not a very good place for a big family, but we took you since you no longer had your former job. We considered that you are both very valuable folks with lots of needed talents & experience, & you passed a lot of tests that the Lord & we put you through, & apparently God in His mercy allowed us to bring you here to get some more training & pass some more tests & try to get you straightened out, if He can, with our help.—Because if we had known your severe problems before you came, you wouldn't be here now!

9. I must say that I did tell Maria I was a bit leery of having another Sagittarian around, because so many of them have so much pride & are such men-pleasers & so know-it-all, smart-alecks, mostly big show & not much go! They are usually sky rockets, a flash in the pan, that just looks great for a little while, then you turn around & they're gone!

10. Most Sagittarians I've known seem to be that way, including my own brother! He was handsome, intelligent, had a brilliant education, a gorgeous voice, good looks, everything! He had good jobs, tremendous salaries, but he just never could make it because he was always more concerned about what people thought than about what God thought!

11. He was a man-pleaser & more interested in serving Man than God! He squandered his money trying to buy friends with lavish, expensive parties & lavish gifts & living high above his income to show off & to be popular. Oh, how he loved popularity &, oh my, how popular he was!—Until he flubbed out & fluked out time & again & lost all his friends, even lost his wife & his children & his home & his car & his business & his job & his money & he went totally bankrupt!—All through trying to be such a big show-off & a man-pleaser & be popular! He just loved the praise of men & was much more interested in being popular with Man than he was in being popular with God!

12. People like that really have a tough time making it be-

cause they love popularity & the praise of Man & glory & glamour & all that so much, they just almost need to be worshipped or they're not happy!

13. **That's been your problem, Son, & it's caused you no end of grief!** It's almost cost you your wife & your family & your sanity & your health, & we're just not going to let it cost any more if we can help it! It's caused us enough trouble & grief & problems already, Lord help us! But we're going to try one last chance to salvage you & use you if we can.

14. **I'm laying down some very strict conditions on it & you've already heard some of the rules, that you are to work full-time, put in a good eight hours a day for the Lord & His work, at least working on your own trailer & your own car. And Liz is to be separated from you all day long—you hardly even deserve that much considering the way you've treated her.**

15. **You knew what the rules were, you knew that anybody that used violence with his mate was to be thrown out of the Family immediately, at least out of the Home, & not be allowed back in until he fully repents & shows "works meet for repentance", & vows never to do it again. And I think I laid down the rules in long-ago Letters that if such a man ever started using violence again, that's it! Out he goes! So that's going to be the rule for you, too, Son.**

16. **So Liz is to come & put in a good day's work at the house.** You're going to be separated from her all day long, just like you would be in the System if you had a job. But you have the blessing of your little family & your children & your other wife, which most men don't have, & to be working at home on your own home & your own car. And if for any reason Liz should have to stay overnight at the house at any time, you can just be thankful she ever gets to come home any night, & isn't separated from you permanently.

17. **I don't want to hear any more murmurs or complaints or gripes or beefs or have you objecting to any of these disciplinary measures** because you are being spanked & under discipline & chastened & chastised for your very vicious sins that have caused you & your family & our family & the Lord a lot of trouble! We're just not going to put up with it any more, period!

This is your last chance, you either straighten out, or out you go, & you'll be on your own & have to solve your own problems.

18. **And I can honestly say, I hope you make it**, because I know if people don't make it, they usually go back so far that they are a mess & no good to anybody.—In fact, even worse, sometimes they are a hindrance & a detriment & a jinx to everybody, & out of fellowship with God & the Family, out of the Will of God.

19. **So honestly, I know all of us hope that you will make it**, but you are going to have to make it according to these rules. We've laid down some of those rules already, as far as your working hours & your working places & your jobs. We're going to see to it that you are kept busy.

20. **That's what you supposedly came here for**—not to cause us a lot of problems & waste a lot of our time! We have enough to do without having to spend any more time on problem cases! So you are not going to be a problem any more, I can promise you that, because you are either going to straighten out & do well & make it, or you're going to be out where you won't cause us any problems!

21. **You can be thankful that Liz is willing to come home at night to you at all**, without any more of this slavery business with you as her tyrant & she as your slave. "There is no male or female in Christ Jesus."—Gal.3:28. You're equal before God, & she has just as much rights as you have. You should be working together in love & cooperation & helpfulness as helpmeets to each other & your family, & to our family & the Lord's Work & others. And that's the way it's going to be, or it's not going to be!

22. **You're not to touch another drop of liquor, wine or alcoholic beverage of any kind, any further from now on, period!** And I want to warn you that if you do, it is your last drop with us! Because obviously you can't be trusted with it. Your insane jealousy & your violent temper are dangerous & alcohol obviously fuels the fire & makes you even worse.

23. **Liz & Jill, I want you to report to us if he touches one drop of an alcoholic beverage**, if he comes back from town even with the smell of alcohol on his breath! I want you to report it to

us immediately or you are breaking the rules & are just as guilty as he is! And if you girls don't keep these rules, you're going to be out!—Because then you are in cahoots with his deviltry & you're protecting & covering for him & you're lying to us because you're not reporting it, & you're just as guilty as he is!

24. **The same goes for his temper tantrums, girls!** I want you to report to us immediately if he has any more of these temper tantrums, even if they don't get violent. Even if it is his language that just gets violent or he loses his temper at you & berates you & gives you the tongue-lashings that he's accustomed to. No more of these grillings & third degrees: "What did he say? What did he do? What did you say? What did you do? Who have you been with?"

25. **Liz has a right to be with anybody she wants to be with,** so does Jill for that matter, & because of your bad behaviour, you don't even have a right to be with either one of them any more! That's a privilege, & we're just tolerating it for the time being to see if you're going to straighten out!

26. **I'd tell you these things to your face, Son,** but maybe you'd better be thankful I'm not, because I've been tempted to knock your block off considering the problems you've caused & the behaviour you have manifested in the past. When I heard about your beating up your wife, I felt like beating you up myself! I'll tell you, God gets angry sometimes & He beats people up when they deserve it, & you have certainly deserved it. So if I'm giving you a tongue lashing, you deserve it!

27. **No more alcohol! No more temper tantrums! No more jealousy fits! No more violence!** No more cruel treatment or mental cruelty or tongue cruelty in relation to your women! You sacrificed your rights, now they have become only privileges. You have no right to Liz or Jill any more. You really haven't even any right to your children, considering the way you have behaved. Neither one of the girls have to make love to you if they don't want to. If they don't feel like it & they don't want to, they don't have to. That's no longer your right, you've forfeited it by your behaviour. It's now a privilege for which you had better be very thankful if you get any at all! When you sell your birthright for a mess of violent pottage, then you forfeit it & you no longer have

a right to it.—Heb.12:16.

28. **You're on your last leg, Son, & your last chance—at least as far as we're concerned.** If we're through with you, then maybe God has something to teach you by some very hard lessons & maybe He can still straighten you out, I don't know, but we can't spend any more time with it. I hope you mean what you said in your confession tape, it sounded like you're showing signs of genuine repentance. But it will take a miracle of God & more than your desire, it will take your constant yieldedness to the Lord & constant fellowship with God & a constant struggle.

29. **I must admit, Son, when I heard the full story of your problems & your sad tale, I was ready to throw you out then,** & I didn't feel that you deserved another chance after what you had done. You can only thank God for mercy now, because only God has given me the mercy to give you another chance. I'm a mess myself & we can't stand to have too many more messes around besides me! I'm enough of a problem without having more problem cases around, PTL!

30. **The whole family at the house where you come to fellowship are going to have to know your problems & your case & know that you are on strict probation!** You were on probation when you came here anyhow, but you are on very strict probation now because of the behaviour which you have manifested, which began to show itself before there were ever any confessions or anything. This is what brought it all out, your very bad attitude, not wanting anybody else to tell your wife what to do & thinking that you're the only little god that she should have & worship & obey, & objecting to the way we do certain things.

31. **Like the old sergeant told me in the Army:** "There's a right way & a wrong way, & there's the Army way!"—And you do it the Army way, whether you think it's right or wrong!" That's the way you're going to do it, Son, if you're going to stay here! We have a perfect right to talk to Liz all we want to without you around, & she has a perfect right to talk to us & spill the whole beans!—And thank God she has or you never would have gotten straightened out!

32. **Maybe that'll help you realise that you are no longer her little god that is to be worshipped & obeyed!** You forfeited

those rights of a husband, now it's a privilege, & if she decides she wants to come home at night at all or stay with you at all, then that's a miracle of God & her mercy & love & forgiveness, because she no longer owes it to you.

**33. You've given her every reason to leave you & every excuse for it**, & she would certainly be justified in doing so if she wanted to. But she has shown a lot of mercy & a lot of forgiveness & an awful lot of love to put up with you & your violence & your insane temper & your unreasonable jealousy & temper tantrums & fits as long as she has!

**34. You're dangerous, Son, really dangerous!** Anybody with a temper like yours is dangerous. I want you to look up Scriptures in the Bible on anger! I can remember one right now, "Keep no company with a furious man!"—Pro.22:24. It says quite a few things in Proverbs about men who are too angry & violent, it warns against even associating with such people!

**35. Whenever you let the Devil in like that you're almost demon-possessed & downright dangerous**, & when this tape is over, I want the Family to lay hands on both of you & ask God to give you the victory, to deliver you from these spirits of lying & deceit & cover-up & hypocrisy & temper & jealousy & violence & all the rest of your horrible vices!

**36. Ask the Lord to do a miracle & deliver you, because only God can do it!** You're not stronger than the Devil, but God is, & you can ask for His help. That's where you made your big mistake, you didn't come clean & confess & ask for help, you just revelled in it, lording it over your women & making them wait on you hand-&-foot like a little god!

**37. My women wait on me hand-&-foot, I must admit, they spoil me, but they do it in love!** I don't force it, I don't beat'm up, I don't sock'm in the face & break their glasses & bruise them & demand that they bow down & kneel down & worship me!

**38. I'm sorry, Son, to speak so forcibly, but I'm just about fed-up with your problems & having brought them here to our doorstep & right into our home, interfering with God's Work!** You have beaten your wife down mentally & spiritually & verbally with the attitude that you are the only one that's right & she's

always wrong, & I want to tell you that she's got the grace of & the Spirit of God & seems to have more spirituality than you have or she never would have taken it! But I don't think she's going to be able to take it very much longer if you don't change & straighten out!

**39. So that's the way it's got to be!** If you can straighten out, get right with the Lord & her & them & us & show real signs of improvement & change, then praise God! We certainly hope you do & we hope you'll prove of usefulness to the Lord & His Work, because that's why we sent for you, because we needed you.

**40. As we told Liz, if you don't work out & don't respond & don't improve & decide you want to go, then you are welcome to go!** But she's also welcome to stay if she is willing to keep the rules & doesn't want to go with you. So that's up to her. But that's something that you have to know & be forewarned of, that "the way of transgressors is hard, & whatsoever a man sows, that shall he also reap. Be sure your sins will find you out!"—Pro.13:15; Gal.6:7; Num.32:23. I'm hoping you both make it, really I do, for your sake & the Lord's sake & His Work's sake, because you both have a lot of talent that God can use if it's yielded to Him & if it's used according to the rules.

**41. I hope this is the last tape I'm going to make on the subject!** In fact, if you don't work out, my next word will be, "Chop chop, out he goes, good-bye!" And you can just go back to your little trailer & you will have to worry about what to do & what to do with it! Meanwhile, there's one more point to deal with:

**42. When Peter left, the diesel was working fine.** It's not the best car in the World—at least that one isn't—and it's old & it may be rusted-out, but at least it was running. It didn't break down until you got ahold of it, Son, until you started it in a way that the boys had warned you several times not to, until you burned it up! You apparently burned out the ignition system inside the engine, from what the mechanic says, & now it has to be opened up & repaired. You probably melted down some of the wiring & it shorted out & it won't work at all now.

**43. And I think one reason God let it happen was because you were ungrateful & unthankful for it**, you murmured about it & complained about it instead of being very thankful that you

had a car at all!—Not only the use of it, but God even gave it to you! We gave it to you! That car is a very good brand of car & it can be fixed, no matter how old it is.

44. **But that's typical of you Americans, things come so easy & you're so damn wasteful & so spoiled!** America just throws away things rather than fix them! I've seen lots of Americans who threw things away just because they didn't want to bother to fix 'm! They just bought a new one because things came so easy, money came so easy. Cars in the States are so cheap, they throw them away by the millions!—Cars that Europeans would work on & fix & keep running for years.

45. **Well, you're not in the U.S.A. any more, you're in Europe where things are expensive & hard to come by, even hard to get fixed!** And if you think I'm going to throw away the money we sank into buying that car just because you don't like it & you don't want to bother with it & bother to get it fixed, you're mistaken! God's giving you another test, & I think it's coming through that car to test your stewardship & your determination to see things through & to cause you to appreciate things instead of looking a gift horse in the mouth!

46. **I must say, your first note on that car rather shocked me when I told you I was giving it to you!** I was amazed at how little you appreciated it & how you complained & murmured about it & criticised it & didn't like it, that you would rather have something else. Well, apparently God isn't going to give you anything else, at least right now, until you make that one good. You're stuck with it! It's in your name & you're not even going to be able to throw it away or junk it without some difficulty! And I want to tell you right now, if you do, you are through with us!

47. **You broke it, you're going to fix it or get it fixed, or we just can't use you here if you're that wasteful, that destructive, that hard to advise & that hard to warn!** The boys warned you not to start it that way, but you went right ahead in your smart-alecky, know-it-all way! You knew better & you went ahead anyhow, so you ruined it, you wrecked it, you broke it! But that's typical of Americans!

48. **The U.S. would rather destroy the World than try to**

**fix it!** They're so wasteful that rather than drive their cars less & use less oil & be economical & saving & unselfish & more considerate of the rest of the World, they would rather go to war & destroy the World!—Rather than try to fix it or repair it, especially if it is going to cost them anything!

49. **Well, it's going to cost you something, Son, to save that car!** We're not going to waste it or the money we put in it. You are going to fix that car if you have to get yourself a diesel manual & work on it yourself! You are going to fix it or you are going to pay to get it fixed yourself with your money!

50. **We have never allowed anyone to come into the Family & keep their own money.** You know the rules, you are always to put your money in a common pot, into God's Family's hand, & then you're taken care of from there. But we felt that since you had raised it & you'd need it to get yourself vehicles & whatnot, we'd let you keep it. But if you're going to be that poor a steward of God's money, we can't trust you with it any more.

51. **So I'm asking Peter to collect your funds & from now on he'll take care of whatever expenses you need out of that.** Money has come too easy for you, Son, cars have come too easy! Apparently everything's come too easy for the Americans & now they're going to have to learn the hard way, just like you're going to learn the hard way.

52. **We would even be willing to let you use the time to fix it yourself,** to park it there beside your trailer & take it apart & see if you can find out what's wrong with it. Get yourself a diesel book. You're supposed to be such a super-duper mechanic from all you had to say in your letters & reports, you ought to be able to figure it out & fix it. I've taken cars apart when I didn't know anything about them & figured them out for myself, with a manual in one hand & a wrench in the other!

53. **So either you are going to go to work on the car & work on it & fix it yourself, or you're going to have it towed somewhere where they can fix it, & pay for it.** I'm sure it's not going to cost as much as the car cost, & we're not about to begin to throw away that money & have nothing to show for it! It's better to put a little into it & repair it, at least to where it will run & to where we could sell it or trade it in on something else, than just

talk about junking it! You are dealing with a different kind of people now than Rachel & the Chain & her old wasteful extravagant crowd! We don't do things that way here! We even save sheets of toilet paper!

54. **No more wastefulness!** If you're not saving enough & trustworthy enough, a good steward of God's material blessings & thankful enough, grateful enough & not murmuring & complaining & belly-aching about it, then you don't deserve it!

55. **We can't have people here who are wasteful & suggest that we just junk an expensive car because we don't want to bother to fix it or pay for it!** That car has a lot of good features. It still even looks good! It may be bad, but at least it was running before you got ahold of it! Now I want you to get it running again. And I suggest that if you can't fix it or don't want to fix it yourself, that you take it to a mechanic who can—and you stand right there & watch him while they fix it! You may not know anything about it right now, but take a free course—or maybe it's going to be an expensive course—in diesel engines & stand there & watch 'em fix it & see how they do it & learn something!

56. **That's how I learned my mechanics, I just watched the mechanics work on my car.** I seldom ever talked to them or asked them questions, because I knew they didn't like to be bothered, so I just watched. I don't know anything about diesels, either, but if I had to learn, I would! I learned about gasoline engines when I didn't know anything about them, & I learned, first of all, just by hard experience. I didn't have a repair manual, I just did it! I watched & I learned & then I did it myself.

57. **That's your next test, to see how obedient you're going to be & see how willing you are to take instructions & orders!** Because we're an Army & I'm the General here, & right or wrong, you do it the Army way, no matter what you think about it. I'm sorry, but that's the way it's got to be, & may God help you understand & learn why! That's why the Family's gotten as far as it has, Son, because I'm a tough Commander & I expect things to be done the way I believe God wants them done! So give your funds to Peter & he'll take care of things then.

58. **When you give everything to God, then He takes care of everything for you!** But as long as you've got anything that

you're holding back, He's going to let you take care of it. Amen?—That's the Family rules! Right? Praise God! God bless you all!

59. **I love you, God loves you, we love you & we hope you make it!** Now Family, gather round & lay hands on them & really pray that God'll deliver them both & give them the victory! PTL! God bless you all & I hope you make it, because we need you. PTL! TYJ! Hallelujah! Lord, do help these dear children to make it, in Jesus' name we ask for Thy Glory, & for their own sake, Lord, as well. Amen.

### DON & LIZ'S HOMEGOING!

—"The Truth Revolution", Pt. 7

12/79  
DO 2461



(Introduction by Sara from "The Truth Revolution!", TSOOC 90):

Jill & Liz grew closer together than ever & were trying to make a two-fold cord that would not be quickly broken in combating their marriage problems. Their children continued to fall sick off & on, which was also a continuing trial. Dad reminded us from time to time, "Just train them all you can. Never give up. It's a fight, but it would be worth it if they really made it." But we were very disappointed to see that Liz was weakening as time

went on, although she was really trying her best. Whatta fight!

The Folks suggested that Liz give us morning reports of how things went the night before, & oh, it just got worse & worse! Don thought nothing of expressing himself over & over again, saying "I don't agree. I don't see why they do things that way here," as well as quizzing the girls on their nights spent with the boys at the house, as Dad had suggested, always murmuring & complaining behind closed doors. Maria lovingly reminded us, "It takes time to change. You can't expect people to change overnight even though they've been corrected outright. Maybe in situations like this the wives come on in a self-righteous way, maybe they're not handling it right, maybe they do provoke their husbands to anger. How can we know?"

Don continually criticised & disagreed & complained about the conditions he was to meet & our over-all work, which was directed first-hand by Dad & Maria themselves, till one night when completely depressed, & after having listened to his "poor-me" tape by the Bee Gees—which was one of his favourite System tapes from a collection of many—(Dad said, "The Bee Gees give me the heebie-geebees!")—Don snuck out of the camp-ground after closing hours & bought a bottle of wine with "their own" money, which was direct disobedience to Dad's conditions asked of him, drank till drunk, & was found talking to himself under their caravan awning. When approached by his wives he became violent, although incoherent, & this is all we had to hear the next morning to try our best to now put a stop to it altogether!

Dad said, "That jungle music just lets the Devil in! If he refuses to part with it, even when told not to listen to it, it shows that's what he worships! You've gotta get out of the Devil's reach! Pack that caravan & have it ready to go in an hour-&a-half. The boys'll be there to pick you up & the Family here will be fasting & praying for your situation there."

So while some of our boys pioneered a new far-away camp-site for us to move to, I packed the caravan & had it ready to go & we pulled out that night, but not before Liz walked over to tell us good-bye, as she sensed in the spirit exactly what would happen & said she knew she'd never see another Day of Heaven with us again! What a heart-breaker! It's all just so sad when

people fail the Lord!

Peter, Alf & myself then talked to the Truth Revolution team about returning to their former field, so they could start anew in the land that they reported they had done so well in, as now we were moving so far away we really had no need for them any more as a help to the Staff. The husband replied, "But I pledged my loyalty only yesterday! I just wrote the Folks yesterday telling them I'm sorry!" And we knew they were very sorry, as we all felt very heart-broken about the entire situation, but knew it was best & it was right, as it came from the mouth of God's Prophet, & let me tell you, at this point the rest of us were determined to obey every order to the best of our ability in every way no matter what the cost, God helping us!

We cried to say good-bye, especially to their dear children who were such good soldiers & good witnesses for the Lord, & hitched up our caravan, which was ready to roll, & pulled out—waving bye-bye to the Truth Revolution Team behind us! Like Dad said, "If I only had" or "I was wrong" are the hardest words to say in the English language. So Lord help us & make us all a blessing, & obedient blessings at that! In Jesus' name, Amen!

1. (Dad prays:) Amen! PYL! TYJ! Lord, give us wisdom! Thank You for this beautiful day You've given us for this move, Lord. Give them great wisdom in breaking the news to Don & Liz & handling them with love & patience, in Jesus' name we ask for Thy glory. Help Don & Liz to be able to take it! They sure must know by this time, Lord, that they have really flunked! We were ready to send them back last time they had any problems, but we gave them one more chance, so he must surely know, Lord, that he has failed & broken all the rules & all the things we told him. He certainly must know that there's nothing left but "a fearful looking forward to of judgement."—Heb. 10:27.

2. Help us to judge him lovingly, Lord, wisely, & the best we can to try to get the best use out of him for Thy glory that we possibly can, to still try to salvage him & reclaim him if we can, Lord, for Thy Work's sake, in Jesus' name. Help them not to cause any problems or troubles here before they go & we ask You to help them to see that this is best, in Jesus' name. TYL!

3. I've been talking to Maria & asking God, "Why did You let it happen at all?" But "all things work together for good to them that love the Lord."—Rom.8:28. One thing I'll have to say for him, he sure is a good salesman!—He knows how to sell himself, & he sure talked his way into here. He must have wanted to come awful bad, although I don't know why! I can't imagine anybody who would want to come work with us!—That's the toughest job there is, as far as I'm concerned, & the most dangerous!

4. I guess it's pride, because he wanted to be lifted up to the highest & say, "I have worked with Dad!" Well, pride comes before a fall & you are never so near the abyss as when you are on the brink! Satan said, "I will be lifted up! I want to become as the Most High"—& that was his downfall!—Isa. 14:14.

5. They never told us about all their problems! Everything was rosy! Everything was perfect! They said the children were never sick a day in their lives. I don't know whether that means that they weren't in the hospital in an operation or what, but the children were never sick.—That's about all they were when they first got here! I can't blame the poor kids for that, it's always difficult to move to a new climate, but to say they were so strong & never sick & never to tell us anything about all the serious problems they had was deceptive!

6. So they really came under false pretences, hiding their evils & hiding their faults & frailties & not being very honest with us. If you're not honest, then you are being false. And if you're claiming to be righteous when you're not, then you're a hypocrite. I must say that I did hesitate several times & I always feel it is wiser to prove people at some other Unit before they come to us, but it seemed like they had proved themselves there. But you see, they were there on their own & alone & with nobody to report anything to us. I'll tell you, the proof of the pudding is in the tasting, & being time-tested in a position where people have some months or years to be tested!

7. But Don & Liz had never really worked under anybody that we knew or had any experience with that I know of. Well, he talked his way into this job & he has also talked his way out! And frankly, before I even got your note, Sara, I was already talk-

ing to Maria about how to get rid of them. In fact, we've been talking about that & what to do about it for quite awhile, & that's one reason we're shopping around for another place for you to park your trailer. It was my conviction that the safest thing to do was sort of withdraw slowly from them & try to avoid an explosion if we can.

8. Anyhow, they are on their way back to their former field, as far as I can see. We don't have to tell them all their faults & why they're being fired, literally, or even that they are being fired. Please, let's try to keep it on a nice "dehiring" level, if you know what I mean. Nowadays when big corporations want to get rid of an executive, all of a sudden they lose their secretary, then they find out they've lost their big desk & they've been moved to a smaller office, & by & by, when they even take away their executive restroom key, then they know that they are really not wanted any more. By that time they quit, they don't have to fire them.

9. My Mother used to say, "I never fired anybody, ever! I just prayed them out!" And as Maria knows, & some of you who have worked with me from way back know, even in our Soul Clinic schools, somebody that just didn't work out with us & didn't work well with us, we simply would sit down & have a chat with them & say, "Well, I suppose you see that you are not happy in this situation or that things are not going quite as well here as they did where you were before. You were such a huge success back in your former area, from all the things you wrote, everything was so great, that we believe you will probably be happier there."

10. But the first thing you have to tell them is that, "We're very sorry, but due to a certain security situation, we're all moving!"—Which is certainly true! He's the problem, but you don't have to tell him that. So break the news that due to a security problem that has arisen, you have to move today—now! Sorry! You know them well, Peter, you lived with them & you are the top officer & it's your duty to be my hatchet man when you have to be, & I'm glad you can be kind & loving & sweet. It might be a good idea to say that not only Alf & Sara are having to move, but we're all having to move!—And that's true! We're all moving right away, very soon.

11. Whenever there is a weak link or a weak chink, the Devil always tries to get in. Whenever there is somebody who's prone to be weak, then the Devil certainly knows it & takes advantage of it. In fact, he virtually takes that person over if they just keep on yielding to him, like Don has. The idea of listening to the Bee Gees all day long, it's enough to give you the "Heebie Geebees", or whatever they used to call them! I mean, feeding his soul on junk like that is just as bad, if not worse, than "You Are What You Read!"

12. Obviously he is completely out of fellowship with the Lord & he's one of those "poor-me's", sorry-for-himself types! Some people just think they are God's gift to the World, & if you don't appreciate them, then they are super sorry for themselves & they try to make you sorry, too, & they usually do! So she's got her hands full, but she is just as much to blame as he is because she protected him. She's another one of those wives who lied for him & covered for her husband, so she is just as much to blame! She danced the dance with him, & now it's time to pay the fiddler!

13. As far as we are concerned, she is the one who allowed this problem to come here, & now she is going to have to help get rid of it. We're not going to break up the family & give her special consideration & let her stay, which could even cause bigger problems & more explosions, because he's so crazy he's almost schizophrenic! I think he has let the Devil in too much & he is nearly possessed on occasion, especially when he drinks.

14. Surely he should have known from the tapes I made that I was in the mood to fire him then! It was only the grace of God we've tried to give him one more chance & he has absolutely muffed it!—The thing that amazes me about people like that is they have no fear of God. When they have no fear of me, they have no fear of God! Even in his note he says he didn't think it was anything serious to take a little drink of wine—even though he had been forbidden!

15. Normally it is not serious to take a little drink of wine, but if you have been forbidden to do it & told your job hangs on your obedience & that if you touch another drop of wine or if you break any one of these rules you are finished, then to go right

ahead & do it without compunction, without any fear at all, shows something's wrong, very wrong! It's almost like he wants to get fired!

16. He claims: "Oh there's nothing that I want to do more than stay here!"—I don't believe him! If that were true he would have done everything under the sun to try to keep the rules & he would have been absolutely scared to death to take a drink! It's another one of his soft-soap talks. He doesn't want to stay here more than anything in the World! He wouldn't rather work for us more than anything!

17. I think he's dying to leave, & even though he doesn't admit it, I think he's happy that he is going to get to go! Because here he has been exposed, found out, disciplined, dealt with & under other bosses, which he has never been before, at least not for a long time. I think he is tickled pink to leave—although I doubt if he will say so. He will probably break down & bawl & have one of his tantrums that he has to go, blah blah, but all the time he is happy!

18. I don't believe a thing the guy says any more!—He is an absolute deceiver! I think he's partly possessed!—Not totally, because he's not like that all the time, he's schizophrenic, off & on!—Off again, on again, gone again, Flannigan!—Especially when he drinks & he's out of fellowship. And that's one of the worst things that could have happened, him being out there alone at that trailer. He got out there alone with the Heebie Geebee's & the Bee Gees & listening to nothing but the Devil, so of course that made him worse! He was just fellowshipping with the Devil & himself all day long.

19. Maria & I have often discussed the pros & cons of an enemy—a pacified enemy within or a dangerous enemy without. And I'll tell you, I'll take the known open enemy outside any time rather than an enemy within! Just like your own spiritual life & your own body, it's easier to fight the outside devils than the one that worms his way in through your own weaknesses & faults & failures. He can do a lot of damage outside, but he can do a hell of a lot more inside!

20. So the quicker we cut off all opportunities for him to do any damage whatsoever to any of our personnel or whatever,

the better! I don't want him going on one of his drunken sprees & demon possessions & into some kind of a fit over there at the camp which will draw in the police! And naturally when he gets demon-possessed like that he is going to attack the closest representatives of the Lord & could come smashing through your door or throw bottles through your windows or God only knows what! I don't want to give him a chance!

21. So the first thing is to let them know that an emergency security situation has arisen. Tell them you're leaving tomorrow or in the next day or two, Peter. I doubt if he'll try to hurt the little folks, he'd try to hurt somebody he thinks is to blame & the top dogs who have responsibility & the ones he feels caused their trouble & so on.

22. It might even do you good to fast before you go over there! You might not want to eat when I get through telling you this! "This kind goeth not out save by fasting & prayer."—Mat.17:21. It might be good to go there with an empty stomach so you will realise how serious it is, but that's up to you.

23. So here's your story: "We're leaving, which of course means you've got to leave too. You can do what you want to, if you want to stay here with your car & trailer or you want to tour Europe or whatever you want to do, that's up to you, but you did your best when you were in the States & we feel it would be better for you to go back there now that you have had this bit of training here with us, & we hope that you can do even better." We certainly do, don't we? Be honest, speak with conviction, it's the truth!

24. "We believe that you did your best there & we hope now that you can even do better since you have had a little time with us & worked with us. We're willing to give you back all your money that you brought with you, buy your trailer from you, & we'll take the car too." It was a gift, anyhow, that he kept looking in the mouth & didn't want, so he sure won't consider that any great loss! "You can't very well take your trailer with you, but we can use it since we're moving, & therefore we'll pay you back for it, & thanks for the improvements that you made in getting it fixed up.

25. "We really thought it was going to be for you, but under

the circumstances it looks like the Lord must have done it for us!" But he did that, more or less, you might say, in exchange for his room-&-board & family expenses while he was here. He earned his way while here through what he did, or at least as well as he was able to, mentally & spiritually. Certainly not as well as he was physically able to. Apparently the guy has had a real weakness along that line—God only knows how long—apparently for years according to her own story.

26. I have a feeling he was probably a spoiled brat who threw tantrums when he was little & got his way & he just never has grown up! People just don't learn that sort of thing overnight, it's something that is virtually part of you & becomes a habit through years & probably started when he was a child.

27. It's like that story in the FN about the guy that was taking care of Kenaz' boys when they ran away. When I read that story & was reading his apology & all, I thought, "Where did they ever get this idea of running away from home?" We've never talked about anything like that in the Letters!

28. Home was never that bad to me, home was a Heaven-on-Earth & my Mother & Father were saints, & I knew it! I wouldn't have ever thought of running away from home. So I thought, "Now where did those two little boys, six & seven years of age, get the idea that it was something great to run away from home?"

29. And it came to me just as clear as anything, "What kind of books have they been reading? What kind of stories have they been telling them? I'll bet they learned that from some kind of Worldly books or something that they've been reading." And in the next paragraph or two he said, "I let them read Tom Sawyer, Huckleberry Finn & all this sort of thing, & now I realise I was wrong & that these books taught them bad things."

30. You couldn't hardly read anything worse than Huckleberry Finn & Tom Sawyer & some of that stuff!—It's practically criminal! Mark Twain was supposed to be a humourist, but those were naughty books when I was a kid! They had all the bad things in them: Lying, cheating, running away from home, mixing with bad boys & bad people & everything! (Maria: I'll bet those adults hadn't read those books recently to see what was in them.)

The kids were avid readers, good readers, & they just let them have them. You are what you read!

31. So I don't doubt that Don was probably a problem when he was a kid—a real rascal!—And spoiled & pampered & allowed to have tantrums! He seems to think that's his privilege now & he has a right to have these tantrums. He blames everything on everybody else, even his apology after the tapes & all. He started out apologising for Liz: "Well, Liz so-&-so, & Liz this & Liz that. I realise that I shouldn't have done so, but Liz did blah blah blah!"

32. I used to hate those guys that got up in testimony meetings in church & testified, "Well, I've got the victory now over sister so-&-so & all those things she did to me & how she treated me & what she said about me!" I had them get up right in my face in our Florida Soul Clinic School & say: "Well, I finally got the victory over Brother so-&-so & the things he said to me & the way he treated me & his attitude."—Confessing other people's sins for them!—The opportunity to have a forum in which to sound off & tell everybody what they think about everybody else. That's about how his confession sounded to me!

33. I could tell then it wasn't too good, but we promised to give him another chance, & I thought that by throwing the fear of God into him & setting down the rules & laying down the law, this was his chance, & that if he really meant business & really wanted to stay & really wanted to please God, he would really obey & show it. But it obviously meant very little to him.

34. The Devil deceives some of those guys to where they finally begin to believe their own stories & feel sorry for themselves! Everybody else is wrong & they are the only ones that've been in step! Everybody else is out of step! The idea of him talking about "that's the way they do things around here"! We haven't done anything around here except be good to them & go out of our way to try to avoid offending him & be kind to them & do everything under the sun for them!

35. "Well anyhow, dear Don & Liz, we have to leave, sorry. And since we have to leave & your visa is almost up & you've got to leave the country anyway, we really feel it would be best for you to go. And since you've got to go anyhow, you might as

well go back to the States now. We'll take your fare out of the money you brought & expenses etc." & whatever else he owes & give him back the rest.

36. Tell them, "I'm sorry, but where we're going we just can't take you with us! We don't have a place for you, & we won't have a need for you & we feel it's best that you go back to the States, you do better there & there's a greater need for you."—And there is a need for VSs in the States to go around & fellowship with people etc. "We'd like to have you go back to the States & become VSs there. There's a great need for you. You don't speak European languages, you only know American, whereas you're excellent at procuring & witnessing & everything else in the States. You can be open, free, no selah conditions, & you really just thrive back there & you did much better."—And they did, obviously.

37. "So we're willing to put you on as one of the VSs with a World Service monthly gift. We're not promising how long it's going to last"—at least till they get over there & to try to keep them loyal for awhile. Although I've found some people talk against you even if they are on the payroll, so it doesn't always work. "We think you are needed more there & we would like to have you go back & be our representatives there & be a VS & help the folks there."

38. You don't have to say anything derogatory, you don't have to criticise, you don't have to condemn, you don't have to say they failed, nothing!—All you have to be is positive & encouraging: "We have to go now & since you have to leave the country anyhow, within the next couple of weeks, we feel it's better that you go now too. We're willing to get your tickets, put you on the plane & give you the rest of your money & see you off. We think it would be nice for you to get home for Christmas to visit your relatives & have a real nice homegoing. Christmas is only ten days away.

39. "Of course, if you don't want to go, it's a free country & you're welcome to stay here, keep the car & trailer, & we'll give you back your money anyhow."—Whatever they haven't already spent. "You can keep your car & trailer & whatever little may be left of the money, & if you want to start putt-putting

around Europe where you can't even speak French enough to ask for gasoline or anything else, well, that's up to you. But since you are not doing what we are asking you to do, we're not going to support you. You'll be on your own, completely."

**40. That virtually means, if they don't do what we ask them to do, Brother, they are almost out of the Family!**—Just like Tim. Oh, he wasn't leaving the Family, he was only leaving WIM, going out into the Family to do this great job! He could hardly wait to get out & pioneer a Home, he'd never had this experience before, blah blah! I mean, they all say it! You don't suppose the Devil really convinces them & deceives them into thinking that that's what they're really going to do, do you?—Or is that just their story? Maybe it's a little bit of both. They have to justify themselves somehow.

**41. So do you think you can make all that clear to them?** (Peter: Yes.)—Good boy! Thank God for hatchet men! I don't want to have to do it myself, but I'm sure he knows it's coming from me when you say "we feel this way". You can tell him, "I think you know this is probably what's best for you & the Work. So you'll need a few days to get packed up."

**42. The 21st gives them a reasonable length of time & gets them back by Christmas.** You can tell them, "We've already booked you a flight on the 21st, because we have the faith that you are going to see that this is best & you'll make this choice. But of course, if you don't want to, you don't have to, it's up to you. But you've got to get out of the country anyhow by the 4th, so what are you going to do?"

**43. Let them know they're making their own decision, we're not forcing them.** If they want to stay here, let them stay, but we're leaving! "You won't be working with us any more, & we're leaving right away!" I think it's important to give the impression & let them know that everybody's leaving, & the more people we get off, the better! And you can even tell them Mom & Dad are already gone—which we are!—And I will not be signing any more personal notes to them. I have said my last say to them on those last notes!

**44. The answer's all right there in that verse in 1st Samuel 15, he fits it to a tee!** We told him exactly what to do & how to

do it, & yet he went ahead & did things his own way. People don't seem to think those little things matter, just one little glass of wine, just a little bit of wine. The guy said, "I was busy with a little here & there, then it was gone."—1Kg.20:40.

**45. Saul came back from his victory over the Amalekites & said to Samuel, "Behold, thy servant hath performed the Word of the Lord!"** And Samuel said, "Then what meaneth this bleating of sheep & the lowing of the oxen?" Saul had been told to kill everything, because they were probably all infected with the evil spirits or diseases or whatever.—1Sam.15:3.

**46. "Oh", he said, "the people persuaded me to save a few little things.** Not very much, just a few. It's not very important. I only disobeyed a little bit, not very much. Look, after all, I won a big victory, I obeyed a whole lot! I only disobeyed a little." As far as God's concerned, he that breaks one of these is guilty of all.—Jam.2:10. If he only hadn't taken that little sip of wine that he was forbidden to do! That was it, finished, guilty of all! But he went right ahead & broke quite a few other rules, too, in his behaviour & his attitude & his words & all the rest.

**47. So this is his last chance to try to do some damage, & I don't want you guys to be here when it happens!** The best way to keep a target from being hit is to remove the target! Therefore the quicker you guys get moved, the better, as far as I'm concerned, & they'll know we mean business!

**48. Think of how they have wasted the Lord's time!** If the Devil can't do anything else, if he can't do any damage, he tries to just waste your time. And we have wasted more time on them!

**49. Lord, we ask Thee to give us wisdom now & help these with their task of informing Don & Liz & family,** discussing it with them & letting them know. In Jesus' name we ask for Thy glory, Lord! Have Thy way, Thy Will be done! You know what's best. Help them to take the news well, & we do trust that we can avoid any problems or difficulties or explosions or whatever. Help us to be kind to them & really sincerely mean what we say. We do feel it's best for them to go home, & that if they can serve You at all, Lord, they can serve You better there—certainly more than here. So work it out! Amen!

## DAILY BREAD 7 INDEX!

GBY! We pray that the following index to Daily Bread 7 will be a help to you! We've tried to cover each topic as thoroughly as possible, using many of the same categories as the MOP & "Good Thots" books, but please remember that this index is not a substitute for the ML Index or KWIC, PUBDEX etc., where you'll find many of these subjects covered in much more detail. God bless you as you "study to show yourself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of Truth"!—2 Tim.2:15. WLY!

### A

Aaron . . . . .	443
Abraham . . . . .	331
Action Committee . . . . .	95,96
Adam & Eve . . . . .	419,467,468
<u>Administration &amp; Organisation</u>	
General Refs . . . . .	29-31,344-346
Excommunication . . . . .	36-38
Fellowship . . . . .	94-110
Finances . . . . .	31-41
National Leaders . . . . .	18-21
NRO Plan . . . . .	155-165
• <i>See also Diligence in Business, Leaders &amp; Shepherds</i>	
Afflictions, recurring . . . . .	410-412
AFMS: See Fellowships	
AICs (AIDS Isolation Col.) . . . . .	506
AIDS . . . . .	500-503,504-506
Alcohol . . . . .	530,555-556
Alf . . . . .	252,283-284,286
<u>Americans</u>	
Lack of love . . . . .	496-500
Wastefulness . . . . .	550-551,560

Anger . . . . .	558
Anointing . . . . .	228
Antichrist . . . . .	169
Aquarians . . . . .	75
Area Officers . . . . .	106
• <i>See also Fellowships</i>	
"Are You Deaf?" . . . . .	406
Aries . . . . .	72
• <i>See also Astrology</i>	
Arts, study of . . . . .	86-90
Ashraf . . . . .	165-173
Astrology . . . . .	75,174,516-519
Atum . . . . .	169

### B

Bach . . . . .	87
Backsliders & Prodigals . . . . .	193,485-496
"Ban the Bomb" . . . . .	504-505
Bank Failures . . . . .	420-421
Baptists . . . . .	523
Bargaining . . . . .	355-358,358-364,364-367
Bathroom: Accidents . . . . .	346-355
Battles: See Trials & Tests	
BBC Interview . . . . .	273-276
Bee Gees . . . . .	564,568,569
Beethoven . . . . .	87
Belittling . . . . .	150-152
<u>Bible Studies:</u>	
1Sam.15 . . . . .	255-259,574-575
Heb.11 . . . . .	331-333
Bills: See Finances	
Bitterness . . . . .	526
• <i>See also Resentfulness</i>	
Blood transfusions . . . . .	502

Boldness/Shyness . . . . .	111-112
• <i>See also Conviction &amp; Compromise</i>	
Book of the Dead . . . . .	177
Borrowing . . . . .	82-84
Brahms . . . . .	87
Brainwashing, questions about . . . . .	275
Bravery . . . . .	273-276
Breaking & Entering . . . . .	432
Brokenness . . . . .	126-132
Burglary . . . . .	432
• <i>See also Robbery</i>	

## C

Caleb (Biblical) . . . . .	279
Cancer (Sunsign) . . . . .	88
Capriciousness . . . . .	221,235
Carelessness . . . . .	350
Catharsis . . . . .	128
Central America . . . . .	397
Chain of Cooperation . . . . .	23,55-60,548
Change . . . . .	29,143-144,270-272,329-333,564
• <i>See also Pilgrims &amp; Strangers</i>	
Chastening . . . . .	60-68,72,260,335-338,388-395,551-563
• <i>See also Discipline</i>	
<u>Children</u> . . . . .	
General refs. . . . .	270-272
Advantages of . . . . .	41-44
Arguing in front of . . . . .	482-483
Discipline . . . . .	60-68,120-122,386-388,388-395
Running away . . . . .	571
Safety . . . . .	346-355
Samples . . . . .	116-117
Separations . . . . .	481-482
Sickness . . . . .	181

<u>Children</u> (continued)	
Teaching & Training . . . . .	30-31,86-90
Witnessing . . . . .	39-40
• <i>See also Parents, Teens</i>	
Children's Meeting (AFMs) . . . . .	104
Chile . . . . .	327
Choice & Decision-Making . . . . .	75,84-85,113,174,418-420 465-469,475,517
• <i>See also Will of God</i>	
Christian Missionary Alliance . . . . .	100,143
Churchianity & Religion . . . . .	326-327,423-428
Commitment . . . . .	74-77,123-126
• <i>See also Discipleship, Service</i>	
Committee Meetings (AFMs) . . . . .	104
Condoms . . . . .	501,504-506
Confessing Mistakes . . . . .	335-338
Contention . . . . .	234
• <i>See also Unity/Disunity</i>	
Contingency Plans . . . . .	138-142,420-423
• <i>See also Security</i>	
Conviction & Compromise . . . . .	5,80-81,221-222,273-276,334-335
Corny . . . . .	252
Corporal Punishment . . . . .	66-67,386-388
• <i>See also Discipline</i>	
Covering Up . . . . .	29,202,210,446,530-537,537-547,556,566,568
• <i>See also Honesty &amp; Openness</i>	
Crash, Economic . . . . .	420-423
Credit . . . . .	44-49,82-84
Criminal responsibility . . . . .	197
Criticism & Gossip . . . . .	150-152,442,445,448
• <i>See also Thankfulness/Murmuring</i>	
CROs . . . . .	155
Crosby, Fanny . . . . .	412
"Crystal Pyramid" . . . . .	542

**D**

DAF/DAS . . . . .	107
Daily reports, Teens . . . . .	461
Daniel, prayers . . . . .	466
David, Father . . . . .	22-23,50,55-59,249,279
Gifts of Spirit . . . . .	186,535
David, King . . . . .	167,207,224,240
Davida . . . . .	351
Davidito . . . . .	44,60-68,351-352,428-430
Daydreaming . . . . .	442-445,447-448
Death experience, parallel of . . . . .	540-542
Debts . . . . .	31-36,36-38,44-49
Deceit . . . . .	153
• <i>See also Honesty &amp; Openness, Covering up</i>	
Dedication: See Commitment	
"Dehiring" . . . . .	567
Demon Possession . . . . .	187
• <i>See also Exorcism &amp; Spiritual Problems</i>	
<u>Devil's Devices</u> . . . . .	
General Refs. . . . .	183-195,227-231
Discouragement . . . . .	167-168,402
Fear . . . . .	176-183
Inside Attacks . . . . .	248
Sickness . . . . .	402
Wasting time . . . . .	575
• <i>See also Resist the Devil</i>	
DFO Lit . . . . .	280-283
Dictatorial Leaders . . . . .	55-60
<u>Diligence in Business</u> . . . . .	
Bargaining . . . . .	355-358,358-364,364-367
Finances . . . . .	31-36,44-49,51-55
Stewardship . . . . .	547-551
Storage . . . . .	132-137
• <i>See also Little People &amp; Little Things</i>	

<u>Discernment</u> . . . . .	183,186,192,438
Dad's . . . . .	535
Discipleship . . . . .	123-126,551-563
• <i>See also Dedication, Service</i>	
Discipline . . . . .	60-68,120-122,277,386-388,388-395
• <i>See also Chastening</i>	
Discouragement . . . . .	167-168,402
Dishonesty: See Honesty & Openness	
Disobedience . . . . .	393-394
• <i>See also Obedience</i>	
Divorce . . . . .	471-484
DO Lit . . . . .	280-283
Don & Liz . . . . .	507-575
Doubts . . . . .	445
• <i>See also Faith &amp; Trust; Word</i>	
Down payments . . . . .	82
Drinking . . . . .	530,555-556

**E**

<u>Education</u> . . . . .	
Godly . . . . .	43-44,86-93
System . . . . .	86-93
Eman . . . . .	176,184,206-207,209,227,231-233,238-239,242
244-245,248-249,251-252,254,256-257	
Emotions . . . . .	74
Encouragement . . . . .	390
"End of Allende" . . . . .	327
Enemies . . . . .	569
Enthusiasm: See Inspiration & Enthusiasm	
ESing . . . . .	501
Eve, Mother: See Mother Eve	
Excommunication . . . . .	36-38,477,485-496,498-499
<u>Exorcism &amp; Spiritual Problems</u> . . . . .	
General Refs. . . . .	406

## Exorcism & Spiritual Problems (continued)

Ashraf	165-173
Gen Series	176-259
Keda Series	283-291,300-324
Mene	442-464
Oppression	260-268
Problem Children	120-122
"Truth Rev." Series	507-575
Extravagance	46-49,51-52,560-562
Eyes	175,186

## **F**

Faith & Trust	1-7,32,218,331-333,509-511
<u>Faithfulness</u>	5-6,25,547-551
Finances	51-55
• <i>See also Diligence in Business</i>	
Faithy	206,213-214,221-222,227,230,237,242,285 337,339-344,384
<u>Familiarity</u>	143,261
In marriage	474
<u>Family, Our</u>	94-110,123-126,407-410,427-428,496-500
Saul vs. David	55-60
Fasting & prayer	170,212-213,303,570
Fear, Freedom from	176-183,511
Fear of Man	543-544
Feeble-mindedness	463-464
Feint	252
Fellowships	94-110,143-150,282
FFing	14-17,259
Fight the Good Fight	69,178-183,227-231,273-276,400-418
• <i>See also Resisting the Devil, Take Action</i>	
Files, security	140,378
<u>Finances</u>	106
AFM finances	

## Finances (continued)

Bargaining	355-367
Credit	44-49,82-84
Debts	31-41
Reserve Funds	420-423
Security	379
Tithing	50-55
• <i>See also Giving, Tithing</i>	
First Place	74-77,473,534
Fleebags	139
Fleeces	358,361
Foolishness	428-430,452
Force: See Violence	
Forgiveness & Mercy	60-68
Forsake All	561
Franco	327-328
FreeCOG	248
Freedom	85,292-299
<b>G</b>	
GAF/GAS	107
Genesis	173-259
Gideon	279,283
"Girl Who Wouldn't, The"	309
Giving	50-55,137
• <i>See also Finances</i>	
God's Ways vs. Man's	5,89-93
"God Knows When"	168-169
Good & Evil	75
Government & Materialism	373-374
GP Lit	280-283
Grandfather	51,367
Grandmother (Dad's Mother)	51,86,87,90,111,143,151,190 200,213,263,290,413

Greatness	25
Greek language	1-2
Guardia Civil	328
Gypsies	40,43

## H

<u>Handicaps</u>	123-126
Children	120-122
Harmakhis	169
Haste	347,351,352
• <i>See also Patience</i>	
Healing	3,260,412-418,509-511
<u>Health</u>	509-511
AIDS	500-503,504-506
Hebrews Chapter 11	1
Herpes	410-412
Hitting	476-477
Hjalmer	524-525,553
Holy Spirit	98,292-299,424-426
Home	358-364
Storage	132-137
Honesty & Openness	24-26,29,82-85,153,197-198,202,210 334-335,515,530-537,537-547,556,566
Hosea	65-66
Hostessing	501
Hoyt, David	184,546
"Huckleberry Finn"	571
Human Nature	14-17,74,173-176,384
Humility & Pride	2,35-36,41,70,74-75,93,184,188-189 196-206,284-288,301-302,442-448,470,517-518,524-526,566

    • *See also Little People & Little Things*

Hupostasis	1-2
Hurry	10-14

Hypocrisy	283-287,520,537,566
-----------	---------------------

## I

Ill-starred	516-517,518
Indigenuity	18-21
Indonesia	373-374
Influence	88
Inspiration & Enthusiasm	111-119,367-371,409
Instalment buying	82-83
• <i>See also Finances</i>	
Intellectuality	74,76

## J

Jacob (Biblical)	466
Japan	496-500
Jealousy	180,513
<u>Jesus</u>	9,18,127,276,328,408
Power of His Name	202
Jethro	56-57,88
Jews	365
Job (Biblical)	166,260
Jonah	253
Josh, Big	153
Joshua (Biblical)	279
Juan	384
Judas	193
Justifying Yourself	549,551
Justus Ashtree	207,209,233,238,239,248,251,252,254,256,257

## K

Keda	283-291,300-324
Keller, Helen	412

Kenaz . . . . .	571
Kennedy, John F. . . . .	426
Khepri . . . . .	169
Kindness & Courtesy . . . . .	496-500
Kipling, Rudyard . . . . .	25
L	
LAF/LAS . . . . .	106
Language, learning . . . . .	20-21
Laziness . . . . .	32-36,404-406
<u>Leaders &amp; Shepherds</u>	
Administration . . . . .	94-110
AS, duties of . . . . .	108
Care of Sheep . . . . .	22-31,160,194-195,205,239-241,266-268 345-346
Characteristics of . . . . .	111-119
Correcting others . . . . .	512-513
Counselling Flock . . . . .	147-148,185
Dealing with prob.cases . . . . .	206-207,485-496
Decision-making . . . . .	84-85,118-119
Duties of . . . . .	26-31
Elections . . . . .	95,99-100,104-105,117
Leading Meetings . . . . .	292-299,367-371
Letter-writing . . . . .	344-346
Love vs. Legalism . . . . .	55-60
Marriage counselling . . . . .	474-475
Need for . . . . .	384
Need to check on sheep . . . . .	197-199
NROs . . . . .	155-165
Obedience to . . . . .	78-81
Prayer . . . . .	68-73
Respect for . . . . .	341-344
Sharing Lessons . . . . .	336-338
Teamwork . . . . .	339-344

<b>Leaders &amp; Shepherds (continued)</b>	
Training	18-21
Undermining faith in	150
• <i>See also Administration, Diligence in Business</i>	
<b>Legal Affairs</b>	
Buying	355-358,364-367
Honesty	334-335
Househunting	358-364
Loans & Repayments	82-84
Leos	521
• <i>See also Astrology</i>	
Lesbianism	300-317
Letter-writing	344-346
Little People & Little Things	6-10,22-26,313
Love	15,60-68,72-73,74,150-152,344-346
Love for Others	524
Love for the Lost	126-132
Loyalty	5-6,80
Lust	311
Lydia	206,207,237,248
Lying	153,334-335,537-547
• <i>See also Honesty &amp; Openness, Covering Up</i>	
<b>M</b>	
Machowski, Mr.	188
Magdalene	339-344,384,406
• <i>See also Keda</i>	
Mail Ministry	33,40
Mail, security	140
Malta	140,153
Man-pleasing	553
<u>Maria</u>	75-77,152,259,469-471
Intuition	88-93

<u>Marriage</u>	
Male/Female needs	16-17
Problems	150-152
Separations	244-245,471-484
Meeting Committee (AFMs)	106
Meetings	143-150
Organisation	102-105
Membership requirements	278,280-283
Mene	442-464
Mexico	395,397
Mice	135
Military, spiritual parallel	80
Missionaries	18-21,395-400
• <i>See also Witnessing</i>	
Mistakes	270,335-338
Mold & mildew, retarding	133
Mongoloids	121
Moses	12-13
Mother Eve	57-58,64,112,150-152,196,219,223,224,443,524
Mother's Meeting (AFMs)	104
<u>Movies</u>	
"Seventh Question"	325
"Tess"	514,517-519
Mozart	89
Murmuring: <i>See Thankfulness &amp; Murmuring</i>	
Music & Dancing	126-128,564,568
MWM	443,444

## N

NAF/NAS	107
Nathan (Biblical)	207,240
Nationalisation	18-21
Nebuchadnezzar Revelation	68
Needles, hypodermic	501-502

<u>Negative Thinking</u>	191
Newspaper, importance of read.	140
"No Blank TRFs"	277
NROs, Duties of	155-165

## O

### Obedience/Disobedience

Children	393-394
In Little Things	299
To God	3,278
To Leaders	78-81,219-223,250-259,268-270
• <i>See also Faith &amp; Trust</i>	
Obstinate, definition of	235
Occult, Influence of	176-181
Old Age	126-132
Oppression	188
• <i>See also Exorcism &amp; Spiritual Problems</i>	

## P

<u>Paper Power</u>	268-270
<u>Parables, value of</u>	368
<u>Parents</u>	42-44,60-68,120-122,348,354-355,386-388
388-395,460-464,482-484	
Relations with	130-132
Separations	481-482
• <i>See also Children</i>	
Passive rebellion	218
Patience	10-14,389
Paul, Apostle	5,145,166,289-290,369
Pentecost, Day of	97
Persecution	138-142,273-276,372-382
Perverseness	220,235-236
Peter Amsterdam	400

Peter, Apostle	274,289-290,305
Philosophy, System	313
Phone: See Telephone	
Physiognomy	175
Pilgrims & Strangers	142,329-333
• <i>See also Change</i>	
Pisces	174
• <i>See also Astrology</i>	
Poem: Walked a Mile	128
Poetry, Dad's like of	88
Police	79
Popularity	117,553-554
Praise	412-418
<u>Prayer</u>	
Asking for	154,324-325
Deliverance	182,214-215,228
For Keda	318-324
Power of	230-231
Prayer Letters	33,40,48
<u>Prayers of David</u>	35,68-73,81,101-102,109,129,131,136-137
	142,176,178-179,181-182,230
	231,250,255,276,315,333,342,347,352-
	354,382,429,440-441,449-450,458,460
	509-510,537,563,565,575
Pride: See Humility & Pride	
Prince of Persia	466
Prodigal Son	53
Prodigals: See Backsliders & Prodigals	
Program Committee (AFMs)	106
<u>Prophecy &amp; Revelation</u>	55-60,206-207,292-299
Photo Reading	173-176
Prophecy of David	81,128-129,303-304
Prophets & Warning	335-338,437
Protection	181
Provisioning	33

Public Relations	273-276
<b>R</b>	502
Rachel	76,77,89,92,93,544,548
Reading & Viewing	571
<u>Rebellion</u>	234,300-302,304
Passive Rebellion	218
Redheads	522,529
Relation to the Lord	89-93
Relation to the World	44-49,325-328,355-367
Relations with People	24-26,29-31,71,111-119,173-176
	194-195,206-210,344-346,383-386
Relationships	472-473,483
Rembrandt	87,89
Repentance	205,224,288,291,324,519,531,542,551
Reporting (TRF)	277-283
Reporting problems	197-198
Reports (Daily), teens	461
Resentfulness	442-449
Reservations (Shove-Off)	396
Reserve Funds	45,420-422
• <i>See also Finances</i>	
Resist the Devil	69,165-173,178-183,183-195,228,266
	321-323,400-412,412-418,450-460
• <i>See also Fight the Good Fight</i>	
Resting in the Lord	10,12-13
Retarded children	120-122
Revolution for Jesus	123-126,407-408,410
"Revolutionary Rules"	329
Riches	134
Roaches	135
Robbery	430-441
Romans 8:28	495-496,566
Rome	246

Roosevelt	177
Running away	571

## S

Safety & Accidents	346-355,428-430
Sagittarians	553
• <i>See also Astrology</i>	
Sample	8-9,88,111-119,240,383-386
Samuel (Biblical)	255-259,575
Saprophytes	133
Sara	400
Saul, King	224,226,234,255-259,575
Schizophrenia	264,302,546
"Secret, The"	519
<u>Security</u>	
General Refs.	138-142,372-382,430-441
For AFMs	110
Reporting	277-283
Thieves	132
Yelling, Hitting	476-477
• <i>See also Contingency Plans</i>	
Self-confidence	90-91
Self-righteousness	77,197,199,260,283-287,302 442-448,460-462,524-526
Selfishness: <i>See Unselfishness/Selfishness</i>	
Seniority	114
Sensitivity	519,529
Separations	471-484
Service	123-126,425-428,551-563
"Seventh Question" (movie)	325
<u>Sex</u>	
General Refs.	74
AIDS rules	500-506
Lesbianism	300-317

<u>Sex</u> (continued)	
Male/Female needs	14-17
Oral	502
Questions about	273
Shepherds, Title of	100
Shove-Off Program	395-400
Shultz, Fred	434
Shyness: <i>See Boldness/Shyness</i>	
Sickness	154,181,200,233,324-325,400-412,412-418,509-511 • <i>See also Health, Healing</i>
Sin	180,188-189,192,212,236,264,449,544
Songs:	
"A tent or a Palace"	272
"Anywhere with Jesus"	272
"If Jesus Goes with Me"	272
"Solitaire"	126-127
Soul Clinic	23,33,114-115
South America	397
Spain	327-328
Speech/Speaking	179-180,367-371,470-471
Sphincter Muscles	172
Sphinx	166,168,169
Spirit World	165-173,197,465-469
Squeeze Don't Jerk	10-14,347,351,352
Stephen David	57-58,197,218,219-223,443
Stewardship	47,132-137,547-551
Storage	132-137
<u>Stories:</u>	
Goose & the Golden Eggs	52
Grandmother & Slot Machine	4
"Unction"	243
Strauss Waltzes	87
Strength & Power	28,92,216,315,341-344,428-430 • <i>See also Weakness</i>
Stubbornness	301

Success & Failure	25
• <i>See also</i> Mistakes	
Suggestions, Dad's	536
Sun signs	75,516-519
Supply	4,5,37,39-41,48
Support	31-36,37
Survival	420-423
Swimming	350,353
<b>T</b>	
Take Action	31-36,49,120-122
"Talisman, The"	168
Talking Back	392-393
Talking, excessive	261
Teamwork	339-344
Techi	93,387,419,428-430
<b>Teens</b>	
Discipline	386-388,388-395
Problems	442-464
<b>Telephone</b>	
Bargaining	355-358
Use & misuse	268-270
Temptation	263,430-432,468
Tenerife	58
"Tess" (movie)	514,517-519
Testimonies, Personal	369-370
Thankfulness & Murmuring	527,548,554,559-560,564
Theft	432
Time payments	82
Timothy Conceded	75-77,86-93,574
Tithing	36-38,50-55,277-283
• <i>See also</i> Finances	
"Tom Sawyer"	571
Trials & Tests	260,318

Truth	153,537-547
Truth Revolution	507-575
TSC	18,43,56
Twain, Mark	571
<b>U</b>	
Unity/Disunity	55-60,81,94-110,217-218,340,485-496
Unselfishness/Selfishness	22-26,262,264,497,520
• <i>See also</i> Giving	
<b>V</b>	
Vaporisers	510
Violence	476-477,528-529,534,541,554
Visitation	111-119
Voice of the Word	312
VSS	111-119
<b>W</b>	
Wagner	86,87
War	78-79
Wastefulness	550-551,560-562
"Watch a Baby Die"	239
Watergate Affair	543
Weakness	28,88-93,230-231,315
• <i>See also</i> Strength & Power	
Will of God	253-254,418-420
Williams, Andy	126
WIM	574
Wisdom	90,91,93,325-328
Witches/witchcraft	206,452
<b>Witnessing</b>	
Inspiration	115

Women	15-17,175,265
Women leaders	261
Women's Lib	301,303,304,316
"Women in Love"	308
<u>Word</u>	412-418
Power of	202
Work Therapy	418
<u>World Services</u>	52,54
Personnel	383-386
World War 1	79
Worry	511

• *See also Faith & Trust*

Y	
Yelling	476-477
Yieldedness	176,255,265,442
• <i>See also Discipleship, Obedience</i>	
Yielding, to Enemy	464
York, Sergeant	78-81